



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



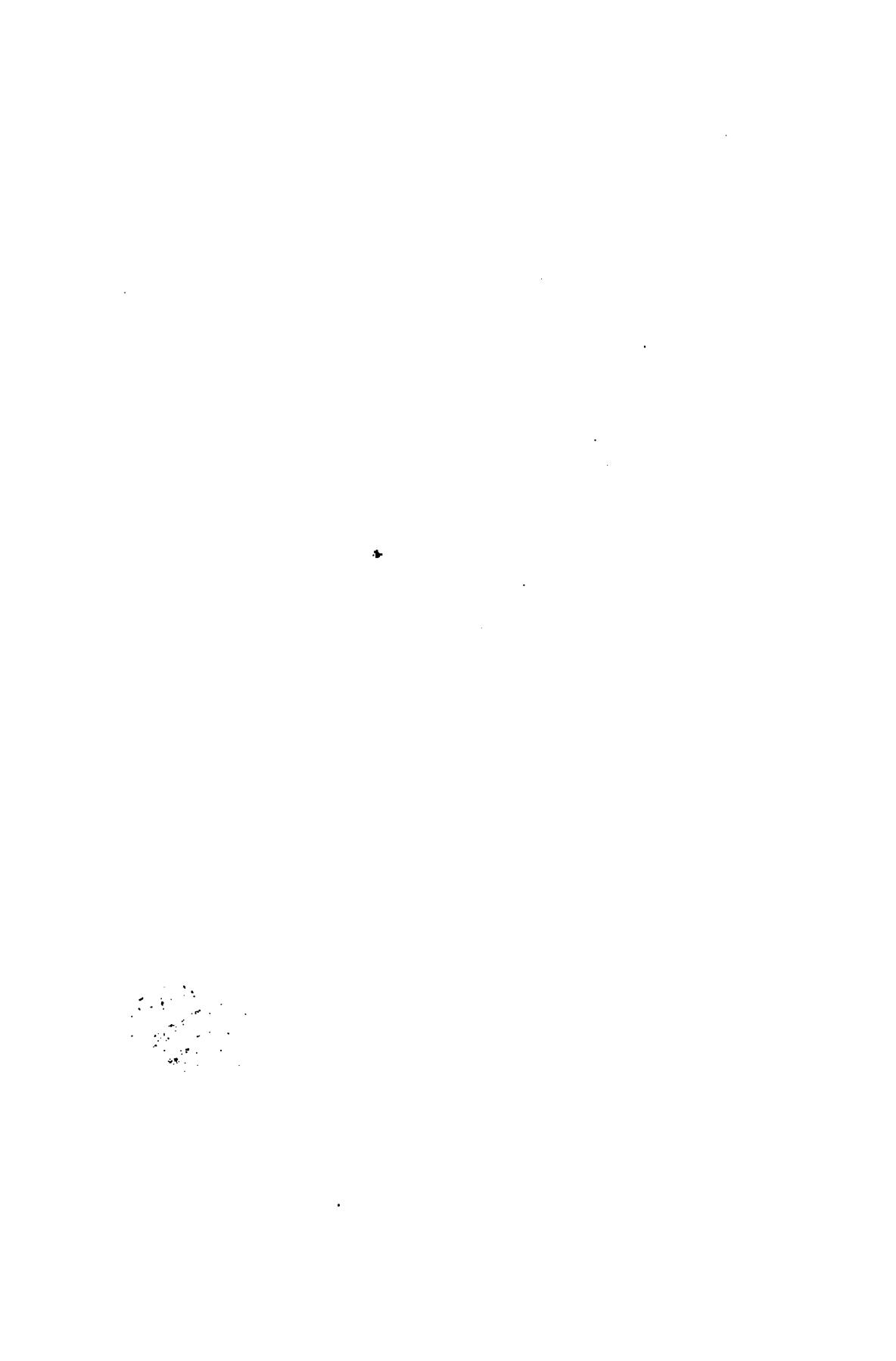


600053693W

41.

876.





# THE HOLY STATE,

AND

# THE PROFANE STATE.

BY THOMAS FULLER, D.D.,

PREBENDARY OF SARUM, &c. &c.

AUTHOR OF "THE WORTHIES OF ENGLAND," "THE HISTORY OF THE HOLY  
WAR," "PISGAI-SIGHT OF PALESTINE,"  
"ABEL REDIVIVUS," &c. &c.

"In that day shall there be upon the bells of the horses, HOLINESS UNTO THE LORD."  
Zechariah xiv. 20.

A NEW EDITION.

WITH NOTES,

BY JAMES NICHOLS,

EDITOR OF "FULLER'S CHURCH HISTORY OF BRITAIN," &c.

LONDON:  
PRINTED FOR THOMAS TEGG, 73, CHEAPSIDE.

1841.



876.

LONDON :  
PRINTED BY JAMES NICHOLS,  
46, HOXTON-SQUARE.

## TO THE READER.

---

WHO is not sensible, with sorrow, of the distractions of this age? To write books, therefore, may seem unseasonable, especially in a time wherein the press, like an unruly horse, hath cast off his bridle of being *licensed*; and some serious books, which dare fly abroad, are hooted at by a flock of pamphlets.

But be pleased to know, that when I left my home it was fair weather, and my journey was half-past before I discovered the tempest; and had gone so far in this work, that I could neither go backward with credit, nor forward with comfort.

As for the matter of this book, therein I am resident on my profession; holiness, in the latitude thereof, falling under the cognizance of a divine. For curious method, expect none; essays for the most part not being placed as at a feast, but placing themselves as at an ordinary.

The characters I have conformed to the then-standing laws of the realm; (a twelvemonth ago were they sent to the press;) since which time, the wisdom of the king and state hath thought fitting to alter many things, and I expect the discretion of the reader should make his alterations accordingly. And I conjure thee, by all Christian ingenuity, that, if lighting here on some passages rather harsh-sounding than ill-intended, to construe the same by the general drift and main scope which is aimed at.

Nor let it render the modesty of this book suspected, because it presumes to appear in company unmanned by any patron. If right, it will defend itself; if wrong,

none can defend it. Truth needs not, falsehood deserves not, a supporter. And, indeed, the matter of this work is too high for a subject's—the workmanship thereof too low for a prince's—patronage.

And now I will turn my pen into prayer,—that God would be pleased to discloud these gloomy days with the beams of his mercy: which if I may be so happy as to see, it will then encourage me to count it freedom to serve two apprenticeships, (God spinning out the thick thread of my life so long,) in writing the Ecclesiastical History from Christ's time to our days, if I shall from remoter parts be so planted, as to enjoy the benefit of walking and standing libraries; without which advantages the best vigilancy doth but vainly dream to undertake such a task.

Meantime I will stop the leakage of my soul; and what heretofore hath run out in writing shall hereafter, God willing, be improved in constant preaching, in what place soever God's providence and friends' good-will shall fix.

Thine in all Christian offices,  
THOMAS FULLER.

## THE EDITOR'S PREFACE.

---

THIS curious collection of essays and characters is the production of a man possessed of no ordinary grasp of mind, who lived in times of uncommon interest and excitement, and who wrote with the obvious intention to personate "a wise and witty moderator," between the two great parties in the State that were then openly at issue. While he evinces a decided and commendable bias towards the episcopal church and the monarchy, the interests of which were then in jeopardy; he shows himself to have been not insensible of some existing blemishes and defects, for the remedy of which he gives modest intimations, rather than formal advice. The work was put to press at the close of 1640, but not published till 1642. In the interim, as our author declares in the preceding preface, "the wisdom of the king and state had thought fitting to alter many things;" and his request was in consequence a very proper one,—"I expect *the discretion of the reader should make his alterations accordingly*. And I conjure thee, by all Christian ingenuity, that, if lighting here on some passages rather harsh-sounding than ill-intended, *to construe the same by the general drift and main scope which is aimed at*." The various classes of readers, however, put their own construction on those passages which seemed to accord with their own notions, and those of their party; and the book became greatly in request, and was read with the utmost avidity. Perhaps no literary works, in that age of great readers and clever writers, obtained such an extensive circulation as did his "Holy War" and "Holy State;" which, being usually sold together, bound up in one folio volume, made a strong impression on the public mind, and for some years exercised an influence that might be distinctly traced in many affairs connected both with the Council and the Field; as the reader will perceive in my copious preface to FULLER's "History of the Holy War." In one of the introductory chapters to his "Appeal of Injured Innocence,"\*

\* See his "History of the University of Cambridge," &c. p. 293. 8vo Edition. 1840.

published in 1659, he incidentally communicates some curious information on this subject:—"Here let me humbly tender to the reader's consideration, that my *Holy War*, though (for some design of the stationer) sticking still, in the title-page, at the third edition, (as some unmarried maids will never be more than eighteen!) yet hath it oftener passed the press,—as hath my *Holy State, Meditations, &c.* ;\* and yet never did I alter line or word in any new impression. I speak not this by way of attribution to myself, as if my books came forth at first with more perfection than other men's; but with insinuation to the reader, that it is but equal that I may now have the benefit thereof allowed me, especially in a subject of such length, latitude, difficulty, variety, and multiplicity of matter," as his "Church History."

Here, then, is a large folio book, which, according to the several announcements in its title-page, passed through three editions in the course of ten years; but which is supposed to have run through five *bond-fide* impressions during the interregnum, each of them consisting of a large number of copies. The (nominally) fourth edition was published in 1663, soon after the decease of the author. In the preceding paragraph he alludes to "some design in his stationer," in suffering this work "still to stick, in the title-page, at the third edition." That publisher (John Williams) was generally reputed to be a man of probity; and there can be little doubt, that his real motive in avoiding the generally flattering and profitable flourish of successive editions, was a desire to lull suspicion, and not to invite prohibition from the ruling powers. This will be rendered yet more apparent to the reader, after he has perused the relation which I have given in the introduction to "Andronicus, or the unfortunate Politician," in this volume, p. 400; and in the notes, pp. 329—332; which shall be my apology for abridging this preface.

I again announce, that I have not altered the construction of a single sentence, or part of a sentence, in my author; and, in conformity with my practice in FULLER's "Church History,"

\* Fuller bestows the appellation of "Meditations" on his "Good Thoughts in bad Times," and "Good Thoughts in worse Times;" to which, at the eve of the Restoration, he added, "Mixed Contemplations in better Times." These three pieces, written at considerable intervals, in the same strain of "half in earnest, half in jest," as his "Holy State," but with more pointed glances at passing occurrences, have often been published together in one volume, and are esteemed among the best of our author's numerous writings.

and in all those volumes of his Works of which I have been the printer, I here subjoin *a list of such words as are slightly changed for others, their most immediate cognates in meaning and derivation* :—

*Africk*, Africa ; *ayre*, air ; *awayes*, always ; *allay*, alloy ; *a clock*, o'clock ; *antiques*, antics ; *angrieth*, angereth ; *aucestors*, ancestors ; *amber-greece*, ambergris ; *acception*, acceptation.

*Black-moore*, blackmoor ; *banes*, bans ; *band*, bond ; *begrutch*, begrudge ; *blew*, blue ; *battle*, battel (to fatten) ; *becomed*, become ; *bell-weather*, bell-wether ; *bone-fires*, bonfires ; *baserioll*, bass-viol ; *broches*, broaches ; *bestown*, bestowed ; *bleded*, bled.

*Conna*, con ; *chappell*, chapel ; *chast*, chaste ; *corps*, corpse (generally as a noun plural) ; *carre*, car ; *cadencies*, cadences ; *clark*, clerk ; *chirurgeon*, surgeon ; *clue* (of thread), clew ; *correspondency*, correspondence ; *catched*, caught ; *crownet*, coronet ; *course*, coarse ; *cousinage*, cozenage.

*Dow*, dough ; *dogge*, dog ; *Duresme*, Durham ; *dazelled*, dazzled ; *divolved*, devolved ; *daulphin*, dauphin ; *dreined*, drained.

*Epicene*, epicene ; *estridge*, ostrich ; *endammage*, endamage ; *enhance*, enhance ; *embarque*, embark ; *enstalling*, installing.

*Fewell*, fuel ; *frigots*, frigates ; *fraught*, freight ; *ferrier*, farrier.

*Gally-pots*, gallipots ; *geers*, gears ; *gate*, gait ; *glysters*, clysters ; *gauled*, galled ; *gentile*, genteel, gentle ; *gole*, goal.

*Husunfry*, housewifery ; *herricano*, hurricane ; *hoysed up*, hoisted up ; *hungerly*, hungrily.

*Ile*, I will ; *interre*, inter ; *islands*, islands ; *interested*, interested.

*Jarre*, jar ; *jaundies*, jaundice ; *justicer*, justiciary ; *jatbour*, jailer.

*Knockt*, knocked.

*Loth*, loath ; *lopt*, lopped ; *limming*, limning ; *leavie*, levy ; *leven*, leaven.

*Mistris*, mistress ; *marish*, marsh ; *marescol*, marshal.

*Nagges*, nags.

*Ornge*, orange.

*Proxie*, proxy ; *phancy-full*, fanciful ; *pievish*, peevish ; *puntillos*, punctilos ; *pultis*, poultice ; *proprietie*, property.

*Quare*, query ; *queint*, quaint.

*Reade*, read ; *rhythms*, rhymes ; *roomthy*, roomy ; *russling*, rustling ; *rere*, rear.

*Signes*, signs ; *scrud*, screwed ; *surfet*, surfeit ; *sallats*, salads ; *slandred*, slandered ; *standers*, standards ; *strook*, struck ; *slovenness*, slovenliness ; *steady*, steady ; *swound*, swoon ; *schrick*, shreeke, shriek ; *sterfed*, starved ; *sutes*, suits ; *swel'd*, swelled.

*Tos-pot*, toss-pot ; *thorow*, through ; *trust*, trussed ; *tramountain*, tramontane.

*Vent*, vend.

*Wandring*, wandering ; *wholsome*, wholesome ; *whipt*, whipped ; *wrang*, rang ; *winse*, wince ; *wardroper*, wardrobe ; *woe*, woo.

*Yong*, young ; *yeomantry*, yeomanry.

I also subjoin *a collection of the principal words, which, for various reasons, I have retained, though they are rarely used by modern writers* :—

Accompany with. Breck. Chesils, coplofts, cordiloquy, chymic, (chemist,) cockering, (indulgent,) customer.\* Departed with, (parted with,) disable, (unable,) deads (deadens). Eldern. Feodaries. Gingling, granadoes. Handsel, habited, (habitual,) hollow (halloo). Inheretrix, ingravitate. Lash out, (break out,) loaden. Opinioned, (opinionated,) outed, otherwhiles. Petty-larceners, probablest, portage (carriage). Rebated, resty, re-estated. Stuffy, (fat,) scotch. Unsurcharges, unimporing, unpartial. Ventriloquy. Wholler (more entire). Young-old.

It will be perceived, that the first of these lists contains fewer words than those which were enumerated in preceding volumes. The reason of this may be seen by every one who will examine the great difference in orthography between the third edition and the fourth. All the early editions of "the Holy State" were printed at Cambridge, by that famous University-printer, Roger Daniel; but the fourth edition, in London, by John Redmayne, who improved the orthography so much as to bring it into stricter accordance with the existing standard of our language. Thus, instead of *stayes, farre, sunne, warre, badnesse, carier*, &c. in the former editions, he presents us with "stays, far, sun, war, badness, career," &c. I have followed the text of the third edition, that being the last which was printed during the author's life, though, as he has already informed us, he had no personal concern in "altering line or word in any new impression" after the first; to which, as well as to the fourth, I have had recourse whenever any variations arose between the different editions.

To many of the obsolete English words which I have retained in the text, I have added short explanatory notes. For this purpose I have frequently quoted the definitions and descriptions contained in "the New World of Words," originally compiled by EDWARD PHILLIPS, one of the nephews of Milton; and, in the sixth edition, (1706,) greatly improved by that indefatigable and accomplished scholar, JOHN KERSEY, whose copious folio treatise on "Algebra" is known to every mathematician as one of the most able introductions to that subject which had then been published. Our language was at that time in a marked course of transition, gradually passing from a state of much roughness and barbarism into one of incipient order, euphony, and refinement. The extreme usefulness, therefore, of a good glossography, compiled at such an impor-

\* This word, though often conveying the signification of "a collector of taxes," seems to have been occasionally employed by our old writers in the sense of "a ranger," "a steward," and sometimes even that of "a comptroller."

tant period, by a person of such competent qualifications as Kersey, who flourished in the reigns of James and Charles I., and survived all the changes under the commonwealth and the Revolution, will be obvious to every man of learning. In its plain and lucid explanations of our old words, it exhibits one of those excellences which our (otherwise) great modern lexicographer is said not to have possessed. A portion of its worth is modestly described in the preface, from which the following is a brief quotation:—“It contains all manner of difficult words and terms of art which are to be found in any writers of note. As for the individual terms, care has been taken every where to set down their original and proper signification, which tends very much to clear up the several senses wherein they are now generally received: and they are also explained with all possible perspicuity and brevity, *so as not to interpret any hard words by others that are as little intelligible, at least not so obvious to persons who are not well versed in polite literature*; a fault too frequent in performances of this nature! There are many principles and rules laid down, with apposite hints and remarks, throughout the whole work, so as to be of very good use to young students, as also to foreigners, who are desirous to be acquainted with the peculiar idioms of our English tongue; which is now so far improved, that, for copiousness, variety of style, clearness and elegancy of expression, and other advantages, it may be said to equal, if not surpass, all other modern languages.” This dictionary, then, it will be perceived, is no mean authority in explaining much of our ancient phraseology, in which service it has often been employed to good purpose.

In the notes, every Latin quotation which occurs in the volume will be found freely rendered into English. The twenty portraits of celebrated personages were understood to be faithful copies from the best originals extant in the days of Fuller; and they have been carefully copied in the present edition.

In my preface to the “Church History,” I gave a quotation from “the Literary Remains” of SAMUEL T. COLERIDGE, Esq., in praise of my author; and from the same posthumous work of that profound genius I cite a passage, almost equally laudatory, which he wrote in his copy of “the Holy State,” in reference to “the Life of Paracelsus,” in page 54:—

“It is matter of regret with me, that Fuller—*whose wit (alike in quantity, quality, and perpetuity, surpassing that of the wittiest in a witty age)* robbed him of the praise not

less due to him for an equal superiority in sound, shrewd good-sense, and freedom of intellect—had not looked through the two Latin folios of PARACELSIUS's 'Works.' It is not to be doubted, that a rich and delightful article would have been the result. For who, like Fuller, could have brought out and set forth this singular compound of *true philosophic genius*, with *the morals of a quack*, and *the manners of a king of the gipsies?*"

This great man also makes a just remark on one of Fuller's failings, which in him seemed to be more venial than in any of his contemporaries. Coleridge wrote it, as a note, on a passage in "the Profane State," under the article "the Rigid Donatists," page 376:—

"The only serious *macula* in Fuller's mind is his uniform support of the right and duty of the civil magistrate to punish errors in belief. Fuller would, indeed, recommend *Moderation* in the practice: but, of *upas*, *woorara*, and *persecution*, there are no moderate doses possible."

But perhaps the most obviously-equitable judgment which even a man of adverse sentiments would form concerning one of the predominant features in all our author's varied productions, has been thus finely portrayed by COLERIDGE:—

"It raises, or ought to raise, our estimation of Fuller's good sense, and the general temperance of his mind, when we see the heavy weight of prejudices (the universal code of his age!) incumbent on his judgment, and which, nevertheless, left *sanity of opinion the general character of his writings!*"

Of this "general temperance of mind" an apposite instance will be found in the words of one of his biographers:—

"In April, 1643, he conveyed himself to the king at Oxford, who received him gladly. As His Majesty had heard of his extraordinary abilities in the pulpit, he was now desirous of hearing them from it: and accordingly Mr. Fuller preached before His Majesty at St. Mary's church. His fortune upon this occasion was very singular. He had before preached and published a sermon in London, upon the new moulding church-reformation, which made him be censured as too hot a royalist; and now, from his sermon at Oxford, he was thought to be too lukewarm: which can only be accounted for from that inflexible principle of moderation in himself, which he would sincerely have inculcated in each party, as the only means of reconciling both."

46, HOXTON-SQUARE,  
March 10th, 1841.

JAMES NICHOLS.

## CONTENTS.

---

### HOLY STATE.

#### BOOK I.

	Page.
CHAPTER I.—The good Wife .....	1
II.—The Life of Monica .....	4
III.—The good Husband .....	7
IV.—The Life of Abraham .....	9
V.—The good Parent .....	11
VI.—The good Child .....	14
VII.—The good Master .....	16
VIII.—The good Servant .....	19
IX.—The Life of Eliezer .....	21
X.—The good Widow .....	23
XI.—The Life of the Lady Paula .....	25
XII.—The constant Virgin .....	31
XIII.—The Life of Hildegardis .....	35
XIV.—The elder Brother .....	39
XV.—The younger Brother .....	42

---

#### BOOK II.

CHAPTER I.—The good Advocate .....	49
II.—The good Physician .....	51
III.—The Life of Paracelsus .....	54
IV.—The controversial Divine .....	57
V.—The Life of Dr. Whitaker .....	61
VI.—The true Church Antiquary .....	64
VII.—The general Artist .....	67

	Page.
<b>CHAPTER VIII.—The Life of Julius Caesar Scaliger .....</b>	<b>70</b>
IX.—The faithful Minister .....	73
X.—The Life of Mr. Perkins .....	80
XI.—The good Parishioner .....	84
XII.—The good Patron .....	87
XIII.—The good Landlord .....	90
XIV.—The good Master of a College .....	93
XV.—The Life of Dr. Metcalf.....	96
XVI.—The good Schoolmaster .....	99
XVII.—The good Merchant .....	103
XVIII.—The good Yeoman .....	106
XIX.—The Handicraftsman .....	109
XX.—The good Soldier.....	113
XXI.—The good Sea-Captain .....	120
XXII.—The Life of Sir Francis Drake .....	124
XXIII.—The good Herald .....	131
XXIV.—The Life of Mr. William Camden .....	134
XXV.—The true Gentleman.....	137

---

### BOOK III.

<b>CHAPTER I.—Of Hospitality .....</b>	<b>143</b>
II.—Of Jesting .....	145
III.—Of Self-Praising .....	147
IV.—Of Travelling .....	149
V.—Of Company .....	152
VI.—Of Apparel .....	155
VII.—Of Building .....	157
VIII.—Of Anger .....	160
IX.—Of expecting Preferment .....	162
X.—Of Memory .....	165
XI.—Of Fancy .....	168
XII.—Of natural Fools .....	171

## CONTENTS.

xiii

Page.

	Page.
CHAPTER XIII.—Of Recreations .....	174
XIV.—Of Tombs .....	178
XV.—Of Deformity .....	181
XVI.—Of Plantations .....	184
XVII.—Of Contentment .....	186
XVIII.—Of Books .....	189
XIX.—Of Time-Serving .....	192
XX.—Of Moderation .....	196
XXI.—Of Gravity .....	199
XXII.—Of Marriage .....	203
XXIII.—Of Fame .....	205
XXIV.—Of the Antiquity of Churches, and Necessity of them ..	209
XXV.—Of Ministers' Maintenance .....	218

## BOOK IV.

CHAPTER I.—The Favourite' .....	227
II.—The Life of Haman .....	234
III.—The Life of Cardinal Wolsey .....	237
IV.—The Life of Charles Brandon, Duke of Suffolk .....	241
V.—The wise Statesman .....	244
VI.—The Life of William Cecil, Lord Burleigh .....	251
VII.—The good Judge .....	255
VIII.—The Life of Sir John Markham .....	259
IX.—The good Bishop .....	262
X.—The Life of St. Augustine .....	269
XI.—The Life of Bishop Ridley .....	273
XII.—The true Nobleman .....	279
XIII.—The Court-Lady .....	283
XIV.—The Life of Lady Jane Grey .....	289
XV.—The Life of Queen Elizabeth .....	293
XVI.—The Ambassador .....	299
XVII.—The good General .....	306

## CONTENTS.

	Page.
CHAPTER VIII.—The Life of Julius Cæsar Scaliger .....	70
IX.—The faithful Minister .....	73
X.—The Life of Mr. Perkins .....	80
XI.—The good Pariahoner .....	84
XII.—The good Patron .....	87
XIII.—The good Landlord .....	90
XIV.—The good Master of a College .....	93
XV.—The Life of Dr. Metcalf .....	96
XVI.—The good Schoolmaster .....	99
XVII.—The good Merchant .....	103
XVIII.—The good Yeoman .....	106
XIX.—The Handicraftsman .....	109
XX.—The good Soldier .....	113
XXI.—The good Sea-Captain .....	120
XXII.—The Life of Sir Francis Drake .....	124
XXIII.—The good Herald .....	131
XXIV.—The Life of Mr. William Camden .....	134
XXV.—The true Gentleman .....	137

## BOOK III.

CHAPTER I.—Of Hospitality .....	143
II.—Of Jesting .....	145
III.—Of Self-Praising .....	147
IV.—Of Travelling .....	14
V.—Of Company .....	1
VI.—Of Apparel .....	1
VII.—Of Building .....	1
VIII.—Of Anger .....	1
IX.—Of expecting Preferment .....	1
X.—Of Memory .....	1
— Of Fancy .....	1

	Page.
CHAPTER XVIII.—The Life of Gustavus Adolphus, King of Sweden .....	309
XIX.—The Prince or Heir-Apparent to the Crown .....	314
XX.—The Life of Edward, the Black Prince .....	319
XXI.—The King .....	325

---

## BOOK V.

## PROFANE STATE.

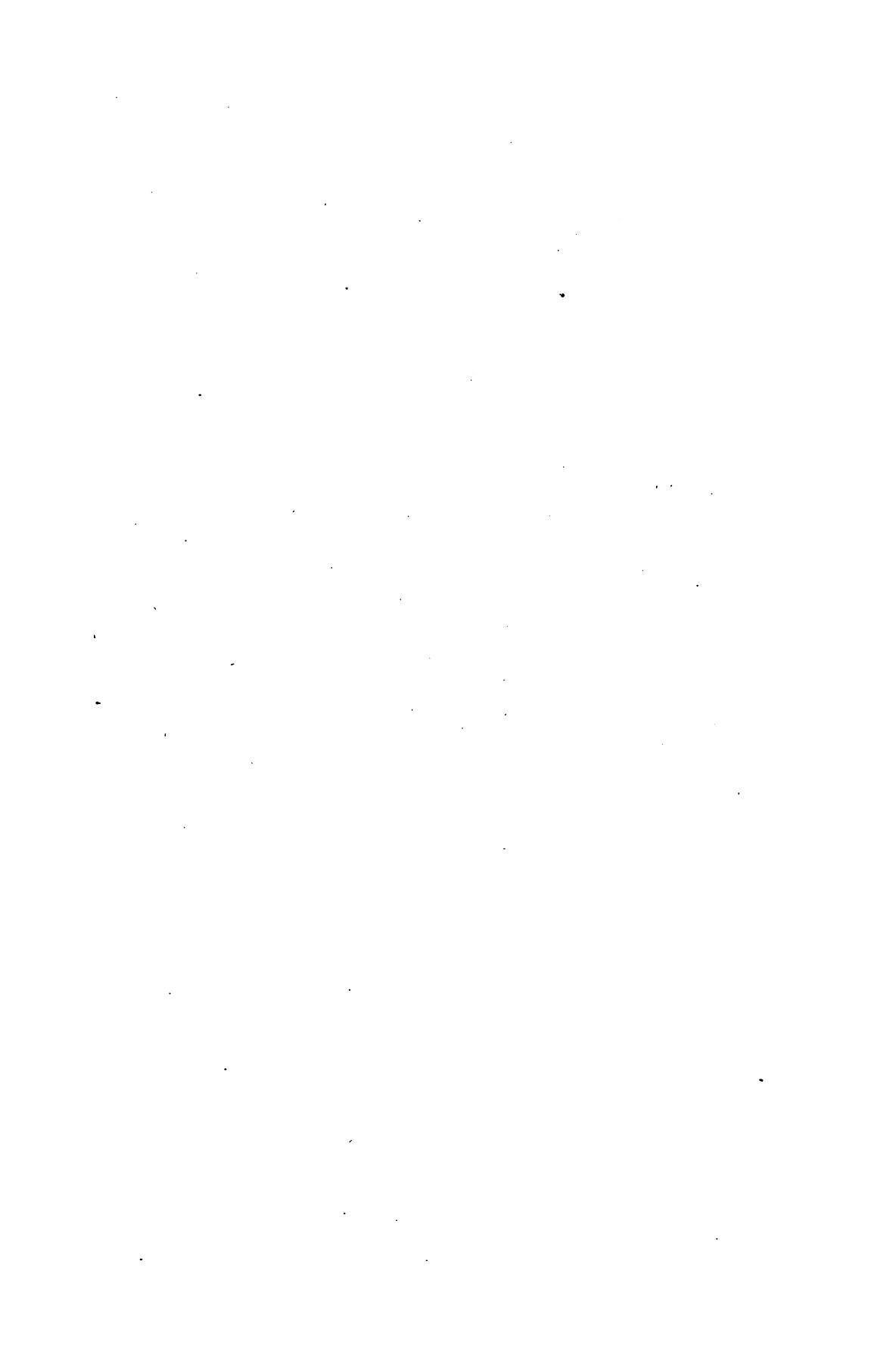
CHAPTER I.—The Harlot .....	335
II.—The Life of Joan, Queen of Naples .....	339
III.—The Witch .....	342
IV.—The Witch of Endor .....	346
V.—The Life of Joan of Arc .....	349
VI.—The Atheist .....	354
VII.—The Life of Cæsar Borgia .....	359
VIII.—The Hypocrite .....	363
IX.—The Life of Jehu .....	365
X.—The Heretic .....	367
XI.—The rigid Donatists .....	370
XII.—The Liar .....	379
XIII.—The common Barretor .....	381
XIV.—The degenerous Gentleman .....	384
XV.—The Traitor .....	391
XVI.—The Pazzians' Conspiracy .....	393
XVII.—The Tyrant .....	396
XVIII.—The Life of Andronicus .....	400
XIX.—The Life of Duke D'Alva .....	450

# THE HOLY STATE.

## BOOK I.

CONTAINING

ESSAYS AND CHARACTERS.



# THE HOLY STATE.

---

## THE FIRST BOOK.

---

### CHAPTER I.

#### THE GOOD WIFE.

ST. PAUL to the Colossians (iii. 18) first adviseth women to submit themselves to their husbands, and then counselleth men to love their wives. And sure it was fitting, that women should first have their lesson given them, because it is hardest to be learned, and therefore they need have the more time to con it. For the same reason, we first begin with the character of a good wife.

##### MAXIM I.

*She commandeth her husband in any equal matter, by constant obeying him.*—It was always observed, that what the English gained of the French in battle by valour, the French regained of the English by cunning in treaties :\* so if the husband should chance, by his power, in his passion, to prejudice his wife's right, she wisely knoweth, by compounding and complying, to recover and rectify it again.

##### II.

*She never crosseth her husband in the spring-tide of his anger, but stays till it be ebbing-water.*—And then mildly she argues the matter, not so much to condemn him, as to acquit herself. Surely, men, contrary to iron, are worst to be wrought upon when they are hot; and are far more tractable in cold blood. It is an observation of seamen, that if a single meteor or fireball falls on their mast, it portends ill luck; but if two come

\* *COMINEUS*, lib. iv. cap. 8; *et BODINUS*, *De Republicâ*, lib. v. p. 782.

together, (which they count Castor and Pollux,) they presage good success.\* But, sure, in a family it bodeth most bad, when two fireballs (husband's and wife's anger) come both together.

## III.

*She keeps home if she have not her husband's company, or leave for her patent to go abroad.*—For the house is the woman's centre. It is written: “The sun ariseth; man goeth forth unto his work and to his labour until the evening;” (Psalm civ. 22;) but it is said of the good woman: “She riseth while it is yet night.” (Prov. xxxi. 15.) For man in the race of his work starts from the rising of the sun, because his business is without doors, and not to be done without the light of heaven; but the woman hath her work within the house, and therefore can make the sun rise by lighting of a candle.

## IV.

*Her clothes are rather comely than costly, and she makes plain cloth to be velvet by her handsome wearing it.*—She is none of our dainty dames, who love to appear in variety of suits every day new, as if a good gown, like a stratagem in war, were to be used but once. But our good wife sets up a sail according to the keel of her husband's estate; and if of high parentage, she doth not so remember what she was by *birth*, that she forgets what she is by *match*.

## V.

*Arcana imperii (her husband's secrets) she will not divulge.*—Especially she is careful to conceal his infirmities. If he be none of the wisest, she so orders it that he appears on the public stage but seldom; and then he hath conned his part so well, that he comes off with great applause. If his *forma informans* be but bad, she provides him better *formas assistentes*,—gets him wise servants and secretaries.

## VI.

*In her husband's absence, she is wife and deputy-husband, which makes her double the files of her diligence.*—At his return he finds all things so well, that he wonders to see himself at home when he was abroad.

## VII.

*Her carriage is so modest, that she disheartens wantons not only to take, but even to besiege, her chastity.*—I confess, some

† ERASMUS, *Dialogi, in Naufragio.*

desperate men will hope anything ; yea, their shameless boldness will fasten on impossibilities, measuring other folks' badness by their own ; yet, seldom such salamanders, which live in the fire of lust, dare approach, without seeing the smoke of wantonness in looks, words, apparel, or behaviour. And though charity commands me to believe, that some women who hang out signs, notwithstanding, will not lodge strangers ; yet these mock guests are guilty in tempting others to tempt them.

## VIII.

*In her husband's sickness she feels more grief than she shows.*—Partly that she may not dishearten him, and partly because she is not at leisure to seem so sorrowful, that she may be the more serviceable.

## IX.

*Her children, though many in number, are none in noise, steering them with a look whither she listeth.*—When they grow up, she teacheth them not pride but painfulness, making their hands to clothe their backs, and them to wear the livery of their own industry. She makes not her daughters gentlewomen before they be women, rather teaching them what they should pay to others, than receive from them.

## X.

*The heaviest work of her servants she maketh light, by orderly and seasonably enjoining it.*—Wherefore her service is counted a preferment, and her teaching better than her wages. Her maids follow the precedent of their mistress,—live modestly at home. One asked a grave gentlewoman, how her maids came by so good husbands, and yet seldom went abroad ; "O," said she, "good husbands come home to them." So much for this subject ; and what is defective in this description shall be supplied by the pattern ensuing.

## CHAPTER II.

## THE LIFE OF MONICA.

MONICA is better known by the branch of her issue, than root of her parentage, and was born in or nigh Tagasta, in Africa.\* Her parents, whose names we find not, were Christians, and careful of her education, committing her to the breeding of an old maid in the house ; who, though herself crooked with age, was excellent to straighten the manners of youth. She instructed her with holy severity, never allowing her to drink wine, or between meals. Having outgrown her tuition, she began by degrees to sip and drink wine ; lesser draughts, like wedges, widening her throat for greater, till, at last, (ill customs being not knocked, but insensibly screwed, into our souls,) she could fetch off her whole ones. Now it happened that a young maid, formerly her partner in potting, fell at variance with her, and (as malice, when she shoots, draws her arrow to the head) called her “toss-pot and drunkard ;” whereupon Monica reformed herself, and turned temperate. Thus bitter taunts sometimes make wholesome physic, when God sanctifies unto us the malice of our enemies to perform the office of good-will.

After this was she married to Patricius, one of more honour than wealth, and as yet a Pagan ; wherein she brake St. Paul’s precept, “To marry only in the Lord.” Perchance, then there was a dearth of husbands ; or she did it by her parents’ importunity, or out of promise of his conversion : and the history herein being but lamely delivered [to] us, it is charity to support it with the most favourable construction. He was of a stern nature ; none more lamb when pleased, or lion when angry ; and, which is worse, his wild affections did prey abroad,† till she lured them home by her loving behaviour. Not like those wives who, by their hideous outcries, drive their wandering husbands farther out of the way.

Her own house was to her a house of correction, wherein her husband’s mother was bitter unto her, having a quarrel not so much to her person as relation, because a daughter-in-law. Her

\* AUGUSTINI *Confessiones*, lib. ix. c. 8.

† Ibid., lib. ix. c. 9.

servants, to climb into the favour of their old mistress, trampled on their young ; they bringing tales, and the old woman belief ; though the teeth of their malice did but file her innocence the brighter. Yea, at last her mother-in-law, turning her compurgator, caused her son to punish those maids who causelessly had wronged their mistress.

When her neighbours, who had husbands of far milder dispositions, would show her their husbands' cruelty legible in their faces, all her pitying was reproving them : and, whereas they expected to be praised for their patience, she condemned them for deserving such punishment. She never had blow from or jar with her husband, she so supplied his hard nature with her obedience ; and to her great comfort saw him converted to Christianity before his death. Also she saw Augustine her son, formerly vicious in life, and erroneous in doctrine, (whose soul she bathed in her tears,) become a worthy Christian ; who, coming to have his ears tickled, had his heart touched, and got religion in to boot, with the eloquence of St. Ambrose. She survived not long after her son's conversion, (God sends his servants to bed when they have done their work !) and her candle was put out, as soon as the day did dawn in St. Augustine.

Take an instance or two of her signal piety :—There was a custom in Africa,\* to bring pulse, bread, and wine to the monuments of dead saints ; wherein Monica was as forward as any. But, being better instructed, that this custom was of Heathenish parentage, and that religion was not so poor as to borrow rites from Pagans, she instantly left off that ceremony ; and as for piety's sake she had done it thus long, so for piety's sake she would do it no longer. How many old folks now-a-days, whose best argument is “use,” would have flown in *their* faces who should stop them in the full career of an ancient custom !

There was one Licentius, a novice-convert, who had got these words by the end : “ Turn us again, O Lord God of hosts : show us the light of thy countenance, and we shall be whole.” (Psalm lxxx. 3.) And, as it is the fashion of many men's tongues to echo forth the last sentence they learn, he said it in all places he went to. But Monica, overhearing him to sing it in the house of office, was highly offended at him ;† because holy things are to be suited to holy places ; and the harmony could

\* AUGUSTINI *Confessiones*, lib. vi. c. 2.  
lib. i. c. 8.

† AUGUSTINUS, *De Ordine*,

not be sweet where the song did jar with the place. And although some may say, that “a gracious heart consecrateth every place into a chapel;” yet, sure, though pious things are no where unfitting to be thought on, they may somewhere be improper to be uttered.

Drawing near her death, she sent most pious thoughts as harbingers to heaven: and her soul saw a glimpse of happiness through the chinks of her sickness-broken body. She was so inflamed with zeal, that she turned all objects into fuel to feed it. One day, standing with St. Augustine at an east window, she raised herself to consider the light of God’s presence, in respect whereof all corporal light is so far from being matched, [that] it deserves not to be mentioned. Thus mounted on heavenly meditations, and from that high pitch surveying earthly things, the great distance made them appear unto her like a little point, scarce to be seen, and less to be respected.\*

She died at Ostia in Italy, in the fifty-sixth year of her age; Augustine closing her eyes, when through grief he had scarce any himself.

\* AUGUSTINI *Confessiones*, lib. ix. c. 10.

## CHAPTER III.

## THE GOOD HUSBAND.

HAVING formerly described a good wife, she will make a good husband ; whose character we are now to present.

## MAXIM I.

*His love to his wife weakeneth not his ruling her ; and his ruling lesseneth not his loving her.*—Wherefore he avoideth all fondness, (a sick love, to be praised in none, and pardoned only in the newly-married !) whereby more have wilfully betrayed their command, than ever lost it by their wives' rebellion. Methinks, that [the] he-viper is right enough served which, as Pliny reports, puts his head into the she-viper's mouth, and she bites it off.\* And what wonder is it if women take the rule to themselves, which their uxorious husbands first surrender unto them ?

## II.

*He is constant to his wife, and confident of her.*—And, sure, where jealousy is the jailer, many break the prison ; it opening more ways to wickedness than it stoppeth ; so that where it findeth one—it maketh ten—dishonest.

## III.

*He alloweth her meet maintenance, but measures it by his own estate.*—Nor will he give less, nor can she ask more. Which allowance, if shorter than her deserts, and his desire, he lengtheneth it out with his courteous carriage unto her, chiefly in her sickness ; then not so much word-pitying her, as providing necessaries for her.

## IV.

*That she may not intrench on his prerogative, he maintains her propriety in feminine affairs.*—Yea, therein he follows her advice. For the soul of a man is planted so high, that he overshoots such low matters as lie level to a woman's eye ; and, therefore, her counsel therein may better hit the mark. Causes that are properly of feminine cognizance he suffers her finally to

\* PLINII *Nat. Hist.*, lib. x. cap. 62.

decide ; not so much as permitting an appeal to himself, that their jurisdictions may not interfere. He will not countenance a stubborn servant against her ; but, in her, maintains his own authority. Such husbands as bait the mistress with her maids, and clap their hands at the sport, will have cause to wring them afterwards.

## v.

*Knowing she is the weaker vessel, he bears with her infirmities.*—All hard using of her he detests ; desiring therein to do not what may be lawful, but fitting. And, grant her to be of a servile nature, such as may be bettered by beating ; yet he remembers he hath *enfranchised* her by marrying her. On her wedding-day she was, like St. Paul, “free born,” and privileged from any servile punishment.

## vi.

*He is careful that the wounds betwixt them take not air, and be publicly known.*—Jars concealed are half reconciled ; which if generally known, it is a double task to stop the breach at home, and men’s mouths abroad. To this end, he never publicly reproves her. An open reproof puts her to do penance before all that are present ; after which, many rather study revenge than reformation.

## vii.

*He keeps her in the wholesome ignorance of unnecessary secrets.*—They will not be starved with the ignorance—who, perchance, may surfeit with the knowledge—of weighty counsels, too heavy for the weaker sex to bear. He knows little, who will tell his wife all he knows.

## viii.

*He beats not his wife after his death.*—One, having a shrewd wife, yet loath to use her hardly in his life-time, awed her with telling her, that he would beat her when he was dead ; meaning, that he would leave her no maintenance. This humour is unworthy a worthy man, who will endeavour to provide her a competent estate. Yet he that impoverisheth his children to enrich his widow, destroys a quick-hedge to make a dead one.

## CHAPTER IV.

## THE LIFE OF ABRAHAM.

I INTEND not to range over all his life as he stands three-square in relation,—husband, father, master. We will only survey and measure his conjugal side, which respecteth his wife.

We read not that ever he upbraided her for her barrenness, as knowing that natural defects are not the creature's fault, but the Creator's pleasure; all which time his love was loyal to her alone. As for his going-in to Hagar, it was done not only with the consent but by the advice of Sarah; who was so ambitious of children, [that] she would be made a mother by a proxy. He was not jealous of her, (though a grand beauty,) in what company soever he came. Indeed, he feared the Egyptians, because the Egyptians feared not God; suspecting rather them of force, than her of falseness, and believing that sooner they might kill him than corrupt her.

Yet, as well as he loved her, he expected she should do work fit for her calling. "Make ready quickly three measures of meal and knead it." (Gen. xviii. 6.) Well may Sarah be cook, where Abraham was caterer, yea, where God was guest. The print of her fingers still remains in the meal; and of crumbing dough she hath made a lasting monument of her good housewifery.

Being falsely indicted by his wife, he never traversed the bill, but compounded with her on her own terms. The case this: Hagar being with child by Abraham, her pride swelled with her belly, and [she] despiseth her mistress. Sarah, laying her action wrong, sues Abraham for her maid's fault, and appeals to God. I see, the plaintiff hath not always the best cause; nor are they most guilty who are most blamed. However, Abraham passes by her peevishness, and remits his maid to stand or fall to her own mistress. Though he had a great part in Hagar, he would have none in Hagar's rebellion. Masters who protect their faulty servants, hinder the proceeding of justice in a family.

He did deny himself, to grant his wife's will in a matter of great consequence. Sarah desired: "Cast out this bondwoman

and her son." (Gen. xxi. 10.) O hard word! She might as well have said, "Cast out of thyself nature and natural affection." See how Abraham struggles with Abraham; the *father* in him striving with the *husband* in him, till God moderated with his casting-voice, and Abraham was contented to hearken to the counsel of his wife.

Being to sacrifice Isaac, we find not that he made Sarah privy to his project. To tell her, had been to torture her, fearing her affections might be too strong for her faith. Some secrets are to be kept from the weaker sex; not always out of a distrust, lest they hurt the counsel by telling it, but lest the counsel hurt them by keeping it.

The dearest husband cannot bail his wife when death arrests her. Sarah dies, and Abraham weeps. Tears are a tribute due to the dead. It is fitting that the body, when it is sown in corruption, should be watered by those that plant it in the earth. The Hittites make him a fair offer: "In the chiefest of our sepulchres bury thy dead." (Gen. xxiii. 6.) But he thinks the best of them too bad for his Sarah. Her chaste ashes did love to lie alone: he provides her a virgin-tomb in the cave of Machpelah; where her corpse sweetly slept till he himself came to bed to her, and was buried in the same grave.

## CHAPTER V.

## THE GOOD PARENT.

HE beginneth his care for his children, not at their birth but [their] conception, giving them to God to be, if not (as Hannah did) his chaplains, (1 Sam. i. 11,) at least his servants. This care he continueth till the day of his death,—in their infancy, youth, and man's estate. In all which,—

## MAXIM I.

*He showeth them, in his own practice, what to follow and imitate; and, in others, what to shun and avoid.*—For though “the words of the wise be as nails fastened by the masters of the assemblies,” (Eccles. xii. 11,) yet, sure, their examples are the hammer to drive them in, to take the deeper hold. A father that whipped his son for swearing, and swore himself whilst he whipped him, did more harm by his example than good by his correction.

## II.

*He doth not welcome and embrace the first essays of sin in his children.*—Weeds are counted herbs in the beginning of the spring: nettles are put in pottage, and salads are made of eldern-buds. Thus fond fathers like the oaths and wanton talk of their little children; and *please* themselves to hear them *displease* God. But our wise parent both instructs his children in piety, and with correction blasts the first buds of profaneness in them. He that will not use the rod on his child, his child shall be used as a rod on him.

## III.

*He observeth gavel-kind\* in dividing his affections, though not his estate.*—He *loves* them (though *leaves* them not) all alike. Indeed, his main land he settles on the eldest: for, where man takes away the birth-right, God commonly takes away the blessing, from a family. But, as for his love, therein, like a well-drawn picture, he eyes all his children alike, if there be a parity of deserts; not parching one to drown another. Did not that mother show little wit in her great partiality, who, when

\* “Gives each child a part.”—VERSTEGAN, “Of decayed Intelligence,” cap. 3.

her neglected son complained that his brother (her darling) had hit and hurt him with a stone, whipped him, only for standing in the way where the stone went which his brother cast? This partiality is tyranny, when parents despise those that are deformed,—enough to break them whom God had bowed before.

## IV.

*He allows his children maintenance according to their quality.*

—Otherwise it will make them base, acquaint them with bad company and sharking tricks; and it makes them surfeit the sooner when they come to their estates. It is observed of camels, that, having travelled long without water through sandy deserts,\* *implentur, cum bibendi est occasio, et in præteritum et in futurum*: † and so these thirsty heirs soak it when they come to their means, who, whilst their fathers were living, might not touch the top of their money, and think they shall never feel the bottom of it when they are dead.

## V.

*In choosing a profession he is directed by his child's disposition.*

—Whose inclination is the strongest indenture to bind him to a trade. But when they set Abel to till the ground, and send Cain to keep sheep; Jacob to hunt, and Esau to live in tents; drive some to school, and others from it; they commit a rape on nature, and it will thrive accordingly. Yet he humours not his child when he makes an unworthy choice beneath himself, or rather for ease than use, pleasure than profit.

## VI.

*If his son prove wild, he doth not cast him off so far, but he marks the place where he lights.*—With the mother of Moses, he doth not suffer his son so to sink or swim, but he leaves one to stand afar off to watch what will become of him. (Exod. ii. 4.) He is careful, whilst he quencheth his luxury, not withal to put out his life; the rather, because *their souls who* have broken and run out in their youth, have proved the more healthful for it afterwards.

## VII.

*He moves him to marriage rather by argument drawn from his good, than his own authority.*—It is a style too princely for a

\* “When they find a well of water, they not only slake their long-sustained thirst, but drink still more largely in anticipation of future abstinence.”—EDIT.

† *PLINII Nat. Hist.*, lib. viii. c. 18.

parent herein to "will and command ;" but, sure, he may will and desire. Affections, like the conscience, are rather to be led than drawn ; and, it is to be feared, they that marry where they do not love, will love where they do not marry.

## VIII.

*He doth not give away his loaf to his children, and then come to them for a piece of bread.*—He holds the reins (though loosely) in his own hands ; and keeps, to reward duty, and punish undutifulness. Yet, on good occasion, for his children's advancement, he will depart from part of his means. Base is their nature who will not have their branches lopped, till their body be felled ; and will let go none of their goods, as if it pre-saged their speedy death : whereas it doth not follow, that he that puts off his cloak must presently go to bed.

## IX.

*On his death-bed he bequeathes his blessing to all his children.*—Nor rejoiceth he so much to leave them great portions, as honestly obtained. Only money well and lawfully gotten is good and lawful money. And if he leaves his children young, he principally nominates God to be their guardian ; and, next Him, is careful to appoint provident overseers.

## CHAPTER VI.

## THE GOOD CHILD.

## MAXIM I.

*He reverenceth the person of his parent, though old, poor, and froward.*—As his parent bare with him when a child, he bears with his parent if twice a child; nor doth his dignity above him cancel his duty unto him. When Sir Thomas More was Lord Chancellor of England, and Sir John his father one of the Judges of the King's Bench, he would in Westminster-hall beg his blessing of him on his knees.\*

## II.

*He observes his lawful commands, and practiseth his precepts, with all obedience.*—I cannot, therefore, excuse St. Barbara from undutifulness, and occasioning her own death. The matter this: Her father, being a Pagan, commanded his workmen, building his house, to make two windows in a room. Barbara, knowing her father's pleasure, in his absence enjoined them to make three, that, seeing them, she might the better contemplate the mystery of the Holy Trinity.† Methinks, two windows might as well have raised her meditations, and the light arising from both would as properly have minded her of the Holy Spirit proceeding from the Father and the Son. Her father, enraged, at his return, thus came to the knowledge of her religion, and accused her to the magistrate; which cost her her life.

## III.

*Having practised them himself, he entails his parents' precepts on his posterity.*—Therefore such instructions are by Solomon (Prov. i. 9) compared to frontlets and chains, (not to a suit of clothes, which serves but one, and quickly wears out, or out of fashion,) which have in them a real lasting worth, and are bequeathed as legacies to another age. The same counsels, observed, are chains to grace; which, neglected, prove halters to strangle undutiful children.

\* STAPLETON in *Vita Thomæ Mori*, cap. 1.  
in the "Life of Barbara," on the 4th of December.

† ALPHONS. VILLE.

## IV.

*He is patient under correction, and thankful after it.*—When Mr. West, formerly Tutor (such I count *in loco parentis*) to Dr. Whitaker, was by him, then Regius Professor, created Doctor, Whitaker solemnly gave him thanks before the University for giving him correction when his young scholar.

## V.

*In marriage he first and last consults with his father.*—When propounded, when concluded. He best bowls at the mark of his own contentment who, besides the aim of his own eye, is directed by his father, who is to give him the ground.

## VI.

*He is a stork to his parent, and feeds him in his old age.*—Not only if his father hath been a pelican, but though he hath been an ostrich\* unto him, and neglected him in his youth. He confines him not a long way off to a short pension, forfeited if he comes in his presence ; but shows piety at home, and learns (as St. Paul saith, 1 Tim. v. 4) to requite his parent. And yet the debt (I mean only the principal, not counting the interest) cannot fully be paid ; and therefore he compounds with his father to accept in good worth the utmost of his endeavour.

## VII.

*Such a child God commonly rewards with long life in this world.*—If he chance to die young, yet he lives long that lives well ; and time mis-spent is not lived but lost. Besides, God is better than his promise, if he takes from him a long lease, and gives him a freehold of better value. As for disobedient children,—

## VIII.

*If preserved from the gallows, they are reserved for the rack, to be tortured by their own posterity.*—One complained, that never father had so undutiful a child as he had. “Yes,” said his son, with less grace than truth, “my grandfather had.”

\* The word employed by Fuller is “estridge ;” and the contrast which he institutes, in this passage, cannot be applied to any of the habits of the goshawk. Between it and the pelican no such difference exists as that which is here noted betwixt the pelican and the *estridge*, and which properly fixes the bird thus described to be the ostrich, whose carelessness respecting the hatching of its eggs, and the rearing of its young, has been the subject of both sacred and classical tradition and allusion, from time immemorial.—EDIT.

I conclude this subject with the example of a Pagan's son, which will shame most Christians. Pomponius Atticus, making the funeral oration at the death of his mother, did protest, that, living with her threescore and seven years, he was never reconciled unto her, *se nunquam cum matre in gratiam rediisse*; because (take the comment with the text) there never happened betwixt them the least jar which needed reconciliation.\*

---

## CHAPTER VII.

### THE GOOD MASTER.

He is the heart in the midst of his household, *primum vivens et ultimum moriens*, first up and last a-bed, if not in his person, yet in his providence. In his carriage he aimeth at his own and his servants' good, and to advance both.

#### MAXIM I.

*He oversees the works of his servants.*—One said, that “the dust that fell from the master's shoes was the best compost to manure ground.” The lion, out of state, will not run whilst any one looks upon him; † but some servants, out of slothfulness, will not run except some do look upon them, spurred on with their master's eye. Chiefly he is careful exactly to take his servants' reckonings. If their master takes no account of them, they will make small account of him, and care not what they spend who are never brought to an audit.

#### II.

*He provides them victuals, wholesome, sufficient, and seasonable.*—He doth not so alloy his servants' bread, or debase it so much, as to make that servants' meat which is not man's meat. He alloweth them also convenient rest and recreation: whereas some masters, like a bad conscience, will not suffer them to sleep that have them. He remembers the old law of the Saxon

\* *In Vita Attici in fine Epist. ad Atticum.*

† *PLINII Nat. Hist.*, lib. viii.

cap. 16.

king Ina : “ If a villain work on Sunday by his lord’s command, he shall be free.” \*

## III.

*The wages he contracts for, he duly and truly pays to his servants.*—The same word in the Greek, *ἰός*, signifies “ rust ” and “ poison : ” and some strong poison is made of the rust of metals ; but none more venomous than the rust of money in the rich man’s purse unjustly detained from the labourer, which will poison and infect his whole estate.

## IV.

*He never threatens † his servant, but rather presently corrects him.*—Indeed, conditional threatenings, with promise of pardon on amendment, are good and useful. Absolute threatenings torment more, reform less, making servants keep their faults and forsake their masters : wherefore, herein he never passeth his word, but makes present payment, lest the creditor run away from the debtor.

## V.

*In correcting his servant, he becomes not a slave to his own passion.*—Not cruelly making new indentures of the flesh of his apprentice. To this end, he never beats him in the height of his passion. Moses, being to fetch water out of the rock, and commanded by God only to speak to it with his rod in his hand, being transported with anger, smote it thrice. Thus some masters, who might fetch penitent tears from their servants with a chiding word, (only shaking the rod withal for terror,) in their fury strike many blows which might better be spared. If he perceives his servant incorrigible, so that he cannot wash the blackamoor, he washeth his hands of him, and fairly puts him away.

## VI.

*He is tender of his servant in sickness and age.*—If crippled in his service, his house is his hospital. Yet how many throw away those dry bones out of which themselves have sucked the marrow ! It is as usual to see a young serving-man an old beggar, as to see a light-horse, first from the great saddle of a nobleman, to come to the hackney-coach, and at last die in drawing a car. But the good master is not like the cruel hunter in the fable, who beat his old dog because his toothless mouth let go the game. He rather imitates the noble nature of our prince

\* SIR HENRY SPELMAN in *Conciliis, anno Christi 692*, p. 188.  
vi. 9.

† Ephes.

Henry, who took order for the keeping of an old English mastiff which had made a lion run away.\* Good reason good service in age should be rewarded. Who can without pity and pleasure behold that trusty vessel which carried sir Francis Drake about the world?

Hitherto our discourse hath proceeded of the carriage of masters toward free covenant-servants, not intermeddling with their behaviour towards slaves and vassals, whereof we only report this passage: When Charles V., emperor, returning with his fleet from Algiers, was extremely beaten with a tempest, and the ships overladen, he caused them to cast their best horses into the sea, to save the life of many slaves, who, according to the market-price, were not so much worth.† Are there not many that, in such a case, had rather save Jack the horse than Jockey the keeper? And yet those who first called England “the purgatory of servants,” sure, did us much wrong; purgatory itself being as false in the application to us, as in the doctrine thereof; servants with us living generally in as good conditions as in any other country. And well may masters consider how easy a transposition it had been, for God to have made him to mount into the saddle that holds the stirrup; and him to sit down at the table who stands by with a trencher.

\* How's “Continuation of Stow's Chronicle,” p. 836.  
part iii. *De illust. Germ., et alii autores.*

† PANTALEON,

## CHAPTER VIII.

## THE GOOD SERVANT.

HE is one that, out of conscience, serves God in his master ; and so hath the principle of obedience in himself. As for those servants who found their obedience on some external thing, with engines, they will go no longer than they are wound or weighed up.

## MAXIM I.

*He doth not dispute his master's lawful will, but doth it.*—Hence it is that simple servants (understand such whose capacity is bare measure, without surplusage, equal to the business they are used in) are more useful, because more manageable, than abler men, especially in matters wherein not their brains but hands are required. Yet if his master, out of want of experience, enjoins him to do what is hurtful, and prejudicial to his own estate, duty here makes him undutiful, (if not to deny, to demur in his performance,) and, choosing rather to displease than hurt his master, he humbly represents his reasons to the contrary.

## II.

*He loves to go about his business with cheerfulness.*—One said, he loved to hear his carter, though not his cart, to sing. “God loveth a cheerful giver :” and Christ reproved the Pharisees for disfiguring their faces with a sad countenance. Fools, who, to persuade men that angels lodged in their hearts, hung out a devil for a sign in their faces ! Sure, cheerfulness in doing renders a deed more acceptable. Not like those servants, who doing their work unwillingly, their looks do enter a protestation against what their hands are doing.

## III.

*He dispatcheth his business with quickness and expedition.*—Hence the same English word SPEED signifies “celerity,” and “success ;” the former, in business of execution, causing the latter. Indeed, haste and rashness are storms and tempests, breaking and wrecking business : but nimbleness is a fair, full wind, blowing it with speed to the haven. As he is good at hand, so he is good at length, continually and constantly careful in his service. Many servants, as if they had learned the

nature of the besoms they use, are good for a few days, and afterwards grow unserviceable.

## IV.

*He disposeth not of his master's goods without his privity or consent.*—No, not in the smallest matters. Open this wicket, and it will be in vain for masters to shut the door. If servants presume to dispose small things without their masters' allowance, (besides that many little leaks may sink a ship !) this will widen their consciences to give away greater. But though he hath not always a particular leave, he hath a general grant, and a warrant dormant, from his master, to give an alms to the poor in his absence, if in absolute necessity.

## V.

*His answers to his master are true, direct, and dutiful.*—If a dumb devil possesseth a servant, a winding cane is the fittest circle, and the master the exorcist to drive it out. Some servants are so talkative, one may as well command the echo as them not to speak last ; and then they count themselves conquerors, because last they leave the field. Others, though they seem to yield, and go away, yet, with the flying Parthians, shoot backward over their shoulders, and dart bitter taunts at their masters ; yea, though, with the clock, they have given the last stroke, yet they keep a jarring, muttering to themselves a good while after.

## VI.

*Just correction he bears patiently, and unjust he takes cheerfully.*—Knowing that stripes unjustly given more hurt the master than the man : and the logic maxim is verified, *Agens agendo reputitur*, “The smart most lights on the striker.” Chiefly he despairs the baseness of running away.

## VII.

*Because charity is so cold, his industry is the hotter to provide something for himself, whereby he may be maintained in his old age.*—If under his master he trades for himself, (as an apprentice may do, if he hath covenanted so beforehand,\*) he provides good bounds and sufficient fences betwixt his own and his master's estate, (Jacob “set his flock three days' journey” from Laban's, Gen. xxx. 36,) that no quarrel may arise about their property, nor suspicion that his remnant hath eaten up his master's whole cloth.

\* BRACON, lib. v. tract. 2, cap. 3, num. 7.

## CHAPTER IX.

## THE LIFE OF ELIEZER.

ELIEZER was steward of Abraham's household, lieutenant-general over the army of his servants, ruler over all his master had; the confidence in his loyalty causing the largeness of his commission.

But as for those who make him the founder of Damascus, on no other evidence but because he is called "Eliezer of Damascus," they build a great city on too narrow a foundation. It argues his goodness, that Abraham, if dying without a son, intended him his heir, (a kinsman in grace is nearest by the surest side!) till Isaac, stepping in, stopped out Eliezer, and reversed those resolutions.

The Scripture presents us with a remarkable precedent of his piety, in a matter of great moment: \*—Abraham, being to send him into Mesopotamia, caused him to swear that he would faithfully fetch Isaac a wife from his own kindred. Eliezer demurred awhile before he would swear; carefully surveying the latitude of his oath, lest some unseen ambushes therein should surprise his conscience. The most scrupulous to take an oath will be the most careful to perform it: whereas those that swear it blindly, will do it lamely. He objects: "Peradventure the woman shall not be willing to follow me." At last, being satisfied in this query, he takes the oath; as no honest man who means to pay, will refuse to give his bond, if lawfully required.

He takes ten camels, (then the coaches of the east-country,) with servants and all things in good equipage, to show a sample of his master's greatness; and, being a stranger in the country, asked direction of him who best knew the way,—God himself. If any object, that his craving of a sign was a sign of infidelity, and unmanly boldness, to confine God to particulars; yet, perchance, God's Spirit prompted him to make the request, who sometimes moves men to ask what he is minded to give; and his petition seemeth just, because granted.

Rebekah meets him at the well. The lines, drawn from

\* That the nameless servant (Gen. xxiv.) was this Eliezer, Abraham's steward, is the opinion of Luther, in his Comment on that chapter; RIVET, on the same, *Exercit. 111*; with many others.

every part of the sign required, centre themselves in her. "Drink, my lord," said she, "and I will draw water for thy camels." Her words prophesy, that she will be a good house-wife, and a good housekeeper. Eliezer's eyes are dazzled with the beams of God's providence. Her drawing of water drew more wonder from him ; and the more he drinks of her pitcher, the more he is athirst to know the issue of the matter. He questions her of her parentage, and finds all his mystical expectation historically expounded in her. Then he bowed down his head, and did homage to God's providence, blessing Him for his protection. Many favours which God giveth us ravel out for want of hemming, through our own unthankfulness : for though prayer purchaseth blessings, giving praise doth keep the quiet possession of them.

Being come into the house, his first care is for his cattle, whose dumbness is oratory to a conscientious man ; and he that will not be merciful to his beast, is a beast himself. Then, preferring his message before his meat, he empties his mind before he fills his body. No dainties could be digested, whilst his errand, like a crudity, lay on his stomach.

In delivering his message, first he reads his commission : "I am Abraham's servant." Then he reports the fulness of his master's wealth, without any hyperboles. How many, employed in such a matter, would have made mountains of gold of mole-hills of silver ! Not so Eliezer, reporting the bare truth ; and a good estate, if told, commends itself. As plain also is his narration of the passages of God's providence, the artificialness whereof best appeared in his natural relation. Then concludes he, with desiring a direct answer to his motion.

The matter was soon transacted betwixt them ; for, seeing that heaven did ask the bans, why should earth forbid them ? Only her friends desire Rebekah should stay ten days with them ; which Eliezer would not yield to. He would speedily finish that bargain whereof God had given the happy earnest ; and, because blessed hitherto, make more haste hereafter. If in a dark business we perceive God to guide us by the lantern of his providence, it is good to follow the light close, lest we lose it by our lagging behind. He will not truant it now in the afternoon ; but with convenient speed returns to Abraham, who only was worthy of such a servant, who only was worthy of such a master.

## CHAPTER X.

## THE GOOD WIDOW.

SHE is a woman whose head hath been quite cut off; and yet she liveth, and hath the second part of virginity. Conceive her to have buried her husband decently according to his quality and condition, and let us see how she behaves herself afterwards.

## MAXIM I.

*Her grief for her husband, though real, is moderate.*—Excessive was the sorrow of king Richard II., beseeming him neither as a king, man, nor Christian, who so fervently loved Anna of Bohemia, his queen, that, when she died at Sheen in Surrey, he both cursed the place, and also out of madness overthrew the whole house.\*

## II.

*But our widow's sorrow is no storm, but a still rain.*—Indeed, some foolishly discharge the surplusage of their passions on themselves, tearing their hair; so that their friends, coming to the funeral, know not which most to bemoan,—the dead husband, or the dying widow. Yet commonly it comes to pass, that such widows' grief is quickly emptied, which streameth out at so large a vent; whilst *their* tears that but drop, will hold running a long time.

## III.

*She continues a competent time in her widow's estate.*—Anciently they were at least to live out their *annum luctus*, “their year of sorrow.” But as some erroneously compute the long lives of the patriarchs before the flood, not by solary but lunary years, making a month a year; † so many over-hasty widows cut their year of mourning very short, and within few weeks make post-speed to a second marriage.

## IV.

*She doth not only live sole and single, but chaste and honest.*—We know pest-houses always stand alone, and yet are full of infectious diseases. Solitariness is not an infallible argument

\* WEAVER, “Funeral Monuments,” p. 473, out of STOW’s “Annals.”

† Vide AUGUSTINUS *De Civitate Dei*, lib. xv. cap. 12.

of sanctity ; and it is not enough to be unmarried, but to be undefiled.

## V.

*Though going abroad sometimes about her business, she never makes it her business to go abroad.*—Indeed, “man goeth forth to his labour ;” and a widow in civil affairs is often forced to act a double part of man and woman, and must go abroad to solicit her business in person, what she cannot do by the proxy of her friends. Yet, even then, she is most careful of her credit, and tender of her modesty, not impudently thrusting into the society of men. O, it is improper for tinder to strike fire ; and for their sex who are to be sued to, first to intrude, and offer their company !

## VI.

*She loves to look on her husband's picture, in the children he hath left her.*—Not foolishly fond over them for their father's sake, (this were to kill them in honour of the dead !) but giveth them careful education. Her husband's friends are ever her welcomest guests ; whom she entertaineth with her best cheer, and with honourable mention of their friend's and her husband's memory.

## VII.

*If she can speak little good of him, she speaks but little of him.*—So handsomely folding up her discourse, that his virtues are shown outwards, and his vices wrapped up in silence ; as counting it barbarism to throw *dirt* on his memory who hath *moulds* cast on his body. She is a champion for his credit, if any speak against him. Foolish is their project, who, by raking up bad savour against their former husbands, think thereby to perfume their bed for a second marriage.

## VIII.

*She putteth her especial confidence in God's providence.*—Surely if He be “a Father to the fatherless,” it must need follow that he is “an Husband to the widow ;” and therefore she seeks to gain and keep His love unto her, by her constant prayer and religious life.

## IX.

*She will not mortgage her [first] husband's pawns, thereby to purchase the good-will of a second.*—If she marrieth, (for which she hath the apostle's licence, not to say mandate, “I will that the younger widows marry,”) she will not abridge her children of that which justly belongs unto them. Surely, a broken faith to

the *former* is but a weak foundation to build thereon a loyal affection to a *later* love. Yet if she becomes a mother-in-law, there is no difference between her carriage to her own and her second husband's children, save that she is severest to her own, over whom she hath the sole jurisdiction. And if her second husband's children, by a former wife, commit a fault, she had rather bind them over to answer for it before their own father, than to correct them herself, to avoid all suspicion of hard using of them.

---

## CHAPTER XI.

### THE LIFE OF THE LADY PAULA.

“WHAT?” will some say, “having a wood of widows of upright conversation, must you needs gather one crooked with superstition to be pattern to all the rest? Must Paula be their president [precedent] ? whose life was a very mass-book; so that if every point of Popery were lost, they might be found in her practice.”

Nothing less. Indeed, Paula lived in an age which was, as I may say, in the knuckle and bending betwixt the primitive times and superstition: Popery being then a-hatching, but far from being fledged. Yea, no Papist (though picking out here and there some passages which make to his purpose) will make her practice, in gross, the square of his own. For where she embraces some superstitions with her left hand, she thrusts away more with her right. I have, therefore, principally made choice to write her Life, that I may acquaint both myself and the reader with the garb of that age in church-matters, wherein were many remarkable passages; otherwise I might and would have taken a far fitter example.

I know, two trades together are too much for one man to thrive upon; and too much for me it is to be an historian and a critic, to relate and to judge. Yet, since Paula, though a gracious woman, was guilty of some great errors, give me leave to hold a pencil in one hand, and a sponge in the other, both to draw her life, and dash it where it is faulty. And let us that live in purer times be thankful to God for our light, and use our

quicker sight to guide our feet in God's paths, lest we reel from one extremity to another.

To come to the Lady Paula's birth: the noblest blood in the world by a confluence ran in her veins. I must confess, the most ancient nobility is junior to no-nobility,—when all men were equal. Yet give others leave to see Moses's face to shine, when he knew it not himself; and seeing Paula was pleased not to know—but to neglect and trample on—her high birth, we are bound to take notice thereof. She was descended from Agamemnon, Scipio, and the Gracchi; \* and her husband Toxotius, from Æneas, and the Julian family; † so that in their marriage the wars of the Grecians and Trojans were reconciled.

Some years they lived together, in the city of Rome, in holy and happy wedlock; and to her husband she bare four daughters,—Blesilla, Paulina, Eustochium, and Ruffina. Yet still her husband longed for posterity, like those who are so covetous of a male heir, they count none children but sons; and at last God, who keeps the best for the close, bestowed Toxotius, a young son, upon her.

But, commonly, after a great blessing comes a great cross: scarce was she made a mother to a son, when she was made a widow; which to her was a great and grievous affliction. But as a rub to an overthrown bowl proves a help by hindering it, so afflictions bring the souls of God's saints to the mark, which otherwise would be gone, and transported with too much earthly happiness. However, Paula grieved little less than excessively hereat; she being a woman that, in all her actions, (to be sure to do enough,) made always measure with advantage.

Yet, in time, she overcame her sorrow, herein being assisted by the counsel and comfort of St. Jerome, whose constant frequenting of her, commented upon by his enemies' malice, (which will pry narrowly and talk broadly,) gave occasion to the report, that he accompanied with her for dishonest intents. Surely, if the accusations of slanderous tongues be proofs, the primitive times had no churches but stews. It is to be suspected, that Ruffin, his sworn enemy, raised the report; ‡ and if the lady Paula's memory wanted a compurgator, I would be one myself, it being improbable that those her eyes would burn with lust which were constantly drowned with tears. But the reader may find St. Jerome purging himself; § and he who had

\* *HIERONYMI Epist. ad Eustoch.*, p. 185.      † *IDEM in eādem Epist.*, p. 172.  
 ‡ *ERASMUS in Scholia in epitaphium Paulæ*, p. 193.      § *In Epistolā qua incipit*, "Si tibi putem," tom. ii. fol. 368.

his tongue and an innocent heart, needed nobody else to speak for him.

It happened that the bishops of the East and West were summoned, by the emperor's letters, to appear at Rome, for the according of some differences in the church : \* it seems by this, that the Pope did not so command in chief at Rome, but that the power of congregating synods still resided in the emperor. Hither came Paulinus, bishop of Antioch ; and Epiphanius, bishop of Salamine in Cyprus, who lodged at the lady Paula's ; and his virtues so wrought upon her, that she determined to leave her native country, and to travel into the East, and in Judea to spend the remainder of her life. The reasons that moved her to remove were, because Rome was a place of riot and luxury, her soul being almost stifled with the frequencies of ladies' visits ; and she feared courtesy in her w<sup>o</sup>uld justle out piety, she being fain to crowd up her devotions to make room for civil entertainments. Besides, of her own nature she ever loved privacy and a sequestered life, being of the pelicans' nature, which use not to fly in flocks. Lastly : she conceived that the sight of those holy places would be the best comment on the history of the Bible, and fasten the passages thereof in her mind. Wherefore, she intended to survey all Palestine, and at last to go to Bethlehem, making Christ's inn her home, and to die there where he was born ; leaving three of her daughters, and her poor infant Toxotius, behind her.

For mine own part, I think she had done as acceptable a deed to God, in staying behind to rock her child in the cradle, as to visit Christ's manger, seeing grace doth not cut off the affections of nature, but ripen them ; the rather, because Christianity is not nailed to Christ's cross and Mount Calvary, nor piety fastened (as we may say) to the freehold of the land of Palestine. But if any Papist make her a pattern for pilgrimages, let them remember that she went from Rome : and was it not an unnatural motion in her to move from that centre of sanctity ?

She, with her daughter Eustochium, began her journey ; and, taking Cyprus in her way, where she visited Epiphanius, she came at last to Judea. She measured that country with her travelling, and drew the truest map thereof with her own feet, so accurately that she left out no particular place of importance. At last she was fixed at Bethlehem, where she built one monastery for men, and three for women. It will be worth our pains

\* HIERONYMI *Epist. Predict.*, p. 172.

to take notice of some principal of the orders she made in those feminine academies; because Paula's practice herein was a leading case, though those that came after her went beyond her. For, in the rules of monastical life, Paula stood at the head game; and the Papists in after-ages, desirous to better her hand, drew themselves quite out.

Each monastery had a chief matron, whilst Paula was principal over all. These societies were severed at their meat and work, but met together at their prayers: they were carefully kept apart from men; not like those epicene monasteries, not long since invented by Joan queen of Sweden, wherein men and women lived under one roof,—not to speak of worse libertines. Well were nuns called “recluses;” which, according to the true meaning of the word, signify “those who are set wide open, or left at liberty;” though that barbarous age mistook the sense of the word for “such as were shut up,” and might not stir out of their cloister.\*

They used to sing “Hallelujah,” which served them both for a psalm, and a bell to call them all together. In the morning, at nine o'clock, at noon, at three o'clock in the afternoon, and at night, they had prayers, and sang the Psalms in order.† This, I believe, gave original to “canonical hours.” The apostle's precept is the plain song, “Pray continually;” and thus men's inventions ran their descants upon it, and confined it to certain hours: a practice in itself not so bad for those who have leisure to observe it, save that when devotion is thus artificially plaited into hours, it may take up men's minds in formalities to neglect the substance.

They rose also at midnight to sing Psalms: a custom begun before in the time of persecution, when the Christians were forced to be antipodes to other men; so that when it was night with others, it was day with them, and they then began their devotions. These night-prayers, begun in necessity, were continued, in Paula's time, in grateful remembrance, and since corrupted with superstition: the best is, *their* rising at midnight breaks none of *our* sleep.

These virgins did every day learn some part of the holy Scriptures; whereas those nuns who pretend to succeed them learn only with post-horses to run over the stage of their beads, (so many *Ave Marias*, and *Paternosters*,) and are ignorant in

\* LITTLETON, fol. 92.

† *Manū, horā tertiā, sextā, nonā, vesperi.*—HIERONYMUS, in *Præfat. Epist.*, p. 180. Surely, living in Palestine, he meaneth the Jewish computation of hours.

all the Scripture besides. Such as were faulty she caused to take their meat apart from others, at the entrance of the dining-room; with which mild severity she reclaimed many: shame in ingenuous natures making a deeper impression than pain. Mean time, I find amongst them no vow of virginity, no tyrannical penance, no whipping themselves; as if, not content to inter their sins in Christ's grave, they had rather bury them in furrows digged in their own backs. They wrought hard to get their living; and on the Lord's day alone went out of their monastery, to hear God's word.

Yet was she more rigid and severe towards herself than to any of them; macerating her body with fasting, and refusing to drink any wine, when advised thereto by physicians for her health. So that (as a holy man complained of himself, whilst he went about to subdue an enemy, he killed a subject\*) she overturned the state of her body, and, whilst she thought to snuff the candle, put it quite out. Yea, St. Jerome himself,—what his eloquence herein doth commend in her, his charity doth excuse, and his judgment doth condemn.† But we must charitably believe, that these her fastings proceeded out of true humiliation and sorrow for her sins; otherwise, where opinion of merit is annexed to them, they are good only to fill the body with wind, and the soul with pride. Certainly, prodigious Popish self-penance is will-worship, and the purest Epicurism, wherein pain is pleasant: for as long as people impose it on themselves, they do not deny their own will, but fulfil it; and whilst they beat down the body, they may puff up the flesh.

Nor can her immoderate bounty be excused, who gave all and more than all away; taking up money at interest to give to the poor, and leaving Eustochium her daughter deep in debt,—a great charge, and nothing to maintain it. Sure, none need be more bountiful in giving than the sun is in shining; which, though freely bestowing his beams on the world, keeps, notwithstanding, the body of light to himself. Yea, it is necessary that liberality should as well have banks as a stream.

She was an excellent text-woman; yea, could say the holy Scriptures by heart, and attained to understand and speak the Hebrew tongue; a language which Jerome himself got with great difficulty, and kept with constant use. Skill in Hebrew will quickly go out, and burn no longer than it is blown; yet she, in her old age, did quickly learn it. She diligently heard

\* BERNARD, *De Votis.*

† *Hæc refero, non quòd inconsideranter et ultra*

*vires sumta onera probem, &c. p. 181.*

Jerome expounding the Old and New Testament, asking him many doubts and queries in difficult places, (such constant scouring makes our knowledge brighter !) and would not suffer his judgment to stand neuter in hard points, but made him express the probable opinion.

Most naturally fly from death ; God's saints stand still till death comes to them ; Paula went out to meet it, not to say, called death unto her, by consuming herself in fasting. She died in the fifty-sixth year of her age, and was solemnly buried in Bethlehem. People of all countries flocked to her funeral. Bishops carried her corpse to the grave : others carried torches and lamps before it ; which, though some may condemn to be but burning of day, was no more than needed, she being buried in a grave or grot, as an eye-witness doth testify.\* Psalms were sung at her burial, in the Hebrew, Greek, Latin, and Syriac tongue ; it being fit there should be a key for every lock, and languages to be understood by all the miscellany company there present.

Eustochium her daughter had little comfort to be executrix or administratrix unto her, leaving her not a penny of money, great debts, and many brothers and sisters to provide for ; *quos sustentare arduum, abjecere impium.*† I like not this charity reversed, when it begins far off, and neglects those at home.

To conclude : I can do her memory no better right, than to confess she was wrong in some things. Yet, surely, God's glory was the mark she shot at, though herein the hand of her practice did sometimes shake, and oftener the eye of her judgment did take wrong aim.

\* GEORGE SANDYS'S "Travels," p. 179.

† "To procure due sustenance for them, was no easy task ; and if she had abandoned them, it would have been an act of impiety."—EDIT.

## CHAPTER XII.

## THE CONSTANT VIRGIN.

THE constant virgin is one who hath made a resolution with herself to live chaste, and unmarried. Now there is a grand difference betwixt a resolution and a vow. The former is a covenant drawn up betwixt the party and herself; and commonly runs with this clause, *durante nostro beneplacito*, “as long as we shall think fitting;” and therefore, on just occasion, she may give a release to herself. But in a vow God is interested as the creditor; so that except He be pleased to give up the bond, none can give an acquittance to themselves. Being now to describe the virgin, let the reader know that virginity belongs to both sexes; and though, in courtesy, we make our maid a female, let not my pen be challenged of impropriety, if casually sometimes it light on the masculine gender.

## MAXIM I.

*She chooseth not a single life solely for itself, but in reference to the better serving of God.*—I know none but beggars that desire the church-porch to lie in, which others only use as a passage into the church. Virginity is none of those things to be desired in and for itself, but because it leads a more convenient way to the worshipping of God, especially in time of persecution. For, then, if Christians be forced to run races for their lives, the unmarried have the advantage,—lighter by many ounces, and freed from much incumbrance, which the married are subject to; who, though private persons, herein are like princes,—they must have their train follow them.

## II.

*She improveth her single life, therewith to serve God the more constantly.*—Housekeepers cannot so exactly mark all their family affairs, but that sometimes their ranks will be broken; which disorder, by necessary consequence, will disturb their duties of piety, to make them contracted, omitted, or unseasonably performed. The apostle saith, “Such shall have troubles in the flesh;” and grant them sanctified troubles, yet even holly-thistle and sweetbrier have their prickles. But the virgin is

freed from these incumbrances. No lording husband shall at the same time command her presence and distance,—to be always near in constant attendance, and always to stand aloof off in an awful observance; so that providing his breakfast hazards her soul to fast a meal of morning prayer. No crying children shall drown her singing of Psalms, and put her devotion out of tune. No unfaithful servants shall force her to divide her eyes betwixt lifting them up to God, and casting them down to oversee their work. But, making her closet her chapel, she freely enjoyeth God and good thoughts at what time she pleaseth.

## III.

*Yet in all her discourse she maketh an honourable mention of marriage.*—And good reason that virginity should pay a chief rent of honour unto it, as acknowledging herself to be a *colonia deducta* from it. Unworthy is the practice of those who in their discourse plant all their arguments point-blank to batter down the married estate, bitterly inveighing against it; yea, base is the behaviour of some young men, who can speak nothing but satires against God's ordinance of matrimony, and the whole sex of women. This they do, either out of deep dissimulation, to divert suspicion, that they may prey the farthest from their holes: or else they do it out of revenge; having themselves formerly lighted on bad women, (yet no worse than they deserved,) they curse all adventures, because of their own shipwreck: or, lastly, they do it out of mere spite to nature and God himself: and pity it is but that their fathers had been of the same opinion! Yet it may be tolerable, if only in harmless mirth they chance to bestow a jest upon the follies of married people. Thus when a gentlewoman told an ancient bachelor who looked very young, that she thought he had eaten a snake; “No, mistress,” saith he, “it is because I never meddled with any snakes; which maketh me look so young.”

## IV.

*She counts herself better lost in a modest silence, than found in a bold discourse.*—Divinity permits not women to speak in the church; morality forbids maids to talk in the house, where their betters are present. She is far from the humours of those who (more bridling-in their chins than their tongues) love, in their constant prating, to make sweet music to their own ears, and harsh jarring to all the rest of the company. Yea, as some report of sheep, that when they run they are afraid of the noise of their

own feet ; so our virgin is afraid to hear her own tongue run in the presence of graver persons. She conceives, the bold maintaining of any argument concludes against her own civil behaviour ; and yet she will give a good account of any thing whereof she is questioned, sufficient to show her silence is her choice, not her refuge. In speaking, she studiously avoids all suspicious expressions, which wanton apprehensions may colourably comment into obscenity.

## v.

*She blusheth at the wanton discourse of others in her company.*—As fearing, that, being in the presence where treason against modesty is spoken, all in the place will be arraigned for principal. Yea, if silent, she is afraid to be taken to consent ; if offering to confute it, she fears lest, by stirring a dunghill, the savour may be more noisome. Wherefore, that she may not suffer in her title to modesty, to preserve her right, she enters a silent caveat by a blush in her cheeks, and embraceth the next opportunity to get a gaol-delivery out of that company where she was detained in durance. Now, because we have mentioned blushing, which is so frequent with virgins that it is called “a maiden’s blush,” (as if they alone had a patent to die this colour !) give us leave a little to enlarge ourselves on this subject.

1. *Blushing oftentimes proceeds from guiltiness.*—When the offender, being pursued after, seeks as it were to hide himself under the vizard of a new face.

2. *Blushing is other-times rather a compurgator than an accuser.*—Not arising from guiltiness in our virgin, but from one of these reasons : First, because she is surprised with a sudden accusation ; and though armed with innocency that she cannot be pierced, yet may she be amazed with so unexpected a charge. Secondly, from sensibleness of disgrace, ashamed, though innocent, to be within the suspicion of such faults, and that she had carried herself so that any tongue durst be so impudent as to lay it to her charge. Thirdly, from a disability to acquit herself at the instant ; her integrity wanting rather clearing than clearness ; and, perchance, she wants boldness to traverse the action ; and so, non-suiting herself, she fears her cause will suffer in the judgments of all that be present : and although accused but in jest, she is jealous the accusation will be believed in earnest ; and edged tools, thrown in merriment, may wound reputations. Fourthly, out of mere anger : for as in fear the blood makes not an orderly retreat, but a confused flight, to the

heart; so, in blushing, the blood sallies out into our virgin's cheeks, and seems as a champion to challenge the accuser for wronging her.

3. *Where small faults are committed, blushing obtains a pardon of course with ingenuous beholders.*—As if she be guilty of casual incivilities, or solecisms in manners occasioned by invincible ignorance, and unavoidable mistakes, in such a case, blushing is a sufficient penance to restore her to her state of innocence.

## VI.

*She imprisons not herself with a solemn vow never to marry.*—For, first, none know their own strength herein. Who hath sailed about the world of his own heart, sounded each creek, surveyed each corner, but that still there remains therein much *terra incognita* to himself? Junius, at the first little better than a misogynist, was afterwards so altered from himself, that he successively married four wives.\* Secondly, fleshly corruption, being pent, will swell the more; and Shimei, being confined to Jerusalem, will have the greater mind to gad to Gath. Thirdly, the devil will have a fairer set mark to shoot at, and will be most busy to make people break their vow. Fourthly, God may justly desert people for snatching that to themselves which is most proper for him to give; I mean, continency. Object not, that thou wilt pray to him to take from thee all desire of marriage; it being madness to vow that one will not eat, and then pray to God that he may not be hungry. Neither say, that now thou mayest presume on thyself, because thou art well stricken in years; for there may happen an autumn-spring in thy soul: and lust is an unmannerly guest; we know not how late in the evening of our lives it may intrude into us for a lodging.

## VII.

*She counts it virginity to be unspotted, not unmarried.*—Or else, even in old age, when nature hath given an inhibition, they may be strong in desiring who are weak in acting of wickedness; yea, they may keep stews in their hearts, and be so pregnant and ingratuated with lustful thoughts, that they may, as it were, die in travail because they cannot be delivered. And though there be no fire seen outwardly, as in the English chimneys, it may be hotter within, as in the Dutch stoves; and as well the devils, as the angels in heaven, “neither marry nor are given in marriage.”

\* JUNIUS, in his “Life” writ by himself.

## VIII.

*As she lives with less care, so she dies with more cheerfulness.*  
—Indeed, she was rather a sojourner, than an inhabitant, in this world ; and therefore forsakes it with the less grief. In a word, the way to heaven is alike narrow to all estates ; but far smoother to the virgin than to the married. Now, the great advantage virgins have to serve God above others, and the high favours He hath bestowed on some of them, shall appear in this virgin prophetess, whose Life we come to present.

---

## CHAPTER XIII.

## THE LIFE OF HILDEGARDIS.

HILDEGARDIS was born in Germany, in the county of Spanheim, in the year 1098. So that she lived in an age which we may call the first cock-crowing after the midnight of ignorance and superstition.

Her parents, Hidebert and Mechtilda, dedicated her to God from her infancy : and, surely, those whose childhood, with Hildegardis, hath had the advantage of pious education, may be said to have been good “time out of mind,” as not able to remember the beginning of their own goodness. At eight years of age she became a nun, under St. Jutta, sister to Megenhard, earl of Spanheim, and afterwards she was made abbess of St. Rupert’s nunnery, in Bingen-on-Rhine in the Palatinate.

Men commonly do beat and bruise their links before they light them, to make them burn the brighter : God first humbles and afflicts whom he intends to illuminate with more than ordinary grace. Poor Hildegardis was constantly and continually sick, and so weak that she very seldom was strong enough to go.\* But God, who denied her legs, gave her wings, and raised her high-mounted soul in visions and revelations.

I know, a general scandal is cast on revelations in this ignorant age : first, because many therein entitled the meteors of their own brain to be stars at least, and afterwards their revela-

\* *Fuerunt ei ab ipsa penè infantiā cebri ac ferè continui languorum dolores, ita ut pedum incessu perrarò uteretur.—THEOD. ABBAS in Vitâ Hildegardis, lib. i. cap. 2.*

tions have been revealed to be forgeries: secondly, because that night-raven did change his black feathers into the silver wings of a dove, and, transforming himself into an angel of light, deluded many with strange raptures and visions, though in their nature far different from those in the Bible. For St. Paul, in his revelations, was “caught up into the third heaven;” whereas most monks, with a contrary motion, were carried into hell and purgatory, and there saw apparitions of strange torments. Also St. John’s “Revelation” forbids all additions to the Bible, under heavy penalties; their visions are commonly on purpose to piece out the Scripture, and to establish such superstitions as have no footing in God’s word.

However, all held Hildegardis for a prophet, being induced thereunto by the piety of her life, (no break \* was ever found in her veil, so spotless was her conversation!) by the sanctity of her writings, and by the general approbation the church gave unto her. For, Pope Eugenius III., after exact examination of the matter, did in the Council of Treves (wherein St. Bernard was present) allow and privilege her revelations for authentical. She was of the Pope’s conclave, and emperor’s council, to whom they had recourse in difficulties: yea, the greatest torches of the church lighted themselves at her candle. The patriarch of Jerusalem, the bishops of Mentz, Cologne, Bremen, Treves, sent such knots, as posed their own fingers, to our Hildegardis to untie.

She never learned word of Latin, and yet therein would she fluently express her revelations to those notaries that took them from her mouth;† so that, throwing words at random, she never brake Priscian’s head: as if the Latin had learned to make itself true without the speaker’s care. And, no doubt, He that brought the single parties to her, married them also in her mouth; so that the same Spirit which furnished her with Latin words, made also the true syntaxis. Let none object, that her very writing of fifty-eight Homilies on the Gospel is false construction, where the feminine gender assumes an employment proper to men; for, though St. Paul silenceth women for speaking in the church, I know no Scripture [which] forbids them for writing on Scripture.

Such infused skill she had also of music, whereof she was naturally ignorant, and wrote a whole book of verses, very good according to those times. Indeed, in that age the trumpet of

\* “*Breck* or *Brack*, a gap in a hedge.” PHILLIPS AND KERSEY’s “New World of Words.”—EDIT. † TRITHEMIUS *De Scriptor. Eccles.*, fol. 92.

the warlike heroic, and the sweet harp of the lyric verse, were all turned into the jingling of cymbals, tinkling with rhymes and like-sounding cadences.

But let us hear a few lines of her prophecies, and thence guess the rest:—“In those days there shall rise up a people without understanding, proud, covetous, and deceitful; the which shall eat the sins of the people; holding a certain order of foolish devotion under the feigned cloak of beggary. Also they shall instantly preach without devotion or example of the holy martyrs, and shall detract from the secular princes, taking away the sacraments of the church from the true pastors, receiving alms of the poor, having familiarity with women, instructing them how they shall deceive their husbands, and rob their husbands to give it unto them.”\* &c. What could be said more plain to draw out to the life those Mendicant Friars, (rogues by God’s statutes,) who afterwards swarmed in the world?

Hear also how she foretold the low water of Tiber, whilst as yet it was full tide there:—“The kings and other rulers of the world, being stirred up by the just judgment of God, shall set themselves against them, and run upon them, saying, *We will not have these men to reign over us with their rich houses, and great possessions, and other worldly riches, over the which we are ordained to be lords and rulers; and how is it meet or comely, that those shavelings, with their stoles and chesils,† should have more soldiers or richer armour and artillery than we? Wherefore let us take away from them what they do not justly but wrongfully possess.*”

It is well the *Index Expurgatorius* was not up in those days, nor the Inquisition on foot; otherwise, dame Hildegardis must have been called to an after-account. I will only ask a Romanist this question: This prophecy of Hildegardis,—was it from heaven or from men? If from heaven, why did ye not believe it? If from men, why did the Pope allow it, and canonize her?

As for miracles, which she wrought in her life-time, their number is as admirable as their nature. I must confess, at my first reading of them,‡ my belief digested some, but surfeited on

\* See much more to this purpose in *Catalog. Testium Veritatis in Hildegarde*: also in Fox’s “Acts and Monuments,” p. 461. † *Chesil* is an abbreviation of *Chesible*, the form in which the word is found in our old writers. Holyoake quotes the following passage from Baldus, in explanation of the term:—*Vestis religiosorum, vulgo planeta presbyteri, quia, instar parvæ casæ, totum hominem tegit*: “One of the vestments of the religious, commonly called *the planet* of a priest; because, being in size almost equal to a small cottage, it completely covers the whole of his person.”—EDIT. ‡ In LIPPOMAN, in *Vitis Sanct.*, tom. v. fol. 91. *et seq.*

the rest: for she made no more to cast out a devil, than a barber to draw a tooth, and with less pain to the patient. I never heard of a great feast made all of cordials: and it seems improbable, that miracles (which in Scripture are used sparingly, and chiefly for conversion of unbelievers) should be heaped so many together, made every-day's work, and by her commonly, constantly, and ordinarily wrought. And, I pray, why is the Popish church so barren of true works, now-a-days, here wrought at home amongst us? For, as for those reported to be done far off, it were ill for some if the gold from the Indies would abide the touch no better than the miracles.

However, Hildegardis was a gracious virgin, and God might perform some great wonders by her hand; but these *piæ fraudes* with their painting have spoiled the natural complexion of many a good face, and have made truth itself suspected. She died in the eighty-second year of her age, was afterwards sainted by the Pope, and the seventeenth day of September assigned to her memory.

I cannot forget how Udalric, abbot of Kempten, in Germany, made a most courteous law for the weaker sex: "That no woman, guilty of what crime soever, should ever be put to death in his dominions;" because two women, condemned to die, were miraculously delivered out of the prison, by praying to St. Hildegardis.\*

\* BRUSCHIUS, *De Monasteriis; et CENTURIATORES*, Centur. xi. col. 350.

## CHAPTER XIV.

## THE ELDER BROTHER.

THE elder brother is one who made haste to come into the world, to bring his parents the first news of male-posterity ; and is well rewarded for his tidings. His composition is then accounted most precious when made of the loss of a double virginity.

## MAXIM I.

*He is thankful for the advantage God gave him at the starting in the race into this world.*—When twins have been even matched, one hath gained the goal but by his length. St. Augustine saith, that “ it is every man’s bounden duty solemnly to celebrate his birth-day.” \* If so, elder brothers may best afford good cheer on the festival.

## II.

*He counts not his inheritance a writ of ease to free him from industry.*—As if only the younger brothers came into the world to work, the elder to compliment: these are the tops of their houses, indeed ; like cotlofts,† highest and emptiest. Rather, he laboureth to furnish himself with all genteel accomplishment, being best able to go to the cost of learning. He need not fear to be served as Ulric Fuggar was, (chief of the noble family of the Fuggars in Augsburgh,) who was disinherited of a great patrimony, only for his studiousness, and expensiveness in buying of costly manuscripts.‡

\* *Quæstionibus ex utroque mixtum*, tom. xl. col. 8, 4. Thus the reference stands in all the editions of “the Holy State,” original and modern, which I have examined. But as I knew that scarcely any impression of St. Augustine’s Works extends beyond ten tomes or volumes, I was desirous to verify the quotation, and to give a correct reference. After a long search, I have discovered the passage in *Quæstiones ex utroque mixtum*, quæst. 127; which, in my edition, (Colon Agripp. 1616,) forms part of the Appendix to tome iv. p. 58. The following is the connexion in which it is found :—*Nam si ENCÆNIA celebrabantur Hierosolymis, id est, dedicationis templi Dei agebatur festivitas; quanto magis ipsius hominis celebrandus natalis est, qui magis templum Dei est, cuius etiam, ad agendum Deo gratias, manibus templum est fabricatum. Itaque qui Deo instituente natum se novit, ut ei gratias agat, cognitum habens mysterium ejus, debet in natali suo gaudere, videns profectum esse nativitatis sua.*—EDIT.      † According to modern usage, commonly written “cocklofts.”—EDIT.      ‡ *THUANUS, De Obit. Vir. Doct. in anno 1584.*

## III.

*He doth not so remember he is an heir, that he forgets he is a son.*—Wherefore, his carriage to his parents is always respectful. It may chance that his father may be kept in a charitable prison, whereof his son hath the keys; the old man being only tenant for life, and the lands entailed on our young gentleman. In such a case, when it is in his power, if necessity requires, he enlargeth his father to such a reasonable proportion of liberty as may not be injurious to himself.

## IV.

*He rather desires his father's life than his living.*—This was one of the principal reasons (but God knows how true!) why Philip II., king of Spain, caused, in the year 1568, Charles, his eldest son, to be executed, for plotting his father's death, as was pretended. And a wit in such difficult toys,\* accommodated the numeral letters in Ovid's verse to the year wherein the prince suffered.

1568.

*FILIVs ante DlEM patrIos InqVlrlt In annos.*

1568.

“Before the tIME, the oVer-hasty son  
Seeks forth hoVV near the father's Llfe Is Done.”

But if they had no better evidence against him but this poetical synchronism, we might well count him a martyr.

## V.

*His father's deeds and grants he ratifies and confirms.*—If a stitch be fallen in a lease, he will not widen it into a hole by cavilling, till the whole strength of the grant run out thereat; or take advantage of the default of the clerk in the writing, where the deed appears really done, and on a valuable consideration: he counts himself bound in honour to perform what, by marks and signs, he plainly understands his father meant, though he speake it not out.

## VI.

*He reflecteth his lustre, to grace and credit his younger brethren.*—Thus Scipio Africanus, after his great victories against the Carthaginians, and conquering of Hannibal, was content to serve as a lieutenant in the wars of Asia, under Lucius Scipio, his younger brother.†

\* OPMERUS was the author thereof. FAMIANUS STRADA, *De Bello Belgico*, lib. vii, p. 432.      † PLUTARCH, in the “Life of Scipio.”

## VII.

*He relieveth his distressed kindred, yet so as he continues them in their calling.*—Otherwise, they would all make his house their hospital, his kindred their calling. When one, being a husbandman, challenged kindred of Robert Groshead, bishop of Lincoln, and thereupon requested favour of him to bestow an office on him; “Cousin,” quoth the bishop, “if your cart be broken, I will mend it; if your plough [be] old, I will give you a new one, and seed to sow your land. But a husbandman I found you, and a husbandman I will leave you.” It is better to ease poor kindred in their profession than to ease them from their profession.

## VIII.

*He is careful to support the credit and dignity of his family.*—Neither wasting his paternal estate by his unthriftiness, nor marring it by parcelling his ancient manors and demesnes amongst his younger children, whom he provides for by annuities, pensions, moneys, leases, and purchased lands. He remembers how, when our king Alfred divided the river of Lea (which parts Hertfordshire and Essex) into three streams, it became so shallow that boats could not row, where formerly ships did ride. Thus the ancient family of the Woodfords (which had long continued in Leicestershire, and elsewhere in England, in great account, estate, and livelihood) is at this day quite extinct. For when Sir Thomas Woodford, in the reign of king Henry VI., made almost an even partition of his means betwixt his five grandchildren, the house in short space utterly decayed; not any part of his lands now in the tenure or name of any of his male line, some whereof lived to be brought to a low ebb of fortune.\* Yet, on the other side, to leave all to the eldest, and make no provision for the rest of their children, is against all rules of religion, forgetting their Christian-name to remember their sir-name.

\* BURTON, in his “Description of Leicestershire,” p. 264.

## CHAPTER XV.

## THE YOUNGER BROTHER.

SOME account him the better gentleman of the two, because son to the more ancient gentleman; wherein his elder brother can give him the hearing, and a smile into the bargain. He shares equally with his elder brother in the education, but differs from him in his portion; and though he giveth also his father's arms, yet, to use the herald's language, he may say,—

“This to my elder brother I must yield;  
I have the CHARGE, but he hath all the FIELD.”

Like, herein, to a young nephew of Tarquin's, in Rome, who was called Egereus, from “wanting of maintenance,” because his grandfather left him nothing.\* It was, therefore, a manly answer which a young gentleman gave to king James, when he asked him what kin he was to such a lord of his name: “Please your majesty,” said he, “my elder brother is his cousin-german.”

## MAXIM I.

*He repines not at the providence of God in ordering his birth.*  
—Heirs are made, even where matches are, both in heaven. Even in twins, God will have one next the door to come first into the world.

## II.

*He labours, by his endeavours, to date himself an elder brother.*  
—Nature makes but one, industry doth make all the sons of the same man heirs. The fourth brother gives a martlet † for the difference of his arms; a bird observed to build either in castles, steeples, or ships; showing that the bearer hereof, being debarred from all hopes of his father's inheritance, must seek, by war, learning, or merchandise, to advance his estate.‡

\* LIVIUS, lib. i.      † “*Martlet*, a swift little martin, a bird. In Heraldry, a pigeon, with its feet erased or torn off; it is also the mark of distinction in an escutcheon, for a fourth brother or family.”—PHILLIPS AND KERSEY. In the text Fuller evidently alludes to the martinet, a bird of the *swallow* tribe, and not to a *pigeon*.—EDIT.      ‡ GERARD LEIGH, in his “Nine Differences of Brothers' Arms.”

## III.

*In war he cuts out his fortunes with his own sword.*—William the Conqueror, when he first landed his forces in England, burnt all his ships, that despair to return might make his men the more valiant. Younger brothers, being cut off at home from all hopes, are more zealous to purchase an honourable support abroad. Their small arteries, with great spirits, have wrought miracles; and their resolution hath driven success before it. Many of them have adventured to cheapen dear enterprises, and were only able to pay the earnest; yet fortune hath accepted them for chapmen, and hath freely forgiven them the rest of the payment for their boldness.

## IV.

*Nor are they less happy, if applying themselves to their book.*—Nature generally giving them good wits; which, because they want room to burnish, may the better afford to soar high.

## V.

*But he gaineth more wealth, if betaking himself to merchandise.*—Whence often he riseth to the greatest annual honour in the kingdom. Many families in England, though not first raised from the city, yet thence have been so restored and enriched, that it may seem to amount to an original raising. Neither doth an apprenticeship extinguish native—nor disenable to acquisitive—gentry; and they are much mistaken who hold it to be in the nature of bondage. For, first, his indenture is a civil contract, whereof a bondman is incapable. Secondly, no work can be base [which is] prescribed in reference to a noble end; as theirs is, that learn an honest mystery to enable them for the service of God and the country. Thirdly, they give round sums of money to be bound. Now, if apprenticeship be a servitude, it is either a pleasing bondage, or strange madness, to purchase it at so dear a rate. Gentry therefore may be suspended perchance, and asleep during the apprenticeship; but it awakens afterwards.

## VI.

*Sometimes he raiseth his estate by applying himself to the court.*—A pasture wherein elder brothers are observed to grow lean; and younger brothers fat. The reasons whereof may be these:—

1. Younger brothers, being but slender in estate, are easier bowed to a court-compliance than elder brothers, who stand

more stiff on their means, and think scorn to crave what may be a prince's pleasure to grant, and their profit to receive.

2. They make the court their calling, and study the mystery thereof; whilst elder brothers, divided betwixt the court and the country, can have their endeavours deep in neither, which run in a double channel.

3. Elder brothers spend highly in proportion to their estates, expecting afterwards a return with increase; which, notwithstanding, never pays the principal: and whilst they thus build so stately a staircase to their preferment, the younger brothers get up by the back-stairs in a private, silent way; little expense being expected from them that have little.

## VII.

*Sometimes he lighteth on a wealthy match to advance him.*—If meeting with one that is pilot of her own affections, to steer them without guidance of her friends, and such as disdaineth her marriage should be contracted in an exchange, where jointure must weigh every grain even to the portion. Rather, she counts it an act both of love and charity to affect one rich in deserts, who commonly hath the advantage of birth, as she hath of means; and so it is made level betwixt them. And thus many a young gentleman hath gotten honourable maintenance by an heiress, especially when the crying of the child hath caused the laughing of the father.

## VIII.

*His means, the more hardly gotten, are the more carefully kept.*—Heat, gotten by degrees, with motion and exercise, is more natural, and stays longer by one, than what is gotten all at once by coming to the fire. Goods acquired by industry, prove commonly more lasting than lands by descent.

## IX.

*He ever owneth his elder brother with dutiful respect.*—Yea, though God should so bless his endeavours as to go beyond him in wealth and honour. The pride of Jesuits is generally taxed, who, being the youngest of all other Orders, and therefore by canon to go last, will never go in procession with other Orders, because they will not come behind them.\*

\* *Vide Preface to "The Jesuits' Catechism."*

## X.

*Sometimes the paternal inheritance falls to them who never hoped to rise to it.*—Thus John, surnamed *Sans-terre*, or, “Without-land,” having five elder brothers, came to the kingdom of England; death levelling those who stood betwixt him and his crown. It is observed of the Coringtons, an ancient family in Cornwall, that, for eight lineal descents, never any one that was born heir had the land, but it ever fell to younger brothers.\*

To conclude: there is a hill in Voitland,† (a small country in Germany,) called Feitctelberg, out of which arise four rivers, running four several ways; namely, 1. Eger, east; 2. Mænus, west; 3. Sala, north; and, 4. Nabus, south: so that he that sees their fountains so near together, would admire at their falls so far asunder. Thus, the younger sons, issuing out of the same mother’s womb and father’s loins, and afterwards embracing different courses, to try their fortunes abroad in the world, chance often to die far off, at great distance, who were all born in the same place.

\* CAREW’S “Survey of Cornwall,” fol. 117.

† “I rather think, that this name was given it by the Slaves; who, finding it deserted, or but thinly peopled, at their coming thither, might call it by the name of VOID-LAND; from which the alteration unto *Voitland* is both plain and obvious.”—HEYLIN.

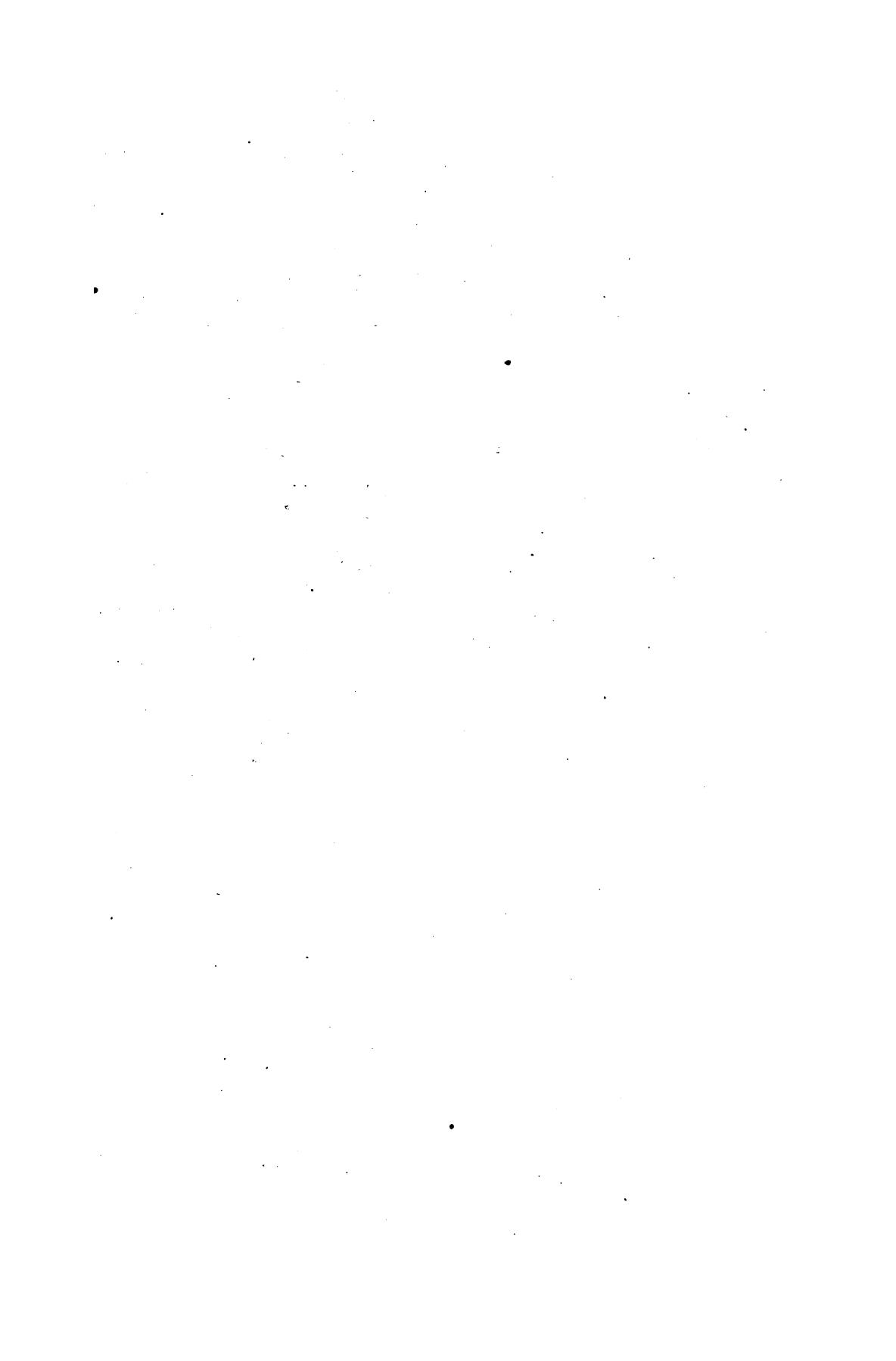


**THE HOLY STATE.**

**BOOK II.**

**CONTAINING**

**ESSAYS AND CHARACTERS.**



# THE HOLY STATE.

---

## THE SECOND BOOK.

---

### CHAPTER I.

#### THE GOOD ADVOCATE.\*

He is one that will not plead that cause wherein his tongue must be confuted by his conscience. It is the praise of the Spanish soldier, that—whilst all other nations are mercenary, and for money will serve on any side—he will never fight against his own king ; nor will our advocate, against the sovereign truth plainly appearing to his conscience.

##### MAXIM I.

*He not only hears, but examines, his client; and pincheth the cause, where he fears it is foundered.*—For many clients, in telling their case, rather plead than relate it ; so that the advocate hears not the true state of it, till opened by the adverse party. Surely, the lawyer that fills himself with instructions, will travel longest in the cause without tiring. Others, that are so quick in searching, seldom search to the quick ; and those miraculous apprehensions who understand more than all, before the client hath told half, run without their errand, and will return without their answer.

##### II.

*If the matter be doubtful, he will only warrant his own diligence.*—Yet some keep an assurance-office in their chamber, and will warrant any cause brought unto them ; as knowing that, if they fail, they lose nothing but—what long since was lost—their credit.

\* We take it promiscuously for civil or common lawyer.

## III.

*He makes not a Trojan siege of a suit, but seeks to bring it to a set battle in a speedy trial.*—Yet sometimes suits are continued by their difficulty, the potency and stomach of the parties, without any default in the lawyer. Thus have there depended suits in Gloucestershire, betwixt the heirs of the lord Berkeley, and sir Thomas Talbot, viscount Lisle, ever since the reign of king Edward IV., until now lately they were finally compounded.\*

## IV.

*He is faithful to that side that first retains him.*—Not like Demosthenes, who secretly wrote one oration for Phormio, and another in the same matter for Apollodorus his adversary.†

## V.

*In pleading, he shoots fairly at the head of the cause; and, having fastened, no frowns nor favours shall make him let go his hold.*—Not snatching aside here and there to no purpose, speaking little in much, as it was said of Anaximenes, that “he had a flood of words, and a drop of reason.” His boldness riseth or falleth, as he apprehends the goodness or badness of his cause.

## VI.

*He joys not to be retained in such a suit where all the right in question is but a drop, blown up with malice to be a bubble.*—Wherefore, in such trivial matters, he persuades his client to sound a retreat, and make a composition.

## VII.

*When his name is up, his industry is not down; thinking to plead, not by his study, but his credit.*—Commonly, physicians, like beer, are best when they are old; and lawyers, like bread, when they are young and new. But our advocate grows not lazy. And if a leading case be out of the road of his practice, he will take pains to trace it through his books, and prick the footsteps thereof wheresoever he finds it.

## VIII.

*He is more careful to deserve, than greedy to take, fees.*—He accounts the very pleading of a poor widow’s honest cause sufficient fees; as conceiving himself, then, the King of

\* CAMDEN’s “Britannia,” in Gloucestershire.  
† DEMOSTHENES.

PLUTARCH, in Vita

Heaven's advocate, bound *ex officio* to prosecute it. And although some may say, that such a lawyer may even go live in Cornwall, where it is observed that few of that profession hitherto have grown to any livelihood,\* yet shall he (besides those two felicities of common-lawyers, that they seldom die either without heirs or making a will †) find God's blessing on his provisions and posterity.

We will respite him a while, till he comes to be a judge; and then we will give an example of both together.

---

## CHAPTER II.

### THE GOOD PHYSICIAN.

#### MAXIM I.

*He trusteth not the single witness of the water, if better testimony may be had.*—For, reasons drawn from the urine alone are as brittle as the urinal. Sometimes the water runneth in such post-haste through the sick man's body, it can give no account of any thing memorable in the passage, though the most judicious eye examine it. Yea, the sick man may be in the state of death, and yet life appear in his stale.‡

#### II.

*Coming to his patient, he persuades him to put his trust in God, the Fountain of health.*—The neglect hereof hath caused the bad success of the best physicians: for, God will manifest, that, though skill come *mediately* from Him to be gotten by man's pains, success comes from Him *immediately* to be disposed at his pleasure.

#### III.

*He handsels not his new experiments on the bodies of his patients.*—Letting loose mad receipts into the sick man's body, to try how well nature in him will fight against them, whilst

\* CAREW, "Survey of Cornwall," fol. 60.      † COKE, in his Preface to LITTLETON's "Tenures."      ‡ The old Saxon name, still in common use, for "urine."—EDIT.

himself stands by and sees the battle ; except it be in desperate cases, when death must be expelled by death.

## IV.

*To poor people he prescribes cheap but wholesome medicines.—* Not removing the consumption out of their bodies into their purses ; nor sending them to the East Indies for drugs, when they can reach better out of their gardens.

## V.

*Lest his apothecary should oversee, he oversees his apothecary.* —For, though many of that profession be both able and honest, yet some, out of ignorance or haste, may mistake : witness one of Blois, who, being to serve a doctor's bill, instead of *optimi*, (short written,) read *opii*, and had sent the patient asleep to his grave, if the doctor's watchfulness had not prevented him.\* Worse are those who make wilful errors, giving one thing for another. A prodigal, who had spent his estate, was pleased to jeer himself, boasting that he had cozened those who had bought his means. "They gave me," said he, "good *new* money, and I sold them my great-great-grandfather's *old* land." But this cozenage is too, too true in many apothecaries, selling to sick folk for *new* money *antiquated* drugs, and making dying men's physic of dead ingredients.

## VI.

*He brings not news, with a false spy, that the coast is clear, till death surprises the sick man.* —I know, physicians love to make the best of their patient's estate. First, it is improper that *adjutores vitæ* should be *nuncii mortis*. Secondly, none, with their good-will, will tell bad news. Thirdly, their fee may be the worse for it. Fourthly, it is a confessing that their art is conquered. Fifthly, it will poison their patient's heart with grief, and make it break before the time. However, they may so order it, that the party may be informed of his dangerous condition, that he be not ousted out of this world before he be provided for another.

## VII.

*When he can keep life no longer in, he makes a fair and easy passage for it to go out.* —He giveth his attendance for the

\* STEPHEN'S "Apology for Herodotus," lib. i. cap. 16.

facilitating and assuaging of the pains and agonies of death. Yet, generally, it is death to a physician to be with a dying man.

## VIII.

*Unworthy pretenders to physic are rather foils than stains to the profession.*—Such a one was that counterfeit who called himself “the Baron of Blackamore,” and feigned he was sent from the emperor to our young king Henry VI., to be his principal physician. But, his forgery being discovered, he was apprehended, and executed in the Tower of London, *anno* 1426: \* and such the world daily swarms with. Well did the poets feign *Æsculapius* and *Circe* brother and sister, and both children of the sun: for, in all times, (in the opinion of the multitude,) witches, old women, and impostors have had a competition with physicians. And commonly the most ignorant are the most confident in their undertakings, and will not stick to tell you what disease the gall of a dove is good to cure. He took himself to be no mean doctor, who, being guilty of no Greek, and being demanded why it was called a *hectic* fever; “Because,” saith he, “of an *hecking* cough which ever attendeth that disease.” And here it will not be amiss to describe the Life of the famous quack-salver, *PARACELSUS*, both because it is not ordinarily to be met with, and that men may see what a monster many make “a miracle of learning,” and propound him their pattern in their practice.

\* STOW's “Survey of London,” p. 55.

27 JAN

READER'S SURNAME

S. Wilson

(No. of SEAT)

E 11

## CHAPTER III.

## THE LIFE OF PARACELSIUS.

PHILIP THEOPHRASTUS BOMBASTUS of HOENHAIM, or PARACELSIUS, born, as he saith himself, in the Wilderness of Helvetia, anno 1493, of the noble and ancient family of the Hoenhaims. But Thomas Erastus, making strict inquiry after his pedigree, found none of his name or kindred in that place. Yet it is fit so great a chemist should make himself to be of noble extraction: and let us believe him to be of *high* descent, as, perchance, born on some mountain in Switzerland.

As for his education, he himself boasts that he lived in most Universities of Europe;\* surely, rather as a traveller than a student, and a vagrant than a traveller. Yea, some will not allow him so much; and one, who hath exactly measured the length of his life, though crowding his pretended travels very close, finds not room enough for them.† But it is too ridiculous what a scholar of his relates,—that he lived ten years in Arabia to get learning, and conversed in Greece with the Athenian philosophers.‡ Whereas, in that age, Arabia the Happy was accursed with barbarism, and Athens grown a stranger to herself; both which places being then subjected to the Turks, the very ruins of all learning were ruined there. Thus we see how he better knew *to act his part*, than *to lay his scene*, and had not chronology enough to tell the clock of time, when and where to place his lies to make them like truth.

The first five-and-twenty years of his age, he lived very civilly. Being thirty years old, he came to Basil, just at the alteration of religion, when many Papists were expelled the University, and places rather wanted Professors, than Professors places. Here, by the favour of Ecolampadius, he was admitted to read physic; and for two years behaved himself fairly, till this accident caused his departure:—A rich canon of Basil, being sick, promised Paracelsus an hundred florins to recover him; which, being restored to his health, he denied to pay. Paracelsus sues him, is cast in his suit; the magistrate adjudging him only an ordinary fee, because the cure was done presently with a few

\* *In prefatione Chirurgiae Magnæ.*  
Consensu, cap. iv. p. 35.

† SENNERTUS, *De Chymicorum*  
‡ BICKERUS, *in Hermete Redivivo.*

pills. The physician, enraged hereat, talked treason against the State in all his discourses, till the nimbleness of his tongue forced the nimbleness of his feet, and he was fain to fly into Alsatia. Here, keeping company with the gentry of the country, he gave himself over to all licentiousness. His body was the sea wherein the tide of drunkenness was ever ebbing and flowing ; for, by putting his finger in his throat, he used to spew out his drink and drunkenness together, and from that instant date himself sober, to return to his cups again. Every month he had a new suit, not for pride but necessity ; his apparel serving both for wearing and bedding ; and, having given his clothes many vomits, he gave them to the poor. Being Codrus overnight, he would be Croesus in the morning, flush of money as if he carried the invisible Indies in his pocket. Some suspected the devil was his purse-bearer, and that he carried a spirit in the pommel of his sword, his constant companion ; whilst others maintain, that, by the heat of the furnace, he could ripen any metal into gold.\*

All the diet he prescribed his patients was this,—to eat what, and how often, they thought fitting themselves ; and yet he did most strange cures. Like the quicksilver he so much dealt with, he would never be fixed in one place, or live any where longer than a twelve-month ; for, some observe, that by that time the maladies reverted again, which he formerly cured. He gave so strong physic as summoned nature, with all her force, to expel the present disease ; but the remnant dregs thereof, afterwards re-inforcing themselves, did assault nature, tired out with the violence of her former task, and easily subdued it.

His scholars brag, that the fragments of his learning would feast all the philosophers in the world ; boasting that the gout, the disgrace of physic, was the honour of Paracelsus, who, by curing it, removed that scandal from his profession. Whereas others say, he had little learning, and less Latin. When any asked him the name of a herb he knew not, he would tell them there was no use thereof in physic ; † and yet this man would undertake not only to cure men, but to cure the art of curing men, and reform physic itself.

As for religion, it would as well pose himself as others to tell what it was. He boasted, that shortly he would order Luther and the Pope, as well as he had done Galen and Hippocrates. He was never seen to pray, and seldom came to church. He

\* BEROLDUS, in *Consideratione Vitæ et Mortis*, p. 76, ex *Andrä Jocisio*.

† BEROLDUS, ut prius, p. 77.

was not only skilled in natural magic, (the utmost bounds whereof border on the suburbs of hell,) but is charged to converse constantly with familiars. Guilty he was of all vices but wantonness ; and I find an honest man his compurgator, that he was not given to women.\* Perchance he drank himself into wantonness, and passed it ; quenching the fire of his lust, by piling fuel too hard and fast upon it.

Boasting that he could make a man immortal, he himself died, at forty-seven years, in the city of Saltzburg. His scholars say, he was poisoned, through the envy (that dark shadow ever waiting on a shining merit !) and malice of his adversaries. However, his body should have been so fenced with antidotes, that the battery of no poison might make a breach therein ; except we impute it more to his neglect than want of skill, and that rather his own security, than his enemies' malice, brought him to his grave. But, it may be, he was willing to die, counting a twelve-months, time enough to stay in one place ; and forty-seven years, long enough to live in one world. We may more admire, that so beastly a drunkard lived so long, than that so skilful a man died so soon. In a word : he boasted of more than he could do, did more cures seemingly than really, more cures really than lawfully ; of more parts than learning, of more fame than parts ; a better physician than a man, a better surgeon than physician.†

\* OPOINUS, in *Epist. de Paracelso.*      + In the " Literary Remains " of the late highly-gifted SAMUEL TAYLOR COLEBRIDGE, Esq., will be found the subjoined laudatory remarks, which he had written upon this article in his folio copy of FULLER's " Holy State :"—" It is matter of regret with me, that Fuller—whose wit, alike in quantity, quality, and perpetuity, surpassing that of the wittiest in a witty age, robbed him of the praise not less due to him for an equal superiority in sound, shrewd, good sense, and freedom of intellect—had not looked through the two Latin folios of Paracelsus's Works. It is not to be doubted, that a rich and delightful article would have been the result. For who, like Fuller, could have brought out and set forth this singular compound of true philosophic genius with the morals of a quack, and the manners of a king of the gypsies ? "—EDIT.

## CHAPTER IV.

## THE CONTROVERSIAL DIVINE.

He is truth's champion to defend her against all adversaries,—atheists, heretics, schismatics, and erroneous persons whatsoever. His sufficiency appears in opposing, answering, moderating, and writing.

## MAXIM I.

*He engageth both his judgment and affections in opposing of falsehood.*—Not like country fencers, who play only to make sport; but, like duellers indeed, as if for life and limb. Chiefly if the question be of large prospect and great concernings, he is zealous in the quarrel. Yet some, though their judgment weigh down on one side, the beam of their affections stands so even they care not which part prevails.

## II.

*In opposing a truth, he dissembles himself her foe, to be her better friend.*—Wherefore he counts himself the greatest conqueror when truth hath taken him captive. With Joseph, having sufficiently sifted the matter in a disguise, he discovereth himself: “I am Joseph, your brother,” (Gen. xlvi. 4,) and then throws away his vizard. Dishonest they, who, though the debt be satisfied, will never give up the bond, but continue wrangling when the objection is answered.

## III.

*He abstains from all foul and railing language.*—What! make the Muses, yea, the Graces, scolds? Such purulent spittle argues exulcerated lungs. Why should there be so much railing about the body of Christ, when there was none about the body of Moses in the Act kept betwixt the devil and Michael the archangel?

## IV.

*He tyranniseth not over a weak and undermatched adversary.*—But seeks rather to cover his weakness, if he be a modest man. When a Professor pressed an answerer (a better Christian than a clerk) with an hard argument, *Reverende Professor*, said he,

*ingenuè confiteor me non posse respondere huic argumento.* To whom the Professor, *Rectè respondes.*\*

## V.

*In answering, he states the question, and expoundeth the terms thereof.*—Otherwise the disputants shall end, where they ought to have begun, in differences about words; and be barbarians each to other, speaking in a language neither understand. If the question also be of historical cognizance, he shows the pedigree thereof,—who first brewed it, who first broached it,—and sends the wandering error, with a passport, home to the place of its birth.

## VI.

*In taking away an objection, he not only puts by the thrust, but breaks the weapon.*—Some rather escape than defeat an argument; and though by such an evasion they may shut the mouth of the opponent, yet may they open the difficulty wider in the hearts of the hearers. But our answerer either fairly resolves the doubt; or else shows the falseness of the argument, by beggaring the opponent to maintain such a fruitful generation of absurdities, as his argument hath begotten; or, lastly, returns and retorts it back upon him again. The first way unties the knot, the second cuts it asunder, the third whips the opponent with the knot himself tied. Sure, it is more honour to be a clear answerer, than a cunning opposer; because the latter takes advantage of man's ignorance, which is ten times more than his knowledge.

## VII.

*What his answers want in suddenness, they have in solidity.*—Indeed, the speedy answer adds lustre to the disputation, and honour to the disputant; yet he makes good payment who, though he cannot presently throw the money out of his pocket, yet will pay it, if but going home to unlock his chest. Some that are not for *speedy*, may be for *sounder*, performance. When Melancthon, at the disputation of Ratisbon, was pressed with a shrewd argument by Eccius, “I will answer thee,” said he, “to-morrow.” “Nay,” said Eccius, “do it now, or it is nothing worth.” “Yea,” said Melancthon, “I seek the truth, and not mine own credit; and therefore it will be as good if I answer thee to-morrow by God’s assistance.”†

\* “Reverend Professor, I ingenuously confess, that I am unable to reply to your argument.” The Professor said, “Yours is a correct answer.”—EDIT.  
† MELCHIOR ADAMUS, in *Vitis Germanorum Theologorum*, p. 339.

## VIII.

*In moderating, he sides with the answerer, if the answerer sides with the truth.*—But if he be conceited, and opinioned of his own sufficiency, he lets him swoon before he gives him any hot water. If a paradox-monger, loving to hold strange, yea, dangerous, opinions, he counts it charity to suffer such a one to be beaten without mercy, that he may be weaned from his wilfulness. For the main, he is so a staff to the answerer, that he makes him stand on his own legs.

## IX.

*In writing, his Latin is pure, so far as the subject will allow.*—For, those who are to climb the Alps, are not to expect a smooth and even way. True it is, that schoolmen, perceiving that fallacy had too much covert under the nap of flourishing language, used threadbare Latin on purpose, and cared not to trespass on grammar, and tread down the fences thereof, to avoid the circuit of words, and to go the nearest way to express their conceits. But our divine, though he useth barbarous school-terms, which, like standards, are fixed to the controversy, yet, in his movable Latin passages and digressions, his style is pure and elegant.

## X.

*He affects clearness and plainness in all his writings.*—Some men's heads are like the world before God said unto it, *Fiat lux!* These dark-lanterns may shine to themselves, and understand their own conceits, but nobody else can have light from them. Thus Matthias Farinator, Professor at Vienna, assisted with some other learned men, as the times then went, was thirty years [in] making a book of applying Plato's, Aristotle's, and Galen's rules in philosophy, to Christ and his prophets; and it is called \* *Lumen Animæ; quo tamen nihil est caliginosius, labore magno, sed ridiculo et inani.*† But this obscurity is worst when affected; when they do as Persius, of whom one ‡ saith, *Legi voluit quæ scripsit, intelligi noluit quæ legerentur.*§ Some affect this darkness, that they may be accounted profound; whereas one is not bound to believe, that all the water is deep that is muddy.

\* MERCATOR'S "Atlas," in the Description of Austria. † "Though its title is *The Light of the Soul*, yet, unfortunately, nothing can be darker than this immense undertaking, which is at once ridiculous and useless."—EDIT.  
 ‡ SCALIGER, *De Arte Poetica*, lib. vi. cap. 6. § "He was ambitious of obtaining readers for his productions; but seemed to feel no wish, that those who read them should understand their meaning."—EDIT.

## XI.

*He is not curious in searching matters of no moment.*—Captain Martin Forbisher fetched from the farthest northern countries a ship's lading of mineral stones, (as he thought,) which afterwards were cast out to mend the highways.\* Thus are they served, and miss their hopes, who, long seeking to extract hidden mysteries out of nice questions, leave them off as useless at last. Antoninus Pius, for his desire to search to the least differences, was called *cumini sector*, “the carver of cumin seed.” One need not be so accurate; for as soon shall one scour the spots out of the moon, as all ignorance out of man. When Eunomius the heretic vaunted, that he knew God and his Divinity, St. Basil gravels him in twenty-one questions about the body of an ant or pismire: † so dark is man's understanding! I wonder, therefore, at the boldness of some, who, as if they were lord-marshals of the angels, place them in ranks and files. Let us not believe them here, but rather go to heaven to confute them.

## XII.

*He neither multiplies needless, nor compounds necessary, controversies.*—Sure, they light on a labour in vain, who seek to make a bridge of reconciliation over the *μέγα χάσμα* ‡ betwixt Papists and Protestants; for though we go ninety-nine steps, they (I mean their church) will not come one to give us a meeting. And as for the offers of Clara and private men, (besides that they seem to be more of the nature of baits than gifts,) they may make large proffers, without any commission to treat, and so the Romish church not bound to pay their promises. In Merionethshire, in Wales, there are high mountains, whose hanging tops come so close together that shepherds on the tops of several hills may audibly talk together, yet will it be a day's journey for their bodies to meet; so vast is the hollowness of the valleys betwixt them! § Thus, upon sound search, shall we find a grand distance and remoteness betwixt Popish and Protestant tenets, to reconcile them, which, at the first view, may seem near, and tending to an accommodation.

## XIII.

*He is resolute and stable in fundamental points of religion.*—These are his fixed poles and axle-tree, about which he moves,

\* CAMDEN's “Elizabeth,” anno 1576.

† EPISTOLA 168, *qua est ad Eunomium.*

‡ “The immense chasm.”—EDIT.

§ GIRAUDUS CAMBRENSIS, in Description of Wales.

whilst they stand unmoveable. Some sail so long on the sea of controversies, tossed up and down, to and fro, *pro* and *con*, that the very ground to them seems to move, and their judgments grow sceptical and unstable in the most settled points of divinity. When he cometh to preach, especially if to a plain auditory, with the Paracelsians, he extracts an oil out of the driest and hardest bodies ; and, knowing that knotty timber is unfit to build with, he edifies people with easy and profitable matter.

---

## CHAPTER V.

### THE LIFE OF DR. WHITAKER.

WILLIAM WHITAKER, born at Holm, in the county of Lancaster, of good parentage, especially by his mother's side, [was] allied to two worshipful families. His reverend uncle, Alexander Nowell, dean of St. Paul's, (the first-fruits of the English Confessors in the days of queen Mary, who, after her death, first returned into England from beyond the seas,) took him young from his parents, sent him first to Paul's school, thence to Trinity College in Cambridge ; where he so profited in his studies, that he gave great promises of his future perfection.

I pass by his youthful exercises ; never striving for the garland but he won and wore it away. His prime appearing to the world was when he stood for the Professor's place against two competitors, in age far his superiors. But the seven electors in the University who were to choose the emperor of the schools, preferring a golden head before silver hairs, conferred the place on Whitaker ; and the strict form of their election hath no room for corruption. He so well acquitted himself in the place, that he answered expectation,—the strongest opponent in all disputes and lectures ; and, by degrees, taught envy to admire him.

By this time the Papists began to assault him and the truth. First, Campian, one fitter for a trumpeter than a soldier ; whose best ability was, that he could boast in good Latin, being excellent at the flat hand of rhetoric, which rather gives pats than blows ; but he could not bend his fist to dispute. Whitaker,

both in writing and disputing, did teach him, that it was easier to make than maintain a challenge against our church ; and in like manner he handled both Duræus and Sanders, who successively undertook the same cause, solidly confuting their arguments.

But these teasers, rather to rouse than pinch the game, only made Whitaker find his spirits. The fiercest dog is behind ; even Bellarmine himself, a great scholar, and who wanted nothing but a good cause to defend, and generally writing ingenuously, using sometimes slanting—seldom down-right—railing. Whitaker gave him all fair quarter, stating the question betwixt them, yielding all which the other in reason could ask, and, agreeing on terms to fall out with him, played fairly but fiercely on him, till the other forsook the field.

Bellarmino had no mind to re-inforce his routed arguments, but rather consigned over that service to a new general,—Stapleton, an Englishman. He was born the same year and month wherein sir Thomas More was beheaded ; \* an observation little less than mystical with the Papists, as if God had substituted him to grow up in the room of the other, for the support of the Catholic cause. If Whitaker, in answering him, put more gall than usual into his ink, Stapleton (whose mouth was as foul as his cause) first infected him with bitterness ; and none will blame a man for arming his hands with hard and rough gloves, who is to meddle with briers and brambles.

Thus they baited him constantly with fresh dogs. None that ran at him once, desired a second course at him : and, as one † observes, *Cum nullo hoste unquam conflixit, quem non fudit et fugavit.* ‡

He filled the chair with a graceful presence ; so that one needed not to do with him as Luther did with Melancthon when he first heard him read,—abstract the opinion and sight of his stature and person, lest the meanness thereof should cause an undervaluing of him ; § for our Whitaker's person carried with it an excellent port. His style was manly for the strength, maidenly for the modesty, and elegant for the phrase thereof ; showing his skill in spinning a fine thread out of coarse wool,—for such is controversial matter. He had, by his second wife, a modest woman, eight children ; it being true of him also,

\* PITZÆUS, *De illust. Angl. Scrip. stat.* 16, p. 796.  
in *Prefatione De Judice et Normâ Fidei.*

† DAVENANT,

he always discomfited his adversary, and compelled him to retreat."—  
EDIT. § *In Epistola ad Spalatinum.*

‡ "In every conflict into which

what is said of the famous lawyer, Andreas Tiraquillus,\* *Singulis annis singulos libros et liberos reipublicae dedit.*†

My father hath told me, that he [Dr. Whitaker] often wished that he might lose so much learning as he had gotten in after-supper studies, on condition he might gain so much strength as he had lost thereby. Indeed, his body was strongly built for the natural temper, and well repaired by his temperate diet and recreations; but, first, he foundered the foundation of this house by immoderate study, and at last the roof was set on fire by a hot disease.

The unhappy controversy was then started,—whether justifying faith may be lost. And this thorny question would not suffer our nightingale to sleep. He was sent for up by archbishop Whitgift to the Conference at Lambeth; after which, returning home, unseasonable riding, late studying, and night-watching, brought him to a burning fever, to which his body was naturally disposed, as appeared by the mastery of redness in his complexion. Thus lost he the health of his body, in maintaining *that the health of the soul could not be lost!* All agreed that he should be let blood; which might then easily have been done, but was deferred, by the fault of some about him, till it was too late. Thus, when God intends to cut a man's life off, his dearest friends, by dangerous involuntary mistakes, shall bring the knife. He died in the forty-seventh year of his age, *anno Domini 1595*; and in St. John's College (whereof he was Master) was solemnly interred, with the grief of the University and whole church of God.

\* *THUANUS, Obit. Doctorum Virorum, anno 1558.*

† “Every year he presented the commonwealth both with a book and with a child.”—*EDIT.*

## CHAPTER VI.

## THE TRUE CHURCH ANTIQUARY.

He is a traveller into former times, whence he hath learnt their language and fashions. If he meets with an old manuscript, which hath the mark worn out of its mouth, and hath lost the date, yet he can tell the age thereof either by the phrase or character.

## MAXIM I.

*He baits at middle antiquity, but lodges not till he comes at that which is ancient indeed.*—Some scour off the rust of old inscriptions into their own souls, cankering themselves with superstition, having read so often, *Orate pro animâ*,\* that at last they fall a-praying for the departed ; and they more lament the ruin of monasteries, than the decay and ruin of monks' lives, degenerating from their ancient piety and painfulness. Indeed, *a little skill* in antiquity inclines a man to Popery ; but *depth in that study* brings him about again to our religion.† A nobleman who had heard of the extreme age of one dwelling not far off, made a journey to visit him ; and finding an aged person sitting in the chimney-corner, addressed himself unto him with admiration of his age, till his mistake was rectified : for, “ O sir ! ” said the young-old man, “ I am not he whom you seek for, but his son ; my father is farther off in the field.” The same error is daily committed by the Romish church, adoring the reverend brow and grey hairs of some ancient ceremonies, perchance but of some seven or eight hundred years' standing in the church ; and [they] mistake these for their fathers, of far greater age in the primitive times.

\* “ Pray for his soul.”—EDIT.      † Who will be hardy enough to assert, that ALEXANDER POPE had never perused this passage ? especially when he recollects these celebrated lines in the “ *Essay on Criticism* : ”—

“ A little learning is a dangerous thing :  
Drink deep, or taste not the Pierian spring.  
There, shallow draughts intoxicate the brain,  
And drinking largely sobers us again.”—EDIT.

## II.

*He desires to imitate the ancient Fathers, as well in their piety, as in their postures.*—Not only conforming his hands and knees, but chiefly his heart, to their pattern. O the holiness of their living, and painfulness of their preaching ! How full were they of mortified thoughts and heavenly meditations ! Let us not make the ceremonial part of their lives only canonical, and the moral part thereof altogether apocryphal, imitating their devotion not in the fineness of the stuff, but only in the fashion of the making.

## III.

*He carefully marks the declination of the church from the primitive purity.*—Observing how, sometimes, humble devotion was contented to lie down, whilst proud superstition got on her back. Yea, not only Frederic the emperor, but many a godly Father some hundreds of years before, held the Pope's stirrup ; and, by their well-meaning simplicity, gave occasion to his future greatness. He takes notice how their rhetorical hyperboles were afterwards accounted the just measure of dogmatical truths ; how plain people took them at their word, in their funeral apostrophes to the dead ; how praying for the departed brought the fuel, under which after-ages kindled the fire of purgatory ; how one ceremony begat another, there being no bounds in will-worship, wherewith one may sooner be wearied than satisfied ; the inventors of new ceremonies endeavouring to supply in number what their conceits want in solidity ; how men's souls, being in the full speed and career of the historical use of pictures, could not stop short, but must lash out into superstitions ; how the Fathers, vailing their bonnets to Rome in civil courtesy, when making honourable mention thereof, are interpreted by modern Papists to have done it in adoration of the idol of the Pope's infallibility. All these things he ponders in his heart, observing both the times and places, when and where they happened.

## IV.

*He is not zealous for the introducing of old, useless ceremonies.*—The mischief is, some that are most violent to bring such in, are most negligent to preach the cautions in using them ; and simple people, like children in eating of fish, swallow bones and all, to their danger of choking. Besides, what is observed of horse-hairs, that, lying nine days in water, they turn to snakes ; so some ceremonies, though dead at first, in continuance of time

quicken, get stings, and may do much mischief, especially if in such an age wherein the meddlings of some have justly awaked the jealousy of all. When many Popish tricks are abroad in the country, if then men meet with a ceremony which is a stranger, especially if it can give but a bad account of itself, no wonder if the watch take it up, for one on suspicion.

## V.

*He is not peremptory, but conjectural, in doubtful matters.*—Not forcing others to his own opinion, but leaving them to their own liberty; not filling up all with his own conjectures, to leave no room for other men; nor tramples he on their credits, if in them he finds slips and mistakes. For here our souls have but one eye; (the apostle saith, “We know but in part;”) be not proud, if that chance to come athwart thy seeing side which meets with the blind side of another.

## VI.

*He thankfully acknowledgeth those by whom he hath profited.*—Base-natured they, who, when they have quenched their own thirst, stop up, at least muddy, the fountain. But our antiquary, if he be not the first founder of a commendable conceit, contents himself to be a benefactor to it in clearing and adorning it.

## VII.

*He affects not fanciful singularity in his behaviour.*—Nor cares to have a proper mark, in writing of words, to disguise some peculiar letter from the ordinary character. Others, for fear travellers should take no notice that skill in antiquity dwells in such an head, hang out an antique hat for the sign, or use some obsolete garb in their garments, gestures, or discourse.

## VIII.

*He doth not so adore the ancients as to despise the moderns.*—Grant them but dwarfs, yet stand they on giants’ shoulders, and may see the further. Sure, as stout champions of truth follow in the rear, as ever marched in the front. Besides, as one excellently observes, *Antiquitas sæculi juventus mundi*. “‘These times are the ancient times, when the world is ancient;’ and not those which we count ancient *ordine retrogrado*, ‘by a computation backwards from ourselves.’”\*

\* SIR FRANCIS BACON’s “Advancement of Learning,” p. 46.

## CHAPTER VII.

## THE GENERAL ARTIST.

I KNOW the general cavil against general learning is this : that *aliquis in omnibus est nullus in singulis*. “ He that sips of many arts, drinks of none.” However, we must know, that all learning, which is but one grand science, hath so homogeneous a body, that the parts thereof do, with a mutual service, relate to, and communicate strength and lustre each to other. Our artist, knowing language to be the key of learning, thus begins :—

## MAXIM I.

*His tongue, being but one by nature, he gets cloven by art and industry.*—Before the confusion of Babel, all the world was one continent in language ; since divided into several tongues, as several islands. Grammar is the ship by benefit whereof we pass from one to another, in the learned languages generally spoken in no country. His mother-tongue was like the dull music of a monochord, which, by study, he turns into the harmony of several instruments.

## II.

*He first gaineth skill in the Latin and Greek tongues.*—On the credit of the former alone, he may trade in discourse over all Christendom. But the Greek, though not so generally spoken, is known with no less profit, and more pleasure. The joints of her compounded words are so naturally oiled, that they run nimbly on the tongue ; which makes them, though long, never tedious, because significant. Besides, it is full and stately in sound : only it pities our artist to see the vowels therein racked in pronouncing them, hanging oftentimes one way by their native force, and haled another by their accents which countermand them.

## III.

*Hence he proceeds to the Hebrew, the mother-tongue of the world.*—More pains than quickness of wit is required to get it, and with daily exercise he continues it. Apostasy herein is usual, to fall totally from the language, by a little neglect. As

for the Arabic, and other oriental languages, he rather makes sallies and incursions into them than any solemn sitting before them.

## IV.

*Then he applies his study to logic and ethics.*—The latter makes a man's soul mannerly and wise; but as for logic, that is the armory of reason, furnished with all offensive and defensive weapons. There are syllogisms, long swords; enthymemes, short daggers; dilemmas, two-edged swords that cut on both sides; sorites, chain-shot: and, for the defensive, distinctions, which are shields; retortions, which are targets with a pike in the midst of them, both to defend and oppose. From hence he raiseth his studies to the knowledge of physics, the great hall of nature; and metaphysics, the closet thereof; and is careful not to wade therein so far, till, by subtle distinguishing of notions, he confounds himself.

## V.

*He is skilful in rhetoric, which gives a speech colour, as logic doth favour, and both together beauty.*—Though some condemn rhetoric as the mother of lies, speaking more than the truth in hyperboles, less in her meiosis, otherwise in her metaphors, contrary in her ironies; yet is there excellent use of all these, when disposed of with judgment. Nor is he a stranger to poetry, which is music in words; nor to music, which is poetry in sound: both excellent *sauce*; but they have lived and died poor that made them their *meat*.

## VI.

*Mathematics he moderately studieth, to his great contentment.*—Using it as ballast for his soul; yet to fix it, not to stall it; nor suffers he it to be so unmannerly as to jostle out other arts. As for judicial astrology, (which hath the least judgment in it,) this vagrant hath been whipped out of all learned corporations. If our artist lodgeth her in the out-rooms of his soul for a night or two, it is rather to hear than believe her relations.

## VII.

*Hence he makes his progress into the study of history.*—Nestor, who lived three ages, was accounted the wisest man in the world. But the historian may make himself wise, by living as many ages as have past since the beginning of the world. His books enable him to maintain discourse, who, besides the stock of his own experience, may spend on the common purse

of his reading. This directs him in his life, so that he makes the shipwrecks of others sea-marks to himself; yea, accidents which others start from for their strangeness, he welcomes as his wonted acquaintance, having found precedents for them formerly. Without history a man's soul is purblind, seeing only the things which almost touch his eyes.

## VIII.

*He is well seen in chronology, without which history is but a heap of tales.*—If, by the laws of the land, he is counted a natural *who* hath not wit enough to tell twenty, or to tell his age,\* he shall not pass with me for wise in learning who cannot tell the age of the world, and count hundreds of years: I mean not, so critically as to solve all doubts arising thence; but that he may be able to give some tolerable account thereof. He is also acquainted with cosmography, treating of the world in whole joints; with chorography, shredding it into countries; and with topography, mincing it into particular places.

Thus, taking these sciences in their general latitude, he hath finished the round circle, or golden ring, of the arts; only he keeps a place for the diamond to be set in; I mean, for that predominant profession of law, physic, divinity, or state-policy, which he intends for his principal calling hereafter.

\* FITS-HERBERT, *De Nat. Brev. de Idiotā inquirendo.*

## CHAPTER VIII.

## THE LIFE OF JULIUS CÆSAR SCALIGER.

I KNOW my choice herein is liable to much exception. Some will make me the pattern of ignorance, for making this Scaliger the pattern of the general artist; whose own son Joseph might have been his father in many arts. But, all things considered, the choice will appear well-advised, even in such variety of examples. Yet, let him know that undertakes to pick out the best ear amongst an acre of wheat, that he shall leave as good, if not a better, behind him, than that which he chooseth.

He was born, *anno 1484*, in Italy, at the castle of Ripa, upon *Lacus Benacus*, now called Lago di Garda, of the illustrious and noble family of the Scaligers, princes, for many hundreds of years, of Verona, till at last the Venetians outed them of their ancient inheritance. Being about eleven years old, he was brought to the court of Maximilian, emperor of Germany; where, for seventeen years together, he was taught learning and military discipline. I pass by his valiant performances achieved by him, save that this one action of his is so great and strong, it cannot be kept in silence, but will be recorded:—

In the cruel battle at Ravenna, betwixt the emperor and the French, he not only bravely fetched off the dead bodies of Benedictus and Titus, his father and brother, but also, with his own hands, rescued the eagle, (the standard imperial,) which was taken by the enemies. For which his prowess, Maximilian knighted him; and with his own hands put on him the golden spurs and chain, the badges of knighthood.

Amidst these his martial employments, he made many a clandestine match with the Muses; and whilst he expected the tides and returns of business, he filled up the empty places of leisure with his studies. Well did the poets feign Pallas patroness of arts and arms; there being ever good intelligence betwixt the two professions, and, as it were, but a narrow cut to ferry over out of one into the other. At last, Scaliger sounded a retreat to himself from the wars, and wholly applied himself to his book; especially after his wandering life was fixed by marriage unto the beautiful Andietta Lobeiacca, with whom he lived at Agin, near Montpelier in France.

His Latin was twice refined, and most critical, as appears by his own writings, and notes on other authors. He was an accurate Grecian ; yet began to study it when well nigh forty years old, when a man's tongue is too stiff to bow to words. What a torture was it to him, who flowed with streams of matter, then to learn words, yea, letters, drop by drop ! But nothing was unconquerable to his pains, who had a golden wit in an iron body. Let his book of Subtleties witness his profound skill in logic and natural philosophy.

His skill in physic was as great as his practice therein was happy ; insomuch that he did many strange and admirable cures. Hear how a noble and learned pen doth commend him : \*—

*Non hunc fecellit ullus vis recondita  
Salubris herbas, saltibus si quam avitis  
Celat nivösus Caucasus, seu quam procul  
Riphæa duro contegit rupes gelu.  
Hic namque spectantes ad Orcum non semel  
Animas repressit vitor, et membris suis  
Hærere succis compulit felicibus,  
Nigrique avaras Ditis elusit manus.*

“ On snowy Caucasus there grew no root  
Of secret power, but he was privy to 't ;  
On cold Riphæan hills no simple grew,  
But he the force thereof and virtue knew :  
Wherewith, applied by his successful art,  
Such sullen souls as would this world depart,  
He forced still in their bodies to remain,  
And from death's door fetch'd others back again.”

As for his skill in physiognomy, it was wonderful. I know some will say, “ That cannot be read in men's faces which was never wrote there ; and that he that seeks to find the disposition of men's souls in the figures of their bodies, looks for letters on the backside of the book.” Yet is it credibly averred, that he never looked on his infant son Audectus but with grief, as sorrow-struck with some sad sign of ill success he saw in his face ; which child at last was found stifled in bed, with the embraces of his nurse, being fast asleep.†

In mathematics he was no Archimedes, though he showed this skill therein with the best advantage, and stood therein on his tiptoes, that his learning might seem the taller.

But in poetry his over-measure of skill might make up this defect, as is attested by his book *De Arte Poeticâ*. Yet his

\* STEPHANUS BOETIUS, *Regius Senator Burdigalæ ad Vidum Brassacum Praesidem.*

† *In Vitâ Juli Scalig., p. 54.*

own poems are harsh and unsmooth, (as if he rather snorted than slept on Parnassus,) and they sound better to the brain than ear. Indeed, his censure in poetry was incomparable ; but he was more happy in repairing of poems, than in building them from the ground, which speaks his judgment to be better than his invention.

What shall I speak of his skill in history, whose own actions were a sufficient history ? He was excellently versed in the passages of the world, both modern and ancient. Many modern languages, which departed from Babel in a confusion, met in his mouth in a method ; being skilful in the Sclavonic tongue, the Hungarian, Dutch, Italian, Spanish, and French.

But these his excellent parts were attended with prodigious pride ; and he had much of the humour of the Ottomans in him, —to kill all his brethren, and cry down all his equals, who were cor-rivals with him in the honour of arts, which was his principal quarrel with Cardan. Great was his spite at Erasmus, the morning-star of learning, and one by whom Julius himself had profited ; though afterwards he sought to put out that candle whereat he had lighted his own. In the bickering betwixt them, Erasmus plucked Scaliger by the long locks of his immoderate boasting, and touched him to the quick. (A proud man lies pat for a jeering man's hand to hit !) Yea, Erasmus was a badger in his jeers ; where he did bite, he would make his teeth meet. Nor came Scaliger behind him in railing. However, afterward Scaliger repented of his bitterness, and before his death was reconciled unto him.\*

Thus his learning, being in the circuit of arts, spread so wide, no wonder if it lay thin in some places. His parts were nimble, that, starting so late, he overtook, yea, over-ran his equals : so that we may safely conclude, that, making abatement for his military avocations, and late applying himself to study, scarce any one is to be preferred before him for generality of human learning. He died *anno* 1558, in the seventy-fifth year of his age.

• *THUANUS, Obit. Illust. Vir. anno 1558.*

## CHAPTER IX.

## THE FAITHFUL MINISTER.

We suppose him not brought up by hand only in his own country-studies, but that he hath sucked of his mother University, and thoroughly learnt the arts: not as St. Rumball,\* who is said to have spoken as soon as he was born, doth he preach as soon as he is matriculated. Conceive him now a graduate in arts, and entered into orders, according to the solemn form of the Church of England, and presented by some patron to a pastoral charge, or place equivalent; and then let us see how well he dischargeth his office.

## MAXIM I.

*He endeavours to get the general love and good-will of his parish.*—This he doth, not so much to make a benefit of them, as a benefit *for* them, that his ministry may be more effectual; otherwise he may preach his own heart out, before he preacheth any thing into theirs. The good conceit of the physician is half a cure; and his practice will scarce be happy where his person is hated. Yet he humours them not in his doctrine, to get their love; for such a spaniel is worse than a dumb dog. He shall sooner get their good-will by walking uprightly, than by crouching and creeping. If pious living, and painful labouring in his calling, will not win their affections, he counts it gain to lose them. As for those who causelessly hate him, he pities and prays for them: and such there will be. I should suspect his preaching had no salt in it, if no galled horse did wince.

## II.

*He is strict in ordering his conversation.*—As for those who cleanse blurs with blotted fingers, they make it the worse. It was said of one who preached very well, and lived very ill, “that when he was out of the pulpit, it was pity he should ever go into it; and when he was in the pulpit, it was pity he should ever come out of it.” But our minister *lives* sermons. And yet I deny not, but dissolute men, like unskilful horsemen, who

\* CAMDEN'S *Britannia*, in *Northamptonshire*.

open a gate on the wrong side, may, by the virtue of their office, open heaven for others, and shut themselves out.

## III.

*His behaviour towards his people is grave and courteous.*—Not too austere and retired; which is laid to the charge of good Mr. Hooper the martyr, that his rigidness frightened people from consulting with him.\* “Let your light,” saith Christ, “shine before men;” whereas over-reservedness makes the brightest virtue burn dim. Especially he detesteth affected gravity, (which is rather *on* men than *in* them,) whereby some belie their register-book, antedate their age to seem far older than they are, and plait and set their brows in an affected sadness. Whereas St. Anthony the monk might have been known among hundreds of his order by his cheerful face, he having ever (though a most mortified man) a merry countenance.†

## IV.

*He doth not clash God's ordinances together about precedence.*—Not making odious comparisons betwixt prayer and preaching, preaching and catechising, public prayer and private, premeditate prayer and *ex tempore*. When, at the taking of New Carthage in Spain, two soldiers contended about the mural crown, due to him who first climbed the walls, so that the whole army was thereupon in danger of division; Scipio the general said, he knew that they both got up the wall together, and so gave the scaling crown to them both.‡ Thus our minister compounds all controversies betwixt God's ordinances, by praising them all, practising them all, and thanking God for them all. He counts the reading of Common Prayers to prepare him the better for preaching; and, as one said, if he did first toll the bell on one side, it made it afterwards ring out the better in his sermons.

## V.

*He carefully catechiseth his people in the elements of religion.*—Except he hath (a rare thing!) a flock without lambs, of all old sheep; and yet even Luther did not scorn to profess himself *discipulum Catechismi*, “a scholar of the Catechism.” By this catechising, the Gospel first got ground of Popery: and let not our religion, now grown rich, be ashamed of that which first

\* Fox's “*Acts and Monuments*,” in his *Life*. † *ATHANASIUS, in ejus Vita.* ‡ *PLUTARCH, in Scipio's Life*, p. 1807.

gave it credit and set it up, lest the Jesuits beat us at our own weapon. Through the want of this catechising, many, who are well skilled in some dark out-corners of divinity, have lost themselves in the beaten road thereof.

## VI.

*He will not offer to God of that which costs him nothing.*—But takes pains beforehand for his sermons. Demosthenes never made any oration on the sudden; yea, being called upon, he never rose up to speak, except he had well studied the matter: and he was wont to say, “that he showed how he honoured and reverenced the people of Athens, because he was careful what he spake unto them.”\* Indeed, if our minister be surprised with a sudden occasion, he counts himself rather to be excused than commended, if, premeditating only the bones of his sermon, he clothes it with flesh *ex tempore*. As for those whose long custom hath made preaching their nature, [so] that they can discourse sermons without study, he accounts their examples rather to be admired than imitated.

## VII.

*Having brought his sermon into his head, he labours to bring it into his heart, before he preaches it to his people.*—Surely, that preaching which comes from the soul most works on the soul. Some have questioned *ventriloquy*, (when men strangely speak out of their bellies,) whether it can be done lawfully or no: might I coin the word *cordiloquy*, when men draw the doctrines out of their hearts, sure, all would count this lawful and commendable.

## VIII.

*He chiefly reproves the reigning sins of the time and place he lives in.*—We may observe, that our Saviour never inveighed against idolatry, usury, sabbath-breaking, amongst the Jews. Not that these were not sins, but they were not practised so much in that age, wherein wickedness was spun with a finer thread; and therefore Christ principally bent the drift of his preaching against spiritual pride, hypocrisy, and traditions, then predominant amongst the people. Also our minister confuteth no old heresies which time hath confuted; nor troubles his auditory with such strange hideous cases of conscience, that it is more hard to find the case than the resolution. In public reproving of sin, he ever whips the vice, and spares the person.

\* PLUTARCH, in the Life of Demosthenes.

## IX.

*He doth not only move the bread of life, and toss it up and down in generalities, but also breaks it into particular directions.*—Drawing it down to cases of conscience, that a man may be warranted in his particular actions, whether they be lawful or not. And he teacheth people their lawful liberty, as well as their restraints and prohibitions; for, amongst men, it is as ill taken to turn back favours, as to disobey commands.

## X.

*The places of Scripture he quotes are pregnant and pertinent.*—As for heaping up of many quotations, it smacks of a vain ostentation of memory. Besides, it is as impossible that the hearer should profitably retain them all, as that the preacher hath seriously perused them all; yea, whilst the auditors stop their attention, and stoop down to gather an impertinent quotation, the sermon runs on, and they lose more substantial matter.

## XI.

*His similes and illustrations are always familiar, never contemptible.*—Indeed, reasons are the pillars of the fabric of a sermon; but similitudes are the windows which give the best lights. He avoids such stories whose mention may suggest bad thoughts to the auditors, and will not use a light comparison to make thereof a grave application, for fear lest his poison go farther than his antidote.\*

\* I am afraid, that, after only a slight scrutiny, our author will be found to have been, occasionally, an egregious offender against some of these his own grave precepts. Take one example out of many:—In his “Comment on Ruth,” published by himself in 1654, he informs the right worshipful Lady Anne Archer, in his dedication, that, though now bearing the name of “a Comment,” “these endeavours were preached in an eminent place, when I first entered into the ministry, above twenty years since.” On the passage, “Abide here fast by my maidens,” (Ruth ii. 8,) he offers this observation: “Hence we gather, it is most decent for women to associate and accompany themselves with those of their own sex. Miriam, with a feminine choir, *with timbrels and dances*, answered the men; (Exod. xv. 20;) and the disciples wondered that Christ talked with a woman; (John iv. 27;) showing hereby, that it was not his ordinary course to converse alone with one of another sex. For herein the apostle’s precept deserves to take place; namely, *to avoid from all appearance of evil.*”

These remarks are in tolerably good taste; but, in his “Comment” on verse 21 of the same chapter, “Thou shalt keep fast by my young men,” his wicked wit bursts forth in the following

“OBJECTION.—Here either Ruth’s memory failed her, or else she wilfully committed a foul mistake. For Boaz never bade her *to keep fast by his young men*, but

## XII.

*He provideth not only wholesome but plentiful food for his people.*—Almost incredible was the painfulness of Baronius, the compiler of the voluminous “Annals of the Church,” who, for thirty years together, preached three or four times a-week to the people.\* As for our minister, he preferreth rather to entertain his people with wholesome cold meat which was on the table before, than with that which is hot from the spit, raw and half-roasted. Yet, in repetition of the same sermon, every edition hath a new addition, if not of new matter, of new affections. “Of whom,” saith St. Paul, “we have told you often, and now we tell you weeping.” (Phil. iii. 18.)

## XIII.

*He makes not that wearisome, which should ever be welcome.*—Wherefore his sermons are of an ordinary length, except on an extraordinary occasion. What a gift had John Halsebach, Professor at Vienna, in tediousness! † who, being to expound the Prophet Isaiah to his auditors, read twenty-one years on the first chapter, and yet finished it not.

## XIV.

*He counts the success of his ministry the greatest preferment.*—Yet herein God hath humbled many painful pastors, in making them to be clouds, to rain, not over Arabia the Happy, but over the Stony or Desert; so that they may complain with the herdsman in the poet:—

*Heu mihi, quam pingui macer est mihi taurus in arvo! †*

“ My starveling bull,  
Ah woe is me!  
In pasture full,  
How lean is he! ”

(verse 8,) *Abide here fast by my maidens.* It seems, she had a better mind to male company, who had altered the gender in the relating of his words.

“ *ANSWER.*—Condemn not the generation of the righteous, especially on doubtful evidence. Boaz gave a command (verse 15) to his young men to permit her to glean. She mentioneth them, therefore, in whom the authority did reside, who had a commission from their master to countenance and encourage her in her extraordinary gleaning; which privilege his maidens could not bestow upon her.”—*EDIT.*

\* The words being somewhat ambiguous, are thus: *In audiendis confessionibus et sermonibus ad populum ter in hebdomadā quaterve habendis per triginta et amplius annos diligentissimā assiduitate laboravit.*—*SPONDANUS, in Vitā Baronii*, p. 2, part 7. † *MERCATOR, “Atlas,” in the description of Austria.* † *VIRGILII Bucol.* iii. 100.—*EDIT.*

Yet such pastors may comfort themselves, that great is their reward with God in heaven, who measures it, not by their success, but endeavours. Besides, though they see not, their people may feel, benefit by their ministry. Yea, the preaching of the word in some places is like the planting of woods, where, though no profit is received for twenty years together, it comes afterwards. And grant, that God honours thee not to build his temple in thy parish, yet thou mayest, with David, provide metal and materials for Solomon thy successor to build it with.

## xv.

*To sick folks he comes sometimes before he is sent for.*—As counting his vocation a sufficient calling. None of his flock shall want the extreme unction of prayer and counsel. Against the communion, especially, he endeavours that Janus's temple be shut in the whole parish, and that all be made friends.

## xvi.

*He is never plaintiff in any suit but to be right's defendant.*—If his dues be detained from him, he grieves more for his parishioners' bad conscience than his own damage. He had rather suffer ten times in his profit, than once in his title, where not only his person, but posterity, is wronged; and then he proceeds fairly and speedily to a trial, that he may not vex and weary others, but right himself. During his suit he neither breaks off nor slacks offices of courtesy to his adversary; yea, though he loseth his suit, he will not also lose his charity. Chiefly he is respectful to his patron; that, as he presented him freely to his living, so he constantly presents his patron in his prayers to God.

## xvii.

*He is moderate in his tenets and opinions.*—Not that he gilds over lukewarmness in matters of moment with the title of "discretion;" but, withal, he is careful not to entitle violence, in indifferent and inconcerning matters, to be zeal. Indeed, men of extraordinary tallness, though otherwise little deserving, are made porters to lords; and those of unusual littleness are made ladies' dwarfs; whilst men of moderate stature may want masters. Thus many, notorious for extremities, may find favourers to prefer them; whilst moderate men in the middle truth may want any to advance them. But what saith the apostle?—"If in this life only we had hope, we are of all men the most miserable." (1 Cor. xv. 19.)

## XVIII.

*He is sociable and willing to do any courtesy for his neighbour-ministers.*—He willingly communicates his knowledge unto them. Surely, the gifts and graces of Christians lay in common, till base envy made the first enclosure. He neither slighteth his inferiors, nor repineth at those who in parts and credit are above him. He loveth the company of his neighbour-ministers. Sure, as ambergris is nothing so sweet in itself, as when it is compounded with other things; so both godly and learned men are gainers by communicating themselves to their neighbours.

## XIX.

*He is careful in the discreet ordering of his own family.*—A good minister, and a good father, may well agree together. When a certain Frenchman came to visit Melancthon,\* he found him in his stove, with one hand dandling his child in the swaddling-clouts, and in the other hand holding a book and reading it. Our minister also is as hospitable as his estate will permit, and makes every alms two, by his cheerful giving it. He loveth also to live in a well-repaired house, that he may serve God therein more cheerfully. A clergyman who built his house from the ground wrote in it this counsel to his successor:—

“ If thou dost find  
An house built to thy mind  
Without thy cost,  
Serve thou the more  
God and the poor;  
My labour is not lost.”

## XX.

*Lying on his death-bed, he bequeaths to each of his parishioners his precepts and example for a legacy.*—And they, in requital, erect every one a monument for him in their hearts. He is so far from that base jealousy that his memory should be outshined by a brighter successor, and from that wicked desire that his people may find his worth by the worthlessness of him that succeeds, that he doth heartily pray to God to provide them a better pastor after his decease. As for outward estate, he commonly lives in too bare pasture to die fat. It is well if he hath gathered any flesh, being more in blessing than bulk.

\* PANTALEON, *De Illustr. Germ. in Vitâ Melanoth.*

## CHAPTER X.

## THE LIFE OF MR. PERKINS.

WILLIAM PERKINS, born at Marston, nigh Coventry, in Warwickshire, was afterwards brought up in Christ-College in Cambridge, where he so well profited in his studies, that he got the grounds of all liberal arts ; and, in the twenty-fourth [year] of Queen Elizabeth, was chosen Fellow of that College, the same year wherein Dr. Andrew Willet, (one of admirable industry,) and Dr. Richard Clark, (whose learned sermons commend him to posterity,) were elected into the same Society.

There goeth an uncontrolled tradition, that Perkins, when a young scholar, was a great studier of magic, occasioned perchance by his skill in the mathematics. For, ignorant people count all circles above their own sphere to be conjuring ; and presently cry out, those things are done by black art for which their dim eyes can see no colour in reason. And in such case, when they cannot fly up to heaven to make it a miracle, they fetch it from hell to make it magic, though it may lawfully be done by natural causes. True it is, he was very wild in his youth, till God (the best Chymic, [Chemist] who can fix quicksilver itself) graciously reclaimed him.

After his entrance into the ministry, the first beam he sent forth shined to those "which sat in darkness and the shadow of death ;" I mean, the prisoners in the Castle of Cambridge ; people (as generally in such places) living in England, out of Christendom, wanting the means of their salvation, bound in their bodies, but too loose in their lives ; yea, often branded in their flesh, and seared in their consciences. Perkins prevailed so far with their jailer, that the prisoners were brought (fettered) to the shire-house hard by, where he preached unto them every Lord's-day. Thus was the prison his parish ; his own charity, his patron presenting him unto it ; and his work was all his wages. Many an Onesimus here he begat, and, as the instrument, freed the prisoners from the captivity of sin. When this began to be known, some of good quality of the neighbouring parishes became his auditors, and counted it their feast to feed out of the prisoners' basket. Hence afterwards he became

preacher of St. Andrew's parish in Cambridge, where he continued to the day of his death.

His sermons were not so plain but that the piously learned did admire them, nor so learned but that the plain did understand them. What was said of Socrates, "that he first humbled the towering speculations of philosophers into practice and morality ;" so our Perkins brought the schools into the pulpit, and, unshelling their controversies out of their hard school-terms, made thereof plain and wholesome meat for his people. For he had a capacious head, with angles winding and roomy enough to lodge all controversial intricacies ; and had not preaching diverted him from that way, he had no doubt attained to eminency therein. An excellent surgeon he was at jointing of a broken soul, and at stating of a doubtful conscience. And, sure, in case-divinity Protestants are defective. For, (save that a Smith or two of late have built them forges, and set up shop,) we go down to our enemies to sharpen all our instruments, and are beholden to them for offensive and defensive weapons in cases of conscience.

He would pronounce the word *damn* with such an emphasis, as left a doleful echo in his auditors' ears a good while after ; and when catechist of Christ-College, in expounding the Commandments, applied them so home, able almost to make his hearers' hearts fall down, and hairs to stand upright.\* But in his older age he altered his voice, and remitted much of his former rigidness ; often professing that to preach mercy was that proper office of the ministers of the Gospel.

Some object that his doctrine, referring all to an absolute decree, hamstrings all industry, and cuts off the sinews of men's endeavours towards salvation. For, ascribing all to the wind of God's Spirit, (which bloweth where it listeth,) he leaveth nothing to the oars of man's diligence, either to help or hinder to the attaining of happiness, but rather opens a wide door to licentious security. Were this the hardest objection against Perkins's doctrine, his own life was a sufficient answer thereunto,—so pious, so spotless, that malice was afraid to

\* S. W., Master of S. S. C. Dr. Samuel Ward was the person whom the preceding initials were intended to designate. He received the early part of his academical education in Christ College, (of which Perkins was then Fellow,) and in 1609 was appointed to the Mastership of Sidney-Sussex College, in which Fuller obtained a Fellowship, through the interest of his uncle Davenant with his friend Dr. Ward, from whom he received several of the interesting particulars which he has here given concerning Perkins.—EDIT.

bite at his credit, into which she knew her teeth could not enter.

He had a rare felicity in speedy reading of books, and, as it were but turning them over, would give an exact account of all considerables therein. So that, as it were riding post through an author, he took strict notice of all passages, as if he had dwelt on them particularly; perusing books so speedily, one would think he read nothing; so accurately, one would think he read all.

He was of a cheerful nature and pleasant disposition. Indeed, to mere strangers he was reserved and close, suffering them to knock a good while before he would open himself unto them; but, on the least acquaintance, he was merry and very familiar.

Besides his assiduity in preaching, he wrote many books, extant at this day. And pity it was, that he set not forth more of them himself; for though some of his orphan works lighted on good guardians, yet all were not so happy; and, indeed, no nurse for a child [is equal] to the own mother.

He died in the forty-fourth year of his age, of a violent fit of the stone. It hath been reported, that he died in the conflict of a troubled conscience; which, admit [it] were so, had been no wonder: for God sometimes seemingly leaves his saints when they leave the world, plunging them on their death-beds in deep temptations, and casting their souls down to hell, to rebound the higher to heaven. Besides, the devil is most busy on the last day of his term; and a tenant to be outed cares not what mischief he doth. But here was no such matter. Indeed, he always cried out, "Mercy! mercy!" which some standers-by misinterpreted for despair, as if he felt not God's favour, because he called for it; whereas mercy is a grace which they hold the fastest that most catch after it.\* It is true, that many, on less reason, have expressed more confidence of their future happiness, and have delivered themselves in larger speeches concerning the same. But who could expect a long oration from him, where every word was accented with pain in so sharp a disease?

His funerals were solemnly and sumptuously performed at the sole charges of Christ-College; which challenged, as she gave him his breeding, to pay for his burial; the University and town lovingly contending which should express more sorrow thereat. Dr. Mountague, afterwards bishop of Winchester, preached his funeral sermon, and excellently discharged the place, taking for his text, "Moses my servant is dead."

\* S. W., *ut prius.*

He was of a ruddy complexion, very fat and corpulent, lame of his right hand ; and yet this Ehud, with a left-handed pen, did stab the Romish cause, and, as one saith,

*Dexter a quantumvis fuerat tibi manca, docendi  
Pollebas mira dexteritate tamen.\**

“ Though nature thee of thy right hand bereft,  
Right well thou writest with thy hand that 's left.”

He was born [in] the first—and died the last—year of queen Elizabeth ; so that his life streamed in equal length with her reign, and they both had their fountains and falls together.

I must not forget, how his books after his death were translated into most modern Christian languages. For, though he excellently improved his talent in the English tongue, yet foreigners thought it but wrapped up in a napkin, whilst folded in an unknown language. Wherefore, some translated the main body of his works into French, Dutch, and Italian ; and his books speak more tongues than the maker ever understood. His “ Reformed Catholic ” was done into Spanish ; and no Spaniard ever since durst take up that gauntlet of defiance [which] our champion cast down. Yea, their Inquisition rather chose to answer it with tortures than arguments.

\* HUGH HOLLAND, in his *Icones*.

## CHAPTER XI.

## THE GOOD PARISHIONER.

WE will only describe his church-reference ; his civil part hath and shall be met with under other heads. Conceive him to live under such a faithful minister as before was charactered ; as either judging charitably that all pastors are such, or wishing heartily that they were.

## MAXIM I.

*Though near to the church, he is not far from God.*—Like unto Justus : “One that worshipped God ; and his house joined hard to the synagogue.” (Acts xviii. 7.) Otherwise, if his distance from the church be great, his diligence is the greater to come thither in season.

## II.

*He is timely at the beginning of Common Prayer.*—Yet, as Tully charged some dissolute people for being such sluggards, that they never saw the sun rising or setting, as being always up after the one, and a-bed before the other ;\* so some negligent people never hear prayers begun, or sermon ended : the Confession being past before they come, and the Blessing not come before they are passed away.

## III.

*In sermon, he sets himself to hear God in the minister.*—Therefore divesteth he himself of all prejudice,—the jaundice in the eye of the soul, presenting colours false unto it. He hearkens very attentively. It is a shame when the church itself is *cæmeterium*, wherein the living sleep above ground, as the dead do beneath.

## IV.

*At every point that concerns himself, he turns down a leaf in his heart.*—And rejoiceth that God’s word hath pierced him, as hoping that whilst his soul smarts, it heals. And as it is no

\* *De Finibus Boni et Mali*, lib. ii.

manners for him that hath good venison before him to ask whence it came, but rather fairly to fall to it; so, hearing an excellent sermon, he never inquires whence the preacher had it, or whether it was not before in print, but falls aboard to practise it.

## v.

*He accuseth not his minister of spite for particularizing him.*—It does not follow, that the archer aimed, because the arrow hit. Rather, our parishioner reasoneth thus: “If my sin be notorious, how could the minister miss it? if secret, how could he hit without God’s direction?” But foolish hearers make even the bells of Aaron’s garments to clink as they think. And a guilty conscience is like a whirlpool, drawing in all to itself which otherwise would pass by. One, causelessly disaffected to his minister, complained that he, in his last sermon, had personally inveighed against him, and accused him thereof to a grave, religious gentleman in the parish. “Truly,” said the gentleman, “I had thought in his sermon he had meant me; for it touched my heart.” This rebated the edge of the other’s anger.

## vi.

*His tithes he pays willingly with cheerfulness.*—How many part with God’s portion grudgingly, or else pinch it in the paying! *Decimum*, “the tenth,” amongst the Romans was ever taken for what was best or biggest.\* It falls out otherwise in paying of tithes, where the least and leanest are shifted off to make that number.

## vii.

*He hides not himself from any parish-office which seeks for him.*—If chosen churchwarden, he is not busily-idle, rather to trouble than reform, presenting all things but those which he should. If overseer of the poor, he is careful the rates be made indifferent, (whose inequality oftentimes is more burdensome than the sum,) and well-disposed of. He measures not people’s wants by their clamorous complaining, and dispenses more to those that deserve, than to them that only need, relief.

## viii.

*He is bountiful in contributing to the repair of God’s house.*—For though he be not of their opinion, who would have the

\* *Fluctus decimus pro maximo.*—OVIDIO et LUCANO.

churches under the gospel conformed to the magnificence of Solomon's temple, (whose porch would serve us for a church,) and adorn them so gaudily, that devotion is more distracted than raised, and men's souls rather dazzled, than lightened ; yet he conceives it fitting that such sacred places should be handsomely and decently maintained ; the rather, because the climacterical year of many churches from their first foundation, may seem to happen in our days ; so old, that their ruin is threatened if not speedily repaired.

## IX.

*He is respectful to his minister's widow and posterity for his sake.*—When the only daughter of Peter Martyr was, through the riot and prodigality of her debauched husband, brought to extreme poverty, the State of Zurich, out of grateful remembrance of her father, supported her with bountiful maintenance.\* My prayers shall be, that ministers' widows and children may never stand in need of such relief, and may never want such relief when they stand in need !

\* THUANI *Obit. Vir. Doct.*, anno 1562.

## CHAPTER XII.

## THE GOOD PATRON.

THAT, in the primitive times, (though I dare not say generally in all churches,) if not the sole choice, at least the consent, of the people was required in appointing of ministers, may partly appear out of Scripture,\* more plainly out of Cyprian,† and is confessed by [the] reverend Dr. Whitgift.‡ These popular elections were well discharged in those purer times, when men, being scourged with constant persecution, had little leisure to rust with factions; and when there were no baits for corruption, the places of ministers being then of great pains and peril, and small profit. But, dissension creeping in, in after-ages, (the eyes of common people, at the best but dim through ignorance, being wholly blinded with partiality,) it may seem, their right of election was either devolved to, or assumed of, the bishop of the diocese, who only was to appoint curates in every parish.§ Afterwards, to invite lay-men to build and endow churches, the bishops departed with their right to the lay-patrons, according to the verse:—

*Patronum faciunt dos, adificatio, fundus:*

“A patron ‘s he that did endow with lands,  
Or built the church, or on whose ground it stands:”

it being conceived reasonable, that he who paid the church’s portion should have the main stroke in providing her an husband. Then came patronages to be annexed to manors, and by sale or descent to pass along with them: nor could any justly complain thereof, if all patrons were like him we describe.

## MAXIM I.

*He counts the living his to dispose, not to make profit, of.—He fears more to lapse his conscience, than his living; fears more the committing, than the discovery, of Simony.*

\* Acts xiv. 23, *χειροτονήσαντες.*

† Lib. i. epist. 4. of the Answer to the Admonition,” p. 164.

‡ “ Defence

§ *Concil. Toletan. anno 589,* can. 9; *Synod Antiochen.*, can. 24; and *2 Concil. Gangrense*, can. 7, 8.

## II.

*A benefice he sometimes giveth speedily, never rashly.*—Some are long in bestowing them, out of state, because they love to have many suitors; others, out of covetousness, will not open their wares till all their chapmen are come together, pretending to take the more deliberation.

## III.

*He is deaf to opportunity, if wanting desert.*—Yet is he not of the mind of Tamerlane, the Scythian king, who never gave office to any that sought for it. For, desiring proceeds not always for\* want of deserving; yea, God himself likes well that his favours should be sued for. Our patron chiefly respects piety, sufficiency, and promise of painfulness, whereby he makes his election. If he can by the same deed provide for God's house and his own family, he counts it lawful; but on no terms will prefer his dearest and nearest son or kinsman, if unworthy.

## IV.

*He hates not only direct Simony, or rather Gehazism by the string, but also that which goes about by the bow.*—Ancient councils present us with several forms hereof. I find how the patron's sons and nephews were wont to feed upon the incumbent, and eat out the presentation in great banquets and dinners, till at last the Palentine council brought a vorder to such feasts, and made a canon against them.† But the former ages were bunglers, to the cunning contrivance of the Simony-engineers of our times. “O my soul, come thou not into their secrets!” As if they cared not to go to hell, so be it were not the nearest way, but that they might fetch a far compass round about. And yet Father Campian must not carry it so clearly, who taxeth the Protestants for maintaining of Simony.‡ We confess it a personal vice amongst us, but not to be charged as a church-sin, which by penal laws it doth both prohibit and punish. Did Rome herein look upon the dust behind her own doors, she would have but little cause to call her neighbour “slut.” What saith the epigram?—

*An Petrus fuerat Romæ, sub judice lis est;  
Simonem Romæ nemo fuisse negat.*

\* For, “on account of.”—EDIT.  
constit. 14.

† Concil. Palent. anno 1322,  
‡ Vide VIDEL. Comment. in Epist. Ignatii ad Trallenses.

“That **PETER** was at Rome, there 's strife about it;  
That **SIMON** was there, none did ever doubt it.”

## V.

*He hates corruption not only in himself, but his servants.*—Otherwise, it will do no good for the master to throw bribes away, if the men catch them up at the first rebound, yea, before ever they come to the ground. Camden can tell you what Lord-Keeper it was, in the days of queen Elizabeth, who, though himself an upright man, was hardly spoken of for the baseness of his servants in the sale of ecclesiastical preferments.\*

## VI.

*When he hath freely bestowed a living, he makes no boast of it.*—To do this were a kind of spiritual Simony, to ask and receive applause of others; as if the commonness of faulting herein made a right, and the rarity of giving things freely, merited, *ex condigno* † a general commendation. He expects nothing from the clerk [whom] he presented, but his prayers to God for him, respectful carriage towards him, and painfulness in his calling; who, having gotten his place freely, may discharge it the more faithfully: whereas those will scarce afford to feed their sheep fat, who rent the pasture at too high a rate.

To conclude: let patrons imitate this particular example of king William Rufus, who, though sacrilegious in other acts, herein discharged a good conscience:—Two monks came to him to buy an abbot's place of him, seeking to outvie each other in offering great sums of money, whilst a third monk stood by, and said nothing; to whom said the king, “What wilt thou give for the place?” “Not a penny,” answered he, “for it is against my conscience; but here I stay to wait home on him whom your royal pleasure shall design abbot.” “Then,” quoth the king, “thou of the three best deservest the place, and shalt have it;” and so bestowed it on him.

\* In the “Life of Queen Elizabeth,” *anno Domini 1596.*  
proper worthiness.”—**EDIT.**

† “Through

## CHAPTER XIII.

## THE GOOD LANDLORD.

THE good landlord is one that lets his land on a reasonable rate ; so that the tenant, by employing his stock, and using his industry, may make an honest livelihood thereby, to maintain himself and his children.

## MAXIM I.

*His rent doth quicken his tenant, but not gall him.*—Indeed, it is observed, that where landlords are very easy, the tenants (but this is *per accidens*, out of their own laziness) seldom thrive, contenting themselves to make up the just measure of their rent, and not labouring for any surplusage of estate. But our landlord puts some metal into his tenant's industry ; yet not granting him too much, lest the tenant revenge the landlord's cruelty to him upon his land.

## II.

*Yet he raiseth his rents (or fines equivalent) in some proportion to the present price of other commodities.*—The plenty of money makes a seeming scarcity of all other things, and wares of all sorts do daily grow dear. If, therefore, our landlord should let his rents stand still as his grandfather left them, whilst other wares daily go on in price, he must needs be cast far behind in his estate.

## III.

*What he sells or sets to his tenant, he suffers him quietly to enjoy according to his covenants.*—This is a great joy to a tenant, though he buys dear, to possess without disturbance. A strange example there was of God's punishing a covetous landlord, at Rye in Sussex, *anno* 1570. He, having a certain marsh, wherein men on poles did dry their fish-nets, received yearly of them a sufficient sum of money ; till, not content therewith, he caused his servant to pluck up the poles, not suffering the fishermen to use them any longer, except they would compound at a greater rate. But it came to pass the same night, that the sea, breaking in, covered the same marsh with water, and so it still continueth.\*

\* HOLLINSHED, p. 1224.

## IV.

*He detests and abhors all enclosure with depopulation.*—And because this may seem a matter of importance, we will break it into several propositions.

1. *Enclosure may be made without depopulating.*—Infinites of examples show this to be true. But depopulation hath cast a slander on enclosure; which because often done with it, people suspect it cannot be done without it.

2. *Enclosure made without depopulating is injurious to none.*—I mean, if proportionable allotments be made to the poor for their commonage, and free- and lease-holders have a considerable share with the lord of the manor.

3. *Enclosure without depopulating is beneficial to private persons.*—Then have they most power and comfort to improve their own parts; and, for the time and manner thereof, may mould it to their own conveniency. The monarch of one acre will make more profit thereof, than he that hath his share in forty in common.

4. *Enclosure without depopulating is profitable to the commonwealth.*—If injurious to no private person, and profitable to them all, it must needs be beneficial to the commonwealth, which is but the *summa totalis* of sundry persons, as several figures. Besides, if a mathematician should count the wood in the hedges, to what a mighty forest would it amount? This underwood serves for supplies, to save timber from burning; otherwise our wooden walls in the water must have been sent to the fire. Add to this the strength of an enclosed country against a foreign invasion. Hedges and counter-hedges, having in number what they want in height and depth, serve for barricadoes, and will stick as bird-lime in the wings of the horse, and scotch the wheeling-about of the foot. Small resistance will make the enemy to earn every mile of ground as he marches. Object not, that “enclosure destroys tillage, the staff of a country;” for it need not all be converted to pasturage. Cain and Abel may very well agree in the commonwealth; the ploughman and shepherd part the enclosures betwixt them.

5. *Enclosure with depopulation is a canker to the commonwealth.*—It needs no proof: woful experience shows how it un-houses thousands of people, till desperate need thrusts them on the gallows. Long since had this land been sick of a pleurisy of people, if not let blood in their western plantations.

6. *Enclosure with depopulation endamageth the parties themselves.*—It is a paradox, and yet a truth, that reason shows such

enclosures to be gainful, and experience proves them to be loss, to the makers. It may be, because God, being Φιλάνθρωπος, "a Lover of man, mankind, and men's society," and having said to them, "Multiply and increase," counts it an affront unto him that men depopulate; and, whereas bees daily swarm, men make the hives fewer. The margin shall direct you to the author that counts eleven manors in Northamptonshire thus enclosed; which towns have vomited out, to use his own expression, and unburdened themselves of their former desolating and depopulating owners, and, I think, of their posterity.\*

## v.

*He rejoiceth to see his tenants thrive.*—Yea, he counts it a great honour to himself, when he perceiveth that God blesseth their endeavours, and that they come forward in the world. I close up all with this pleasant story:—A farmer rented a grange, generally reported to be haunted by fairies, and paid a shrewd rent for the same at each half-year's end. Now, a gentleman asked him how he durst be so hardy as to live in the house, and whether no spirits did trouble him. "Truth," said the farmer, "there be two saints in heaven vex me more than all the devils in hell; namely, the Virgin Mary, and Michael the Archangel;" on which days he paid his rent.

\* MR. BENTHAM's "Christian Conflict," p. 322.

## CHAPTER XIV.

## THE GOOD MASTER OF A COLLEGE.

THE Jews, *anno* 1348, were banished out of most countries of Christendom, principally for poisoning of springs and fountains.\* Grievous, therefore, is their offence who infect Colleges, the fountains of learning and religion; and it concerneth the church and state, that the Heads of such Houses be rightly qualified,—such men as we come to character.

## MAXIM I.

*His learning, if beneath eminency, is far above contempt.*—Sometimes ordinary scholars make extraordinary good masters. Every one who can play well on Apollo's harp, cannot skilfully drive his chariot; there being a peculiar mystery of government. Yet, as a little alloy makes gold to work the better, so, perchance, some dulness in a man makes him fitter to manage secular affairs; and those who have climbed up Parnassus but half-way, better behold worldly business, (as lying low and nearer to their sight,) than such as have climbed up to the top of the mount.

## II.

*He not only keeps the statutes, (in his study,) but observes them.*—For, the maintaining of them will maintain him, if he be questioned. He gives them their true dimensions; not racking them for one, nor shrinking them for another; but making his conscience his daily visitor. He that breaks the statutes, and thinks to rule better by his own discretion, makes many gaps in the hedge, and then stands to stop one of them with a stake in his hand. Besides, thus to confound the will of the dead founders, is the ready way to make living men's charity (like sir Hugh Willoughby in discovering the northern passage) to be frozen to death, and will dishearten all future benefactors.

## III.

*He is principal porter and chief chapel-monitor.*—For where the Master keeps his chamber always, the scholars will keep

\* MUNSTER, *De Germaniâ*, lib. iii. p. 457.

theirs seldom, yea, perchance may make all the *walls* of the College to be *gate*. He seeks to avoid the inconvenience when the gates do rather divide than confine the scholars, when the College is distinguished (as France into *Cis- et Trans-Alpina*) into “the part on this, and on the other, side” of the walls. As for out-lodgings, (like galleries, necessary evils in popular churches,) he rather tolerates than approves them.

## IV.

*In his elections he respecteth merit, not only as the condition, but as the cause, thereof.*—Not like Leofricus, abbot of St. Alban’s, who would scarce admit any into his convent, though well deserving, except he was a gentleman born.\* He more respects literature in a scholar, than great men’s letters for him. A learned Master of a College in Cambridge (since made a reverend bishop, and, to the great grief of good men and great loss of God’s church, lately deceased) refused a mandate for choosing of a worthless man Fellow. And when it was expected, that at the least he should have been outed of his Mastership for this his contempt, king James highly commended him ; and encouraged him ever after to follow his own conscience, when the like occasion should be given him.

## V.

*He winds up the tenants to make good music, but not to break them.*—Sure, College-lands were never given to fat the tenants and starve the scholars, but that both might comfortably subsist. Yea, generally I hear the Muses commended for the best landladies, and a College-lease is accounted but as the worst kind of freehold.

## VI.

*He is observant to do all due right to benefactors.*—If not piety, policy would dictate this unto him. And though he respects not benefactors’ kinsmen, when at their first admission they count themselves born heirs-apparent to all preferment which the House can heap on them, and therefore grow lazy and idle ; yet he counts their alliance, seconded with mediocrity of desert, a strong title to College-advancement.

## VII.

*He counts it lawful to enrich himself, but in subordination to the College-good.*—Not like Varus, governor of Syria, who came

\* MATTHEW PARIS, in 23 *Abbat. St. Alban.*, p. 42.

poor into the country, and found it rich ; but departed thence rich, and left the country poor. Methinks it is an excellent commendation which Trinity College in Cambridge, in her Records, bestows on Dr. Still, once Master thereof : *Se ferebat patremfamilias providum, ἀγαθὸν κουροτρόφον, nec Collegio gravis fuit aut onerosus.*\*

## VIII.

*He despairs to nourish dissension amongst the members of his House.*—Let Machiavil's maxim, *Divide et regnabis*,† if offering to enter into a College-gate, sink through the grate, and fall down with the dirt. For, besides that the fomenting of such discords agrees not with a good conscience, each party will watch advantages, and pupils will often be made to suffer for their tutors' quarrels ; *studium partium* will be *magna pars studiorum*, and the College have more rents than revenues.‡

## IX.

*He scorneth the plot, to make only dunces Fellows, to the end he may himself command in chief.*—As thinking that they who know nothing, will do any thing ; and so he shall be a figure amongst cyphers, a bee amongst drones. Yet oftentimes such Masters are justly met with ; and they find by experience, that the dullest horses are not easiest to be reined. But our Master endeavours so to order his elections, that every scholar may be fit to make a Fellow, and every Fellow a Master.

\* “ He acquitted himself as a careful Master of this House ; excellent in his provision for the bodies and minds of the undergraduates, and was neither disagreeable to the members, nor burdensome to the College.”—EDIT.

† “ Sow dissension among them, and then you may exercise over them an absolute sway.”—EDIT.

‡ “ Their *study* of (or adherence to) *parties* will form no small *part* of their *studies*,” and the College, of consequence, “ will have more rents (divisions) than revenues.”

—EDIT.

## CHAPTER XV.

## THE LIFE OF DR. METCALF.

NICHOLAS METCALF, Doctor of Divinity, extracted out of an ancient and numerous family of gentry in Yorkshire, was archdeacon of Rochester, and chaplain to John Fisher the bishop thereof; by whom this our doctor was employed to issue forth the moneys for the building of St. John's College in Cambridge. For, Margaret Countess of Richmond and Derby, intending to graft St. John's College into the old stock of St. John's Hospital, referred all to the bishop of Rochester; and he used Metcalf as an agent in all proceedings which did concern that foundation: which will infer him to be both a wise and an honest man.

Some make him to be but meanly learned;\* and one telleth us a long story, how a sophister put a fallacy upon him, *a sensu diviso ad sensum compositum*, and yet the doctor's dim eyes could not discern it.† But such trifles were beneath him; and what wonder is it if a general, long used in governing an army, hath forgotten his school-play, and fencers' rules, to put-by every thrust?

Doubtless, had not his learning been sufficient, bishop Fisher, a great clerk himself, would not have placed him to govern the College. But we know, that some count all others but dry scholars, whose learning runneth in a different channel from their own; and it is possible, that the great distance betwixt men in matter of religion might hinder the new learning in one to see the old learning in the other.

But grant that Metcalf, with Themistocles, could not fiddle, yet he could make a little city a great one; though dull in himself, yet he could whet others by his encouragement. He found the College spending scarce two hundred marks by the year, he left it spending a thousand marks and more.‡ For he not only procured and settled many donations, and by-foundations (as we term them) of Fellowships and Scholarships, founded by others;

\* ASCHAM's "Schoolmaster," book ii. fol. 47.  
"Chron. of Persian Monarchs," p. 196.

† LIVELY, in his  
‡ ASCHAM, *in loco prius citato*.

but was a benefactor himself *pro certis ornamentis et structuris in capellâ, et pro ædificatione sex camerarum a tergo coquinæ, &c.*\* as it is evidenced in the College-books. He counted the College his own home, and therefore cared not what cost he bestowed on it: not like those Masters, who, making their Colleges as steps to higher advancement, will trample on them, to raise up themselves, and, using their wings to fly up to their own honour, cannot afford to spread them to brood their College. But the thriving of the nursery is the best argument to prove the skill and care of the nurse. See what store of worthy men the house in his time did yield:—

STATESMEN:—William Cecil lord Burleigh, sir John Cheek, Walter Haddon.†

BISHOPS:—Ralph Bain, bishop of Coventry and Lichfield; John Christopherson, bishop of Chichester; Robert Horn, bishop of Winton; James Pilkington, bishop of Durham; John Tailour, bishop of Lincoln; Thomas Watson, bishop of Lincoln.

LEARNED WRITERS:—Roger Ascham, George Bullock,‡ Roger Hutchinson,§ Alban Langdale, John Seaton.

LEARNED MEN:—Hugh Fitz-Herbert, William Ireland, Laurence Pilkington, —— Tomson, Henry Wright.

With very many more. For though I dare not say that all these were old enough to bear fruit in Metcalf's time, yet, sure I am, by him they were inoculated, and in his days admitted into the College.

Yet for all these his deserts, Metcalf in his old age was expelled the College, and driven out when he could scarce go. A new generation grew up, (advanced by him,) whose active spirits stumbled at his gravity, (young seamen do count ballast needless, yea, burdensome in a ship!) and endeavoured his removal. It appears not what particular fault they laid to his charge. Some think, that the bishop of Rochester, his good lord, being put to death, occasioned his ruin; Fisher's misfortune being Metcalf's highest misdemeanour. He sunk with his patron; and when his sun was set, it was presently night with him: for, according to the Spanish proverb, “Where goes the bucket, there goes the rope;” || where the principal mis-carries, all the dependents fall with him.

\* “For sundry ornaments and erections in the chapel, and for building six chambers behind the kitchen.”—EDIT. † This is a mistake. See FULLER'S “History of the University of Cambridge,” 8vo. edit. p. 144.—EDIT. ‡ PITZÆUS, *De Scriptor. Angli.* p. 773. § BALEUS, *De Scriptor. Anglicanis.* || *Yrà la soga con el calderon.*

Others conceive, it was for his partiality in preferring northern men, as if in his compass there were no points but such only as looked to the north ; advancing alone his own countrymen, and more respecting their need than deserts. Indeed, long before,\* I find William Millington, first Provost of King's College, put out of his place, for his partiality in electing Yorkshire-men.

But herein Metcalf is sufficiently justified : for he found charity hottest in the cold country : " Northern men were most partial," saith one, " in giving lands to the College, for the furtherance of learning."† Good reason, therefore, northern scholars should be most watered there, where northern benefactors rained most.

Well, good old Metcalf must forsake the House. Methinks the blushing bricks seem ashamed of their ingratitudes ; and each door, window, and casement in the College was a mouth to plead for him.

But what shall we say ? Mark generally the grand deservers in States, and you shall find them lose their lustre before they end their life ; the world, out of covetousness to save charges to pay them their wages, quarrelling with them, as if an over-merit were an offence. And whereas some impute this to the malignant influence of the heavens, I ascribe it rather to a pestilent vapour out of the earth ; I mean, that rather men, than stars, are to be blamed for it.

He was twenty years Master ; and on the fourth day of June, 1537, went out of his office, and it seems died soon after. His epitaph is fastened on a piece of brass on the wall, in the College-chapel. We must not forget that all who were great doers in his expulsion were great sufferers afterwards, and died all in great misery.‡ There is difference betwixt prying into God's secrets, and being stark blind. Yea, I question whether we are not bound to look where God points by so memorable a judgment, showing that those branches most justly withered which plucked up their own root.

\* 1446, *Manuscrip. Hatcher. Coll. Regal.*

† ASCHAM, *in loco citato.*

‡ *Omnes qui Metcalfi excludendi autores extiterunt, multis adversæ fortunæ procellis (sive divinâ ultione seu fato suo) jactati, de gradu dejecti et deturbati, inglei mortem obierunt exemplo memorabili.*—CAIUS, *Hist. Cantab.* lib. i. pp. 75, 76.

## CHAPTER XVI.

## THE GOOD SCHOOLMASTER.

THERE is scarce any profession in the commonwealth more necessary, which is so slightly performed. The reasons whereof I conceive to be these: First, young scholars make this calling their refuge; yea, perchance, before they have taken any degree in the University, commence schoolmasters in the country; as if nothing else were required to set up this profession, but only a rod and a ferula. Secondly, others, who are able, use it only as a passage to better preferment; to patch the rents in their present fortune, till they can provide a new one, and betake themselves to some more gainful calling. Thirdly, they are disheartened from doing their best, with the miserable reward which in some places they receive,—being masters to their children, and slaves to their parents. Fourthly, being grown rich, they grow negligent; and scorn to touch the school, but by the proxy of an usher. But see how well our schoolmaster behaves himself.

## MAXIM I.

*His genius inclines him with delight to his profession.*—Some men had as lieve\* be school-boys as school-masters,—to be tied to the school, as COOPER's "Dictionary" and SCAPULA's "Lexicon" are chained to the desk therein; and, though great scholars, and skilful in other arts, are bunglers in this. But God of his goodness hath fitted several men for several callings, that the necessity of church and state, in all conditions, may be provided for. So that he who beholds the fabric thereof may say: "God hewed out this stone, and appointed it to lie in this very place; for it would fit none other so well, and here it doth most excellent." And thus God mouldeth some for a schoolmaster's life; undertaking it with desire and delight, and discharging it with dexterity and happy success.

## II.

*He studieth his scholars' natures as carefully as they their books.*—And ranks their dispositions into several forms. And

\* Sometimes lief: "Would as soon, as willingly."—EDIT.

though it may seem difficult for him in a great school to descend to all particulars, yet experienced schoolmasters may quickly make a grammar of boys' natures, and reduce them all (saving some few exceptions) to these general rules:—

1. *Those that are ingenious and industrious.*—The conjunction of two such planets in a youth presage much good unto him. To such a lad a frown may be a whipping, and a whipping a death; yea, where their master whips them once, shame whips them all the week after. Such natures he useth with all gentleness.

2. *Those that are ingenious and idle.*—These think, with the hare in the fable, that, running with snails, (so they count the rest of their school-fellows,) they shall come soon enough to the post, though sleeping a good while before their starting. O! a good rod would finely take them napping!

3. *Those that are dull and diligent.*—Wines,—the stronger they be, the more lees they have when they are new. Many boys are muddy-headed till they be clarified with age; and such afterwards prove the best. Bristol diamonds are both bright, and squared, and pointed by nature, and yet are soft and worthless; whereas orient ones, in India, are rough and rugged naturally. Hard, rugged, and dull natures of youth acquit themselves afterwards the jewels of the country; and, therefore, their dulness at first is to be borne with, if they be diligent.\* That schoolmaster deserves to be beaten himself, who beats nature in a boy for a fault. And I question whether all the whipping in the world can make their parts which are naturally sluggish, rise one minute before the hour [which] nature hath appointed.

4. *Those that are invincibly dull and negligent also.*—Correction may reform the latter, not amend the former. All the whetting in the world can never set a razor's edge on that which hath no steel in it. Such boys he consigneth over to other professions. Shipwrights and boat-makers will choose those crooked pieces of timber which other carpenters refuse. Those may make excellent merchants and mechanics who will not serve for scholars.

### III.

*He is able, diligent, and methodical in his teaching.*—Not leading them rather in a circle than forwards. He minces his precepts, for children to swallow; hanging clogs on the nimbleness of his own soul, that his scholars may go along with him.

\* See some cognate remarks on this subject at the close of FULLER'S "History of the University of Cambridge," (Edition 1840,) p. 252.—EDIT.

## IV.

*He is, and will be known to be, an absolute monarch in his school.*—If cockering mothers proffer him money, to purchase their sons an exemption from his rod, (to live, as it were, in a peculiar, out of their master's jurisdiction,) with disdain he refuseth it, and scorns the late custom in some places of commuting whipping into money, and ransoming boys from the rod at a set price. If he hath a stubborn youth, correction-proof, he debaseth not his authority by contesting with him, but fairly (if he can) puts him away, before his obstinacy hath infected others.

## V.

*He is moderate in inflicting deserved correction.*—Many a schoolmaster better answereth the name *ωαἰδορπίβης* than *ωαἰδαγωγός*, rather “tearing his scholars' flesh with whipping, than giving them good education.” No wonder if his scholars hate the Muses, being presented unto them in the shapes of fiends and furies. Junius\* complains, *de insolenti carnificinâ* of his schoolmaster, by whom *conscindebatur flagris septies aut octies in dies singulos.*† Yea, hear the lamentable verses of poor Tusser, in his own Life:—

“From Paul's I went,  
To Eaton sent,  
To learn straightways  
The Latin phrase ;  
Where fifty-three  
Stripes given to me  
At once I had.

“For fault but small,  
Or none at all,  
It came to pass  
Thus beat I was ;  
See, Udal,‡ see  
The mercy of thee  
To me, poor lad ! ”

Such an Orbilius mars more scholars than he makes. Their tyranny hath caused many tongues to stammer, which spake plain by nature, and whose stuttering at first was nothing else but fears quavering on their speech at their master's presence ; and whose mauling them about their heads hath dulled those who in quickness exceeded their master.

\* In his Life, of his own writing.  
In his Life, of his own writing.  
In his Life, of his own writing.  
In his Life, of his own writing.

† Junius complains of the excessive torture inflicted on him by his schoolmaster, who lacerated him with thongs seven or eight times every day.”—EDIT.  
‡ NICHOLAS UDAL, schoolmaster of Eaton in the reign of king Henry VIII.

## VI.

*He makes his school free to him, who sues to him in forma pauperis.*—And, surely, learning is the greatest alms that can be given. But he is a beast, who, because the poor scholar cannot pay him his wages, pays the scholar in his whipping. Rather are diligent lads to be encouraged with all excitements to learning. This minds me of what I have heard concerning Mr. Bust, that worthy late schoolmaster of Eaton, who would never suffer any wandering, begging scholar (such as justly the statute hath ranked in the fore-front of rogues) to come into his school, but would thrust him out with earnestness, (however privately charitable unto him,) lest his school-boys should be disheartened from their books, by seeing some scholars, after their studying in the University, preferred to beggary.

## VII.

*He spoils not a good school, to make thereof a bad College.*—Therein to teach his scholars logic. For, besides that logic may have an action of trespass against grammar for encroaching on her liberties, syllogisms are solecisms taught in the school; and oftentimes they are forced afterwards, in the University, to unlearn the fumbling skill they had before.

## VIII.

*Out of his school, he is no whit pedantical in carriage or discourse.*—Contenting himself to be rich in Latin, though he doth not jingle with it in every company wherein he comes.

To conclude: let this, amongst other motives, make schoolmasters careful in their place, that the eminencies of their scholars have commended the memories of their schoolmasters to posterity, who, otherwise in obscurity, had altogether been forgotten. Who had ever heard of R. Bond, in Lancashire, but for the breeding of learned Ascham his scholar? \* or of Hartgrave, in Burnley school, in the same county, but because he was the first [who] did teach worthy Dr. Whitaker.† Nor do I honour the memory of Mulcaster for any thing so much as for his scholar, that gulf of learning, bishop Andrews. This made the Athenians, the day before the great feast of Theseus their founder, to sacrifice a ram to the memory of Conidas, his schoolmaster, that first instructed him. ‡

\* GRANT, in *Vitâ Ascham*, p. 69.

+ ASHTON, in the “Life of Whit-

aker,” p. 29.

‡ PLUTARCH., in *Vitâ Thesei*.

## CHAPTER XVII.

## THE GOOD MERCHANT.

THE good merchant is one, who, by his trading, clasbeth the islands to the continent, and one country to another : an excellent gardener, who makes England bear wine, and oil, and spices ; yea, herein goes beyond nature, in causing that *omnis fert omnia tellus*.\* He wrongs neither himself, nor the commonwealth, nor private chapmen who buy commodities of him. As for his behaviour towards the commonwealth, it far surpasses my skill to give any rules thereof ; only this I know, that to export things of necessity, and to bring in foreign needless toys, makes a rich merchant, and a poor kingdom. For the State loseth her radical moisture, and gets little better than sweat in exchange, except the necessaries which are exported be exceeding plentiful ; which then, though necessary in their own nature, become superfluous through their abundance. We will content ourselves to give some general advertisements concerning his behaviour towards his chapmen, whom he useth well in the quantity, quality, and price of the commodities he sells them.

## MAXIM I.

*He wrongs not the buyer in number, weight, or measure.*—These are the landmarks of all trading, which must not be removed ; for such cozenage were worse than open felony. First, because they rob a man of his purse, and never bid him stand. Secondly, because highway-thieves defy—but these pretend—justice. Thirdly, as much as lies in their power, they endeavour to make God accessory to their cozenage, deceiving by pretending his weights. For God is the principal clerk of the market : “All the weights of the bag are his work.” (Prov. xvi. 11.)

## II.

*He never warrants any ware for good but what is so indeed.*—Otherwise he is a thief ; and may be a murderer, if selling such things as are applied inwardly. Besides, in such a case, he counts himself guilty if he selleth such wares as are bad, though

\* “Every country produces all things necessary.”—EDIT.

without his knowledge, if avouching them for good ; because he may, professeth, and is bound to be master in his own mystery ; and therefore in conscience must recompense the buyer's loss, except he gives him an item to buy it at his own adventure.

## III.

*He either tells the faults in his ware, or abates proportionably in the price he demands.*—For then the low value shows the viciousness of it. Yet, commonly, when merchants depart with their commodities, we hear (as in funeral orations) all the virtues, but none of the faults thereof.

## IV.

*He never demands out of distance of the price he intends to take.*—If not always within the touch, yet within the reach, of what he means to sell for. Now we must know, there be four several prices of vendible things : First, the price of the market, which ebbs and flows according to the plenty or scarcity of coin, commodities, and chapmen. Secondly, the price of friendship ; which, perchance, is more giving than selling, and therefore not so proper at this time. Thirdly, the price of fancy ; as twenty pounds, or more, for a dog or hawk, when no such inherent worth can naturally be in them, but by the buyer's and seller's fancy reflecting on them. Yet, I believe, the money may be lawfully taken : First, because the seller sometimes, on those terms, is as loath to forego it, as the buyer is willing to have it. And I know no standard herein, whereby men's affections may be measured. Secondly, it being a matter of pleasure, and men able and willing, let them pay for it : *Volenti non fit injuria.*\* Lastly, there is the price of cozenage ; which our merchant from his heart detests and abhors.

## V.

*He makes not advantage of his chapman's ignorance, chiefly if referring himself to his honesty.*—Where the seller's conscience is all the buyer's skill ; who makes him both seller and judge, so that he doth not so much ask as order what he must pay. When one told old bishop Latimer, that the cutler had cozened him, in making him pay two-pence for a knife not (in those days) worth a penny ; "No," quoth Latimer, "he cozened not me, but his own conscience." On the other side St. Augustine

\* "No injury is inflicted on him, who, in matters of choice, acts according to his own pleasure."—EDIT.

tells us of a seller, who out of ignorance asked for a book far less than it was worth ; and the buyer (conceive himself to be the man, if you please) of his own accord gave him the full value thereof.\*

## VI.

*He makes not the buyer pay the shot for his prodigality.*—As when the merchant, through his own ignorance or ill-husbandry, hath bought dear, he will not bring in his unnecessary expenses on the buyer's score ; and in such a case he is bound to sell cheaper than he bought.

## VII.

*Selling by retail, he may justify the taking of greater gain.*—Because of his care, pains, and cost of fetching those wares from the fountain, and in parcelling and dividing them. Yet, because retailers trade commonly with those that have least skill [in] what they buy, and commonly sell to the poorer sort of people, they must be careful not to grate on their necessity.

But how long shall I be retailing out rules to this merchant ? It would employ a casuist an apprenticeship of years. Take our Saviour's wholesale rule : “ Whatsoever ye would have men do unto you, do you unto them ; for this is the law and the prophets.”

\* *De Trinitate*, lib. xiii. cap. 3.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

## THE GOOD YEOMAN.

THE good yeoman is a gentleman in ore, whom the next age may see refined ; and is the wax capable of a genteel [gentle] impression, when the prince shall stamp it. Wise Solon (who accounted Tellus the Athenian the most happy man,\* for living privately on his own lands) would surely have pronounced the English yeomanry “a fortunate condition,” living in the temperate zone betwixt greatness and want ; an estate of people almost peculiar to England. France and Italy are like a die, which hath no points between cinque and ace,—nobility and peasantry. Their walls, though high, must needs be hollow, wanting filling-stones. Indeed, Germany hath her boors, like our yeomen ; but, [by] a tyrannical appropriation of nobility to some few ancient families, their yeomen are excluded from ever rising higher, to clarify their bloods. In England, the temple of honour is bolted against none who have passed through the temple of virtue ; nor is a capacity to be genteel [gentle] denied to our yeoman, who thus behaves himself :—

## MAXIM I.

*He wears russet clothes, but makes golden payment.*—Having tin in his buttons, and silver in his pocket. If he chance to appear in clothes above his rank, it is to grace some great man with his service ; and then he blusheth at his own bravery. Otherwise, he is the surest landmark whence foreigners may take aim of the ancient English customs ; the gentry more floating after foreign fashions.

## II.

*In his house he is bountiful both to strangers and to poor people.*—Some hold, when hospitality died in England, she gave her last groan amongst the yeomen of Kent. And still, at our yeoman’s table, you shall have as many joints as dishes ; no meat disguised with strange sauces ; no straggling joint of a sheep in the midst of a pasture of grass, beset with salads on every side ; but solid, substantial food. No servitors (more

\* HERODOTUS, lib. i. p. 12.

nimble with their hands, than the guests with their teeth) take away meat, before stomachs are taken away. Here you have that which in itself is good, made better by the store of it, and best by the welcome to it.

## III.

*He hath a great stroke in making a knight of the shire.*—Good reason, for he makes a whole line in the subsidy-book ; where, whatsoever he is rated, he pays without any regret, not caring how much his purse is let blood, so it be done by the advice of the physicians of the State.

## IV.

*He seldom goes far abroad, and his credit stretcheth further than his travel.*—He goes not to London, but *se defendendo* to save himself of a fine, being returned of a jury ; where seeing the king once, he prays for him ever afterwards.

## V.

*In his own country he is a main man in juries.*—Where, if the judge please to open his eyes in matter of law, he needs not to be led by the nose in matters of fact. He is very observant of the judge's *item*, when it follows the truth's *imprimis* ; otherwise, (though not mutinous in a jury,) he cares not whom he displeaseth, so he pleaseth his own conscience.

## VI.

*He improveth his land to a double value, by his good husbandry.*—Some grounds that wept with water, or frowned with thorns, by draining the one, and clearing the other, he makes both to laugh and sing with corn. By marl and limestones burnt, he bettereth his ground ; and his industry worketh miracles, by turning stones into bread. Conquest and good husbandry both enlarge the king's dominions ; the one, by the sword, making the acres more in number ; the other, by the plough, making the same acres more in value. Solomon saith, “The king himself is maintained by husbandry.” Pythis, a king, having discovered rich mines in his kingdom, employed all his people in digging of them ; whence tilling was wholly neglected, insomuch as a great famine ensued. His queen, sensible of the calamities of the country, invited the king her husband to dinner, as he came home hungry from overseeing his workmen in the mines. She so contrived it, that the bread and meat were most artificially made of gold ; and the king was much delighted with the conceit thereof, till at last he called for real

meat to satisfy his hunger. “ Nay,” said the queen, “ if you employ all your subjects in your mines, you must expect to feed upon gold ; for nothing else can your kingdom afford.” \*

## VII.

*In time of famine, he is the Joseph of the country, and keeps the poor from starving.*—Then he tameth † his stacks of corn, which not his covetousness but providence hath reserved for time of need ; and to his poor neighbours abateth somewhat of the high price of the market. The neighbour-gentry court him for his acquaintance ; which either he modestly waveth, or thankfully accepteth, but no way greedily desireth. He insults not on the ruins of a decayed gentleman, but pities and relieves him ; and, as he is called “ Goodman,” he desires to answer to the name, and to be so indeed.

## VIII.

*In war, though he serveth on foot, he is ever mounted on a high spirit.*—As being a slave to none, and a subject only to his own prince. Innocence and independence make a brave spirit ; whereas, otherwise, one must ask his leave to be valiant on whom [one] depends. Therefore, if a State run up all to noblemen and gentlemen, so that the husbandmen be only mere labourers or cottagers, (which one calls “ but housed beggars,” ‡) it may have good cavalry, but never good bands of foot ; so that their armies will be like those birds called *apodes*, “ without feet,” always only flying on their wings of horse. Wherefore, to make good infantry, it requireth men bred, not in a servile or indigent fashion, but in some free and plentiful manner. Wisely, therefore, did that knowing prince, king Henry VII., provide laws for the increase of his yeomanry, that his kingdom should not be like to coppice-woods ; where, the staddles § being left too thick, all runs to bushes and briars, and there is little clean underwood. For, enacting, that houses used to husbandry should be kept up with a competent proportion of land, he did secretly sow Hydra’s teeth ; whereupon, according to the poet’s fiction, should rise up armed men for the service of this kingdom.

\* PLUTARCHUS, *De Virtut. Mulierum, exemplo ultimo.* † Perhaps *teaming*, “ bringing them home ;” or, more probably, *teeming*, in the ancient meaning of “ pouring forth,” &c., which agrees well with the rest of the sentence.—EDIT.

‡ BACON’s “ Henry VII.,” p. 74.

§ Our old lexicographers considered *standards*, *standis*, and *staddles*, as synonymous words, signifying, “ trees reserved, at the felling of woods, for the growth of timber ;” and, in this sense, each of them is still employed by woodmen.—EDIT.

## CHAPTER XIX.

## THE HANDICRAFTSMAN.

HE is a necessary member in a commonwealth. For though nature, which hath armed most other creatures, sent man naked into the world, yet in giving him hands, and wit to use them, in effect she gave him shells, scales, paws, claws, horns, tusks, with all offensive and defensive weapons of beasts, fish, and fowl ; which, by the help of his hands in imitation, he may provide for himself ; and herein the skill of our artisan doth consist.

## MAXIM I.

*His trade is such whereby he provides things necessary for mankind.*—What St. Paul saith of the *natural*, is also true of the *politic*, body : Those members of the body are much more necessary which seem most feeble.\* Mean trades for profit are most necessary in the State, and a house may better want a gallery than a kitchen. The Philistines knew this when they massacred all the smiths in Israel, who might worse be spared than all the usurers therein ; and whose hammers nail the commonwealth together, being necessary both in peace and war.

## II.

*Or else his trade contributeth to man's lawful pleasure.*—God is not so hard a Master, but that he alloweth his servants sauce (besides hunger) to eat with their meat.

## III.

*But in no case will he be of such a trade which is a mere pander to man's lust.*—And only serves their wantonness (which is pleasure run stark mad) and foolish curiosity. Yet are there too many extant of such professions ; who, one would think, should stand in daily fear lest the world should turn wise, and so all trades be cashiered, but that (be it spoken to their shame !) it is as safe a tenure to hold a livelihood by men's riot, as by their necessity.

\* 1 Cor. xii.

## IV.

*The wares he makes show good to the eye, but prove better in the use.*—For he knows if he sets his mark (the Tower-stamp of his credit) on any bad wares, he sets a deeper brand on his own conscience. Nothing hath more debased the credit of our English cloths beyond the seas, than the deceitfulness in making them, since the fox hath crept under the fleece of the sheep.

## V.

*By his ingenuousness, he leaves his art better than he found it.*

—Herein the Hollanders are excellent; where children get their living, when but newly they have gotten their life, by their industry. Indeed, nature may seem to have made those Netherlanders the younger brethren of mankind; allowing them little land, and that also standing in daily fear of a double deluge,—of the sea and the Spaniard. But such is their painfulness and ingenuity, hating laziness as much as they love liberty, that what commodities grow not on their country by nature they graft on it by art, and have wonderfully improved all making of manufactures, stuffs, clocks, watches: these latter at first were made so great and heavy, it was rather a burden than an ornament to wear them, though, since, watches have been made as light and little as many that wear them make of their time.

## VI.

*He is willing to communicate his skill to posterity.*—An invention, though found, is lost if not imparted. But, as it is reported of some old toads, that, before their death, they suck up the jelly in their own heads, which otherwise would be hardened into a precious stone, out of spite, that men should receive no benefit thereby; so some envious artisans will have their cunning die with them, that none may be the better for it; and had rather all mankind should lose, than any man gain, by them.

## VII.

*He seldom attaineth to any very great estate.*—Except his trade hath some outlets and excursions into wholesale and merchandise; otherwise, mere artificers cannot heap up much wealth. It is difficult for gleaners, without stealing whole sheaves, to fill a barn. His chief wealth consisteth in enough, and that he can live comfortably, and leave his children the inheritance of their education.

## VIII.

*Yet he is a grand benefactor to the commonwealth.*—England, in former ages, like a dainty dame, partly out of state, but more out of laziness, would not suckle the fruit of her own body, to make the best to battel and improve her own commodities, but put them out to nurse to the Netherlanders, who were well paid for their pains. In those days, the sword and the plough so took up all men's employments, that clothing was wholly neglected, and scarce any other webs to be found in houses than what the spiders did make. But, since, she hath seen and mended her error, making the best use of her own wool; and, indeed, the riches of a kingdom doth consist in driving the home-commodities thereof as far as they will go, working them to their very perfection, employing more handicrafts thereby. The sheep feeds more with his fleece than his flesh; doing the one but once, but the other once a-year,—many families subsisting by the working thereof. Let not meaner persons be displeased with reading those verses wherewith queen Elizabeth herself was so highly affected, when, in the one-and-twentieth year of her reign, she came in progress to Norwich,\* wherein a child, representing the State of the city, spake to her Highness as followeth:—

“ Most gracious prince, undoubted sovereign queen !  
 Our only joy, next God, and chief defence !  
 In this small show our whole estate is seen ;  
 The wealth we have, we find, proceeds from hence :—  
 The idle hand hath here no place to feed,  
 The painful wight hath still to serve his need.

“ Again : our seat denies us traffic here.  
 The sea, too near, decides † us from the rest.  
 So weak we were within this dozen year,  
 That care did quench the courage of the best :  
 But good advice hath taught these ‡ little hands  
 To rend in twain the force of pining bands. §

\* HOLLINGSHED, p. 1290.      + The old word in its Latin signification, from *de* et *cedo*, *decidere*, “to cut off.”—EDIT.      † Sixteen little children were there presented to her Majesty, eight spinning worsted, and eight knitting yarn hose.      § By some persons this entire phrase, possessing much of the circumlocution of that age, is understood as tantamount to *keeping the wolf from the door*, or *driving away want*. But *pin-ing bands*, perhaps, is an allusion to some part of the spinning operations in which the children were then engaged. It is not improbable, that it refers to the dexterity and *force* necessary for opening the “tops,” prior to breaking them into *slivers*, or smaller shreds, suitable for being held between the two fore-fingers of the right hand when in the act of spinning. Our long wool, the valuable staple for worsted fabrics, has always been prepared by the wool-

“ From combed wool we draw this slender thread,  
 From thence the looms have dealing with the same,  
 And thence again in order do proceed  
 These several works which skilful art doth frame :  
 And all to drive dame Need into her cave  
 Our heads and hands together labour'd have.

“ We bought before the things which now we sell :  
 These slender imps,—their works do pass the waves :  
 God's peace and thine we hold, and prosper well,  
 Of every mouth the hands the charges saves :  
 Thus, through thy help and aid of Power Divine,  
 Doth Norwich live, whose hearts and goods are thine.”

We have cause to hope, that, as we have seen the cities Dornick and Arras \* brought over into England, so posterity may see all Flanders brought hither ; I mean, that their works shall be here imitated, and that either our land shall be taught to bear foreign commodities, or our people taught to forbear the using of them.

I should now come to give the description of the day-labourer, of whom we have only a dearth in a plentiful harvest ; but, seeing his character is so co-incident with the hired servant, it may well be spared. And now we will rise from the hand to the arm, and come to describe the soldier.

combers, for the use of hand-spinners, in small bundles, called *tops*, nearly uniform in size and weight, and conical in shape, curiously bound around, and fastened at the top with the longest and most attenuated parts of its own material. This was the form of preparing long wool for use, from the good days of the famous bishop Blase, till modern improvements in machinery have effected great changes in our ancient and somewhat circuitous operations, and in the terms by which they were formerly designated.—**EDIT.**

• According to PHILLIPS and KERSEY,  
 “ *Dornick* is a kind of stuff used for curtains, carpets, and hangings ; so called from Doornick, or Tournay, a city in Flanders, where it was first made.—*Arras*, a sort of rich tapestry made at Arras, a large city of the county of Artois in Flanders.”—**EDIT.**

## CHAPTER XX.

## THE GOOD SOLDIER.

A SOLDIER is one of a lawful, necessary, commendable, and honourable profession ; yea, God himself may seem to be one free of the company of soldiers, in that he styleth himself, “a Man of war.” (Exod. xv. 3 ; Isaiah xlii. 13.) Now though many hate soldiers as the twigs of the rod war, wherewith God scourgeth wanton countries into repentance ; yet is their calling so needful, that were not *some* soldiers, we must be *all* soldiers, daily employed to defend our own, the world would grow so licentious.

## MAXIM I.

*He keepeth a clear and quiet conscience in his breast, which otherwise will gnaw out the roots of all valour.*—For, vicious soldiers are compassed with enemies on all sides ; their foes without them, and an ambush within them of fleshly lusts, which, as St. Peter saith, “fight against the soul.” (1 Peter ii. 11.) None fitter to go to war, than those who have made their peace with God in Christ. For such a man’s soul is an impregnable fort. It cannot be scaled with ladders, for it reacheth up to heaven ; nor be broken by batteries, for it is walled with brass ; nor undermined by pioneers, for he is founded on a rock ; nor betrayed by treason, for faith itself keeps it ; nor be burnt by granadoes, for he can quench the fiery darts of the devil ; nor be forced by famine, for “a good conscience is a continual feast.”

## II.

*He chiefly avoids those sins to which soldiers are taxed as most subject.*—Namely, common swearing,—which impaireth one’s credit by degrees, and maketh all his promises not to be trusted ; for he who *for no profit* will sin against God, *for small profit* will trespass against his neighbour ;—drinking, whoring. When valiant Zisca, near Pilsen in Bohemia, fought against his enemies, he commanded the women who followed his army, to cast their kerchiefs and partlets\* on the ground ; wherein

\* According to PHILLIPS and KERSEY, “*Partlet*, (in old statutes) is the loose collar of a doublet, to be set on or taken off by itself ; also a kind of neck-kerchief or band.”—EDIT.

their enemies being entangled by their spurs, (for though horsemen, they were forced to alight and fight on foot, through the roughness of the place,) were slain before they could unloose their feet.\* A deep moral may be gathered hence; and women have often been the nets to catch and ensnare the souls of many martial men.

## III.

*He counts his prince's lawful command to be his sufficient warrant to fight.*—In a defensive war, when his country is hostilely invaded, it is pity but *his* neck should hang in suspense with his conscience *that* doubts to fight.† In offensive war, though the case be harder, the common soldier is not to dispute, but do, his prince's command.‡ Otherwise princes, before they levy an army of soldiers, must first levy an army of casuists and confessors to satisfy each scrupulous soldier in point of right to the war; and the most cowardly will be the most conscientious, to multiply doubts eternally. Besides, causes of war are so complicated and perplexed, so many things falling in the prosecution, as may alter the original state thereof; and private soldiers have neither calling nor ability to dive into such mysteries. But if the conscience of a counsellor or commander-in-chief remonstrates in himself the unlawfulness of this war, he is bound humbly to represent to his prince his reasons against it.

## IV.

*He esteemeth all hardship easy, through hopes of victory.*—Moneys are the sinews of war; yet if these sinews should chance to be shrunk, and pay casually fall short, he takes a fit of this convulsion patiently. He is contented, though in cold weather his hands must be their own fire, and warm themselves with working; though he be better armed against their enemies than the weather, and his corslet wholler than his clothes; though he hath more fasts and vigils in his almanack than the Romish church did ever enjoy. He patiently endureth drought, for desire of honour; and one thirst quencheth another. In a word: though much indebted to his own back and belly, and unable to pay them, yet he hath credit himself, and confidently runs on ticket with himself, hoping the next victory will discharge all scores with advantage.

\* Fox's "Acts and Monuments," p. 646.  
homo miles.—TERTULLIANI *Apol.* cap. ii.  
lib. v. cap. 33.

† *In publicos hostes omnis*  
‡ AMESIUS, *Cas. Conscien.*

## V.

*He looks at (and also through) his wages, at God's glory, and his country's good.*—He counts his pay an honourable addition, but no valuable compensation for his pains. For what proportion is there betwixt four shillings a-week, and adventuring his life? I cannot see how *their* calling can be lawful, *who* for greater wages will fight on any side against their own king and cause. Yea, as false witnesses were hired against our blessed Saviour,\* (money will make the mouths of men plead against their Maker!) so were the giants now in the world; who, as the poets feigned, made war against God himself; and should they offer great pay, they would not want mercenary soldiers to assist them.

## VI.

*He attends with all readiness on the commands of his general.*—Rendering up his own judgment, in obedience to the will and pleasure of his leader, and by an implicit faith believing all is best which he enjoineth; lest otherwise he be served as the French soldier was in Scotland, some eighty years since, who first mounted the bulwark of a fort besieged; whereupon ensued the gaining of the fort: but marshal de Thermes, the French general, first knighted him, and then hanged him within an hour after, because he had done it without commandment.†

## VII.

*He will not in a bravery expose himself to needless peril.*—It is madness to hollow in the ears of sleeping temptation, to awaken it against one's self, or to go out of his calling to find a danger. But if a danger meets him as he walks in his vocation, he neither stands still, starts aside, nor steps backward, but either goes over it with valour, or under it with patience. All single duels he detesteth, as having, first, no command in God's word; yea, this arbitrary deciding causes by the sword subverts the fundamental laws of the Scripture; secondly, no example in God's word,—that of David and Goliath moving in a higher sphere, as extraordinary; thirdly, it tempts God to work a miracle for man's pleasure, and to invert the course of nature, whereby, otherwise, the stronger will beat the weaker; fourthly, each dueller challengeth his king as unable or unwilling legally to right him, and therefore he usurps the office himself; fifthly, if slaying, he hazards his neck to the halter; if

\* Matt. xxviii. 15.

† HOLLMAN in his book of "the Ambassador."

slain, in heat of malice, without repentance, he adventures his soul to the devil.

OBJECTION.—“But there are some intricate cases, (as in titles of land,) which cannot otherwise be decided. Seeing, therefore, that in such difficulties the right in question cannot be delivered by the midwifery of any judicial proceedings, then it must (with Julius Cæsar in his mother’s belly) be cut out, and be determined by the sword.”

ANSWER.—Such a right may better be lost, than to light a candle from hell to find it out, if the judges cannot find a middle way to part it betwixt them. Besides, in such a case, duels are no *medium proportionatum* to find out the truth, as never appointed by God to that purpose. Nor doth it follow, that he hath the best in right who hath the best in fight; for he that reads the lawfulness of actions by their events, holds the wrong end of the book upwards.

OBJECTION.—“But, suppose an army of thirty thousand infidels ready to fight against ten thousand Christians, yet so that at last the infidels are contented to try the day upon the valour of a single champion; whether, in such a case, may not a Christian undertake to combat with him? the rather, because the treble odds before is thereby reduced to terms of equality; and so the victory is made more probable.”

ANSWER.—The victory was more probable before; because it is more likely God will bless his own means, than means of man’s appointing: and it is his prerogative to give victory, as well by few as by many. Probability of conquest is not to be measured by the eye of human reason, contrary to the square of God’s word. Besides, I question whether it be lawful for a Christian army to derive their right of fighting God’s battles to any single man. For the title every man hath to promote God’s glory, is so invested and inherent in his own particular person, that he cannot pass it over to another. None may appear in God’s service by an attorney; and when religion is at the stake, there must be no lookers-on, except impotent people, who also help by their prayers; and every one is bound to lay his shoulders to the work. Lastly, would to God no duels might be fought till this case came into question! But how many daily fall out upon a more false, slight, and flitting ground, than the sands of Calais whereon they fight? especially, seeing there is an honourable court appointed, or some other equivalent way, for taking up such quarrels, and allowing reparations to the party injured.

OBJECTION.—“But reputation is so spiritual a thing, it is inestimable, and honour falls not under valuation. Besides, to complain to the civil magistrate sheweth no manhood, but is like a child’s crying to his father, when he is only beaten by his equal; and my enemy’s forced acknowledgment of his fault (enjoined him by the court) shows rather his submission to the laws than to me. But if I can civilize his rudeness by my sword, and chastise him into submission, then he sings his penitential song in the true tune, and it comes naturally indeed.”

ANSWER.—Honourable persons in that court are the most competent judges of honour; and though credit be as tender as the apple of the eye, yet such curious oculists can cure a blemish therein. And why, I pray, is it more disgrace to repair to the magistrate for redress in reputation, than to have recourse to him in actions of trespass? The pretence of a forced submission is nothing, all submissions having *aliquid violentum* in them; and even the evangelical repentance of God’s servants hath a mixture of legal terror frightening them thereto.

OBJECTION.—“But gownmen speak, out of an antipathy they bear to fighting. Should we be ruled by them, we must break all our swords into penknives; and lawyers, to enlarge their gains, send prohibitions, to remove suits from the camps to their courts. Divines are not to be consulted with herein, as ignorant of the principles of honour.”

ANSWER.—Indeed, “honour” is a word of course in the talk of roaring boys; and pure enough in itself, except their mouths soil it by often using of it. But, indeed, God is the Fountain of honour, God’s word the charter of honour, and godly men the best judges of it; nor is it any stain of cowardliness for one to fear hell and damnation.

We may therefore conclude, that the laws of duelling, as the laws of drinking, had their original from the devil; and therefore the declining of needless quarrels, in our soldier, is no abatement of honour. I commend *his* discretion and valour *who*, walking in London-streets, met a gallant, who cried to him, a pretty distance beforehand, “I will have the wall.” “Yea,” answered he, “and take the house too, if you can but agree with the landlord.” But when God and his prince calls for him, our soldier—

#### VIII.

*Had rather die ten times than once survive his credit.*—Though life be sweet, it shall not flatter the palate of his soul, as, with

the sweetness of life, to make him swallow down the bitterness of an eternal disgrace. He begrudgeth not to get to his side a probability of victory, by the certainty of his own death ; and flieh from nothing so much as from the mention of flying. And though some say, “ He is a madman that will purchase honour so dearly with his blood, as that he cannot live to enjoy what he hath bought ; ” our soldier knows, that he shall possess the reward of his valour with God in heaven, and also, making the world his executor, leave to it the rich inheritance of his memory.

## IX.

*Yet, in some cases, he counts it no disgrace to yield, where it is impossible to conquer.*—As when swarms of enemies crowd about him, so that he shall rather be stifled than wounded to death. In such a case, if quarter be offered him, he may take it with more honour than the other can give it ; and if he throws up his desperate game, he may happily win the next : whereas if he playeth it out to the last, he shall certainly lose it and himself. But if he be to fall into the hand of a barbarous enemy, whose giving him quarter is but reprieving him for a more ignominious death, he had rather disburse his life at the present, than to take day \* to fall into the hands of such remorseless creditors.

## X.

*He makes none the object of his cruelty, who cannot be the object of his fear.*—Lions, they say, except forced with hunger, will not prey on women and children ; † though I would wish none to try the truth hereof. The truly valiant will not hurt women or infants, nor will they be cruel to old men. What conquest is it to strike *him* up who stands but on one leg, and hath the other foot in the grave ? But arrant cowards (such as would conquer victory itself, if it should stand in their way as they fly) count themselves never evenly matched except they have threefold odds on their side, and esteem their enemies never disarmed till they be dead. Such love to show a nature steeped in gall of passion, and display the ignoble tyranny of prevailing dastards ; these, being thus valiant against no resistance, will make no resistance when they meet with true valour.

\* *To take day*, “ to prolong time,” “ to defer.”—ENIT.  
Hist., lib. viii. cap. 16.

† PLINII Nat.

## XII.

*He counts it murder to kill any in cold blood.*—Indeed, in taking cities by assault, (especially when soldiers have suffered long in a hard siege,) it is pardonable what present passion doth with a sudden thrust; but a premeditated back-blow in cold blood is base. Some excuse there is for blood enraged; and no wonder if that scaldeth which boileth. But when men shall call a consultation in their soul, and issue thence a deliberate act, the more advised the deed is the less advised it is, when men raise their own passions, and are not raised by them; specially, if fair quarter be first granted; an alms which he who gives to-day may crave to-morrow; yea, he that hath the hilt in his hand in the morning, may have the point at his throat ere night.

## XII.

*He doth not barbarously abuse the bodies of his dead enemies.*—We find that Hercules was the first (the most valiant are ever the most merciful!) that ever suffered his enemies to carry away their dead bodies, after they had been put to the sword.\* Belike, before his time, they cruelly cut the corpses in pieces, or cast them to the wild beasts.

## XIII.

*In time of plenty he provides for want hereafter.*—Yet, generally, soldiers (as if they counted one treasurer in an army were enough) so hate covetousness that they cannot affect providence for the future, and come home with more marks in their bodies than pence in their pockets.

## XIV.

*He is willing and joyful to embrace peace on good conditions.*—The procreation of peace, and not the satisfying of men's lusts and liberties, is the end of war. Yet how many, having war for their possession, desire a perpetuity thereof! Wiser men than king Henry the Eighth's fool use to cry in fair weather; whose harvest being only in storms, they themselves desire to raise them: wherefore, fearing peace will starve whom war hath fatted, and to render themselves the more useful, they prolong discord to the utmost, and could wish, when swords are once drawn, that all scabbards might be cut asunder.

\* PLUTARCH, in *Vita Thesei*, p. 5.

## XV.

*He is as quiet and painful in peace, as courageous in war.*—If he hath not gotten already enough whereon comfortably to subsist, he re-betakes himself to his former calling [which] he had before the war began. The wielding of his sword hath not made him unwieldy to do any other work, and put his bones out of joint to take pains. Hence comes it to pass, that some take by-courses on the high-ways; and Death, whom they honourably fought\* for in the field, meets them in a worse place.

But we leave our soldier, seeking by his virtues to ascend from a private place, by the degrees of serjeant, lieutenant, captain, colonel, till he come to be a general; and then, in the next book, God willing, you shall have his example.

## CHAPTER XXI.

## THE GOOD SEA-CAPTAIN.

His military part is concurrent with that of the soldier already described. He differs only in some sea-properties, which we will now set down. Conceive him now in a man-of-war, with his letters of mart, well armed, victualled, and appointed, and see how he acquits himself.

## MAXIM I.

*The more power he hath, the more careful he is not to abuse it.*—Indeed, a sea-captain is a king in the island of a ship; supreme judge, above appeal, in causes civil and criminal; and is seldom brought to an account, in courts of justice on land, for injuries done to his own men at sea.

## II.

*He is careful in observing of the Lord's-day.*—He hath a watch in his heart, though no bells in a steeple, to proclaim that day by ringing to prayers. Sir Francis Drake, in three years' sailing about the world, lost one whole day, which was scarce considerable in so long time.† It is to be feared, some captains

\* In both the third and fourth editions this word is *fought*, and not *sought*.—  
EDIT.

† Manuscript of Mr. Fortescue, who went with him.

at sea lose a day every week, one in seven, neglecting the sabbath.

## III.

*He is as pious and thankful when a tempest is past, as devout when it is present.*—Not clamorous to receive mercies, and tongue-tied to return thanks. Many mariners are calm in a storm, and storm in a calm, blustering with oaths. In a tempest, it comes to *their* turn to be religious, *whose* piety is but a fit of the wind; and when that is allayed, their devotion is ended.

## IV.

*Escaping many dangers makes him not presumptuous to run into them.*—Not like those seamen who (as if their hearts were made of those rocks they have often sailed by) are so always in death [that] they never think of it. These, in their navigations, observe that it is far hotter under the tropics in the coming to the Line, than under the Line itself; and in like manner they conceive, that the fear and fancy in preparing for death is more terrible than death itself, which makes them by degrees desperately to contemn it.

## V.

*In taking a prize, he most prizeth the men's lives whom he takes.*—Though some of them may chance to be Negroes or savages. It is the custom of some to cast them overboard, and there is an end of them: for the dumb fishes will tell no tales. But the murder is not so soon drowned as the men. What, is a brother by false blood no kin? A savage hath God to his Father by creation, though not the church to his mother; and God will revenge his innocent blood. But our captain counts the image of God, nevertheless, his image cut in ebony as if done in ivory; and in the blackest Moors he sees the representation of the King of heaven.

## VI.

*In dividing the gains, he wrongs none who took pains to get them.*—Not shifting off his poor mariners with nothing, or giving them only the garbage of the prize, and keeping all the flesh to himself. In time of peace, he quietly returns home; and turns not to the trade of pirates, who are the worst sea-vermin, and the devil's water-rats.

## VII.

*His voyages are not only for profit, but some for honour and knowledge.*—To make discoveries of new countries, imitating the worthy Peter [Christopher] Columbus. Before his time, the world was cut off at the middle; Hercules's pillars (which indeed are the navel) being made the feet and utmost bounds of the continent, till his successful industry enlarged it.

*Primus ab infusis quod terra emerserat undis  
Nuncius adveniens ipsa Columba fuit.\*  
Occiduis primus qui terram invenit in undis  
Nuncius adveniens ipse Columbus erat.†*

Our sea-captain is likewise ambitious to perfect what the other began. He counts it a disgrace, seeing all mankind is one family, sundry countries but several rooms, that we who dwell in the parlour, (so he counts Europe,) should not know the outlodgings of the same house, and the world be scarce acquainted with itself before it be dissolved from itself at the day of judgment.

## VIII.

*He daily sees, and duly considers, God's wonders in the deep.*—Tell me, ye naturalists, Who sounded the first march and retreat to the tide, “Hither shalt thou come, and no further?” Why doth not the water recover his right over the earth, being higher in nature? Whence came the salt, and who first boiled it, which made so much brine? When the winds are not only wild in a storm, but even stark-mad in an hurricane, who is it

\* Gen. viii. 11.      † Of this epigram I have met with two metrical versions, varying in merit, but either of them sufficiently expressive of the point conveyed by the original.

“The Dove, **COLUMBA**, first the tidings brought  
To Noah's ark, *The waters now subside!*  
**COLUMBUS**, too, what some had vainly sought,  
Was he who first the Western World descried.”

“When Ararat its head uprear'd,  
Of Noah's Flood the water-mark,  
The Dove (sweet **COLUMBINE**!) appear'd,  
And bore a token to the Ark.  
**COLUMBUS** now, a second Dove,  
(For unknown shores his sails unfurl'd,)  
Tokens has brought, which richly prove  
The treasures of the Western World.”

that restores them again to their wits, and brings them asleep in a calm? Who made the mighty whales, which swim in a sea of water, and have a sea of oil swimming in them? Who first taught the water to imitate the creatures on land? so that the sea is the stable of horse-fishes, the stall of kine-fishes, the sty of hog-fishes, the kennel of dog-fishes, and, in all things, the sea the ape of the land! Whence grows the amber-gris in the sea? which is not so hard to find where it is, as to know what it is. Was not God the first shipwright? and all vessels on the water descended from the loins (or ribs rather) of Noah's ark; or else who durst be so bold, with a few crooked boards nailed together, a stick standing upright, and a rag tied to it, to adventure into the ocean? What loadstone first touched the loadstone? Or how first fell it in love with the North, rather affecting that cold climate than the pleasant East, or fruitful South, or West? How comes that stone to know more than men, and find the way to the land in a mist? In most of these, men take sanctuary at *occulta qualitas*;\* and complain that the room is dark, when their eyes are blind. Indeed, they are God's wonders; and that seaman the greatest wonder of all for his blockishness, who, seeing them daily, neither takes notice of them, admires at them, nor is thankful for them.

\* "In some secret quality."—EDIT.

## CHAPTER XXII.

## THE LIFE OF SIR FRANCIS DRAKE.

FRANCIS DRAKE was born nigh South Tavistock in Devonshire, and brought up in Kent;\* God dividing the honour betwixt two counties, that the one might have his birth, and the other his education. His father, being a minister, fled into Kent, for fear of the Six Articles, wherein the sting of Popery still remained in England, though the teeth thereof were knocked out, and the Pope's supremacy abolished. Coming into Kent, he bound his son Francis apprentice to the master of a small bark, which traded into France and Zealand, where he underwent a hard service; and pains with patience in his youth, did knit the joints of his soul, and made them more solid and compacted. His master, dying unmarried, in reward of his industry, bequeathed his bark unto him for a legacy.

For some time he continued his master's profession; but the narrow seas were a prison for so large a spirit, born for greater undertakings. He soon grew weary of his bark; which would scarce go alone, but as it crept along by the shore: wherefore, selling it, he unfortunately ventured most of his estate with captain John Hawkins into the West Indies, in 1567; whose goods were taken by the Spaniards at St. John de Ulva, and he himself scarce escaped with life: the king of Spain being so tender in those parts, that the least touch doth wound him; and so jealous of the West Indies, his wife, that willingly he would have none look upon her: he therefore used them with the greater severity.

Drake was persuaded by the minister of his ship, that he might lawfully recover in value of the king of Spain, and repair his losses upon him any where else. The case was clear in sea-divinity; and few are such infidels, as not to believe doctrines which make for their own profit. Whereupon Drake, though a poor private man, hereafter undertook to revenge himself on so mighty a monarch; who, as not contented that the sun riseth and setteth in his dominions, may seem to desire to make all

\* SIR FRANCIS DRAKE'S NEPHEW, in the Description of his third Voyage: Epistle to the Reader.

his own where he shineth. And now let us see how a dwarf, standing on the mount of God's providence, may prove an over-match for a giant.

After two or three several voyages to gain intelligence in the West Indies, and some prizes taken, at last he effectually set forward from Plymouth with two ships, the one of seventy, the other twenty-five, tons, and seventy-three men and boys in both. He made with all speed and secrecy to Nombre de Dios, as loath to put the town to too much charge (which he knew they would willingly bestow) in providing before-hand for his entertainment ; which city was then the granary of the West Indies, wherein the golden harvest brought from Panama was hoarded up till it could be conveyed into Spain. They came hard aboard the shore, and lay quiet all night, intending to attempt the town in the dawning of the day.

But he was forced to alter his resolution, and assault it sooner ; for he heard his men muttering amongst themselves of the strength and greatness of the town : and when men's heads are once fly-blown with buzzes of suspicion, the vermin multiply instantly, and one jealousy begets another. Wherefore, he raised them from their nest before they had hatched their fears ; and, to put away those conceits, he persuaded them it was day-dawning when the moon rose, and instantly set on the town, and won it, being unwalled. In the market-place the Spaniards saluted them with a volley of shot ; Drake returned their greeting with a flight of arrows, the best and ancient English compliment, which drove their enemies away. Here Drake received a dangerous wound, though he valiantly concealed it a long time ; knowing if his heart stooped, his men's would fall, and loath to leave off the action, wherein if so bright an opportunity once setteth, it seldom riseth again. But at length his men forced him to return to his ship, that his wound might be dressed ; and this unhappy accident defeated the whole design. Thus victory sometimes slips through *their* fingers *who* have caught it in their hands.

But his valour would not let him give over the project as long as there was either life or warmth in it ; and therefore, having received intelligence from the Negroes called Symerons, of many mules'-lading of gold and silver, which was to be brought from Panama, he, leaving competent numbers to man his ships, went on land with the rest, and bestowed himself in the woods by the way as they were to pass, and so intercepted and carried away an infinite mass of gold. As for the silver, which was not

portable over the mountains, they digged holes in the ground and hid it therein.

There want not those who love to beat down the price of every honourable action, though they themselves never mean to be chapmen. These cry up Drake's *fortune* herein to cry down his *valour*; as if this his performance were nothing, wherein a golden opportunity ran his head, with his long forelock, into Drake's hands beyond expectation. But, certainly, his resolution and unconquerable patience deserved much praise, to adventure on such a design, which had in it just no more probability than what was enough to keep it from being impossible. Yet I admire not so much at all the treasure he took, as at the rich and deep mine of God's providence.

Having now full freighted himself with wealth, and burnt at the House of Crosses above two hundred thousand pounds' worth of Spanish merchandise, he returned with honour and safety into England, and, some years after, (December 13th, 1577,) undertook that his famous voyage about the world, most accurately described by our English authors: and yet a word or two thereof will not be amiss.

Setting forward from Plymouth, he bore up for Cabo-verd, [Cape de Verd,] where, near to the island of St. Jago, he took prisoner Nuno da Silva, an experienced Spanish pilot, whose direction he used in the coasts of Brazil and Magellan Straits, and afterwards safely landed him at Guatulco in New Spain. Hence they took their course to the Island of Brava; and hereabouts they met with those tempestuous winds whose only praise is, that they continue not an hour, in which time they change all the points of the compass.\* Here they had great plenty of rain, poured (not, as in other places, as it were out of sieves, but) as out of spouts, so that a butt of water falls down in a place; which, notwithstanding, is but a courteous injury in that hot climate far from land, and where otherwise fresh water cannot be provided. Then cutting the Line, they saw the face of that heaven which earth hideth from us, but therein only three stars of the first greatness, the rest few and small compared to our hemisphere; † as if God, on purpose, had set up the best and biggest candles in that room wherein his civilest guests are entertained.

Sailing the south of Brazil, he afterwards passed the Magellan Straits, (August 20th, 1578,) and then entered *Mare Pacificum*,

\* Manuscript of GEORGE FORTESCUE, who went the voyage with sir Francis Drake. † CAMDEN'S "Elizabeth," anno 1580, p. 323.

came to the southernmost land at the height of 55 $\frac{1}{2}$  latitudes ; thence directing his course northward, he pillaged many Spanish towns, and took rich prizes of high value in the kingdoms of Chili, Peru, and New Spain. Then, bending eastwards, he coasted China, and the Moluccas, where, by the king of Terreneate, a true gentleman Pagan, he was most honourably entertained. The king told them, they and he were all of one religion in this respect,—that they believed not in gods made of stocks and stones, as did the Portugals.\* He furnished them also with all necessaries that they wanted.

On January 9th following, (1579,) his ship, having a large wind and a smooth sea, ran aground on a dangerous shoal, and struck twice on it ; knocking twice at the door of death, which, no doubt, had opened the third time. Here they stuck, from eight o'clock at night till four the next afternoon,† having ground too much, and yet too little to land on ; and water too much, and yet too little to sail in. Had God (who, as the wise man saith, “ holdeth the winds in his fist,” Prov. xxx. 4) but opened his little finger, and let out the smallest blast, they had undoubtedly been cast away ; but there blew not any wind all the while. Then they, conceiving aright that the best way to lighten the ship was, first, to ease it of the burden of their sins by true repentance, humbled themselves, by fasting, under the hand of God. Afterwards they received the communion, dining on Christ in the sacrament, expecting no other than to sup with him in heaven. Then they cast out of their ship six great pieces of ordnance, threw overboard as much wealth as would break the heart of a miser to think on it, with much sugar, and packs of spices, making a caudle of the sea round about. Then they betook themselves to their prayers, the best lever at such a dead lift indeed ; and it pleased God, that the wind, formerly their mortal enemy, became their friend ; which, changing from the starboard to the larboard of the ship, and rising by degrees, cleared them off to the sea again,—for which they returned unfeigned thanks to Almighty God.

By the Cape of Good Hope and west of Africa, he returned safe into England, and (November 3rd, 1580) landed at Plymouth, (being almost the first of those that made a thorough light through the world,) having, in his whole voyage, though a curious searcher after the time, lost one day through the variation of several climates. He feasted the queen in his ship at

\* Manuscript of GEORGE FORTESCUE.  
p. 741.

† HACLUIT's Voyages, vol. iii.

Dartford, who knighted him for his service. Yet it grieved him not a little, that some prime courtiers refused the gold he offered them, as gotten by piracy.\* Some of them would have been loath to have been told, that they had *aurum Tholosanum* in their own purses. Some think, that they did it to show that their envious pride was above their covetousness, who of set purpose did blur the fair copy of his performance, because they would not take pains to write after it.

I pass by his next West-Indian voyage, (1585,) wherein he took the cities of St. Jago, St. Domingo, Cartagena, and St. Augustine in Florida; as also his service performed in 1588, wherein he, with many others, helped to the waning of that half-moon, which sought to govern all the motion of our sea. I haste to his last voyage.

Queen Elizabeth, in 1595, perceiving that the only way to make the Spaniard a cripple for ever, was to cut his sinews of war in the West Indies, furnished sir Francis Drake, and sir John Hawkins, with six of her own ships, besides twenty-one ships and barks of their own providing, containing in all two thousand five hundred men and boys, for some service on America. But, alas! this voyage was marred before begun. For, so great preparations being too big for a cover, the king of Spain knew of it, and sent a caraval † of *adviso* [advice] to the West Indies; so that they had intelligence three weeks before the fleet set forth of England, either to fortify or remove their treasure; ‡ whereas, in other of Drake's voyages, not two of his own men knew whither he went; and managing such a design is like carrying a mine in war,—if it hath any vent, all is spoiled. Besides, Drake and Hawkins, being in joint commission, hindered each other. The latter took himself to be inferior rather in success than skill; and the action was unlike to prosper when neither would follow, and both could not handsomely go abreast. It vexed old Hawkins, that his counsel was not followed, in present sailing to America, but that they spent time in vain in assaulting the Canaries; and the grief that his advice was slighted, say some, was the cause of his death. Others impute it to the sorrow he took for the taking of his bark called "the Francis," which five Spanish frigates had

\* CAMDEN'S "Elizabeth," *anno ut prius*, p. 127.

† The subjoined is

PHILLIPS and KERSEY's description: "Caravel, or *carvel*, a kind of light, round ship, with a square poop, rigged and fitted out like a galley, holding about six-score or seven-score tons. These are counted the best sailers on the sea, and much used by the Portuguese."—EDIT.

‡ HACLUIT'S *Voyages*, vol. iii. p. 583.

intercepted. But when the same heart hath two mortal wounds given it together, it is hard to say which of them killeth.

Drake continued his course for Porto Rico; and, riding within the road, a shot from the Castle entered the steerage of the ship, took away the stool from under him as he sate at supper, wounded sir Nicholas Clifford, and Brute Brown to death. "Ah, dear Brute!" said Drake, "I could grieve for thee, but now is no time for me to let down my spirits."\* And, indeed, a soldier's most proper bemoaning a friend's death in war, is in revenging it. And, sure, as if grief had made the English furious, they soon after fired five Spanish ships of two hundred tons apiece, in despite of the Castle.

America is not unfitly resembled to an hour-glass, which hath a narrow neck of land, (suppose it the hole where the sand passeth,) betwixt the parts thereof,—Mexicana and Peruana. Now, the English had a design to march by land over this Isthmus, from Porto Rico to Panama, where the Spanish treasure was laid up. Sir Thomas Baskerville, general of the land-forces, undertook the service with seven hundred and fifty armed men. They marched through deep ways, the Spaniards much annoying them with shot out of the woods. One fort in the passage they assaulted in vain, and heard two others were built to stop them, besides Panama itself. They had so much of this breakfast, they thought they should surfeit of a dinner and supper of the same. No hope of conquest, except with cloying the jaws of death, and thrusting men on the mouth of the cannon. Wherefore, fearing to find the proverb true, that "gold may be bought too dear," they returned to their ships. Drake afterwards fired Nombre de Dios, and many other petty towns, (whose treasure the Spaniards had conveyed away,) burning the empty casks, when their precious liquor was run out before, and then prepared for their returning home.

Great was the difference betwixt the Indian cities now, from what they were when Drake first haunted these coasts. At first, the Spaniards here were safe and secure, counting their treasure sufficient to defend itself, the remoteness thereof being the greatest (almost only) resistance, and the fetching of it more than the fighting for it. Whilst the king of Spain guarded the head and heart of his dominions in Europe, he left his long legs in America open to blows; till, finding them to smart, being beaten black and blue by the English, he learned to arm them

\* From the mouth of Henry Drake, Esq., there present, my dear and worthy parishioner, lately deceased.

at last, fortifying the most important of them to make them impregnable.

Now began sir Francis's discontent to feed upon him. He conceived, that expectation, a merciless usurer, computing each day since his departure, exacted an interest and return of honour and profit proportionable to his great preparations, and transcending his former achievements. He saw that all the good which he had done in this voyage, consisted in the evil he had done to the Spaniards afar off, whereof he could present but small visible fruits in England. These apprehensions, accompanying, if not causing, the disease of the flux, wrought his sudden death, January 28th, 1595. And sickness did not so much untie his clothes, as sorrow did rend at once the robe of his mortality asunder. He lived by the sea, died on it, and was buried in it.\* Thus an extempore performance (scarce heard to be begun, before we hear it is ended !) comes off with better applause, or miscarries with less disgrace, than a long-studied and openly-premeditated action. Besides, we see how great spirits, having mounted to the highest pitch of performance, afterwards strain and break their credits in striving to go beyond it. Lastly, God oftentimes leaves the brightest men in an eclipse, to show that they do but borrow their lustre from his reflexion. We will not justify all the actions of any man, though of a tamer profession than a sea-captain, in whom civility is often counted preciseness. For the main, we say that this our captain was a religious man towards God and his houses, (generally sparing churches where he came,) chaste in his life, just in his dealings, true of his word, and merciful to those that were under him, hating nothing so much as idleness : and therefore, lest his soul should rust in peace, at spare hours he brought fresh water to Plymouth. Careful he was for posterity, (though men of his profession have as well an ebb of riot, as a float of fortune,) and providently raised a worshipful family of his kindred. In a word : should those that speak against him fast till they fetch their bread where he did his, they would have a good stomach to eat it.

\* This conceit has been well preserved in the following ancient epitaph on sir Francis :—

“ Where Drake first found, there last he lost, his name ;  
And for a tomb left nothing but his fame.  
His body's buried under some great wave ;  
The sea, that was his glory, is his grave :  
Of whom an Epitaph none can truly make ;  
For who can say ?—*Here lies Sir Francis Drake !* ”

EDIT.

## CHAPTER XXIII.

## THE GOOD HERALD.

HE is a warden of the temple of honour. Mutual necessity made mortal enemies agree in these officers: the lungs of Mars himself would be burnt to pieces, having no respiration in a truce. Heralds therefore were invented, to proclaim peace or war, deliver messages about summons of forts, ransoming of captives, burying the dead, and the like.

## MAXIM I.

*He is grave and faithful in discharging the service he is employed in.*—The names which Homer gives the Grecian *ceryces* \* excellently import their virtues in discharging their office: one was called ASPHALIO, “such an one as made sure work;” another, EURYBATES, “cunning and subtle;” a third, THEOTES, from his piety and godliness; a fourth, STENTOR, from his loud and audible pronouncing of messages. Therefore, of every Heathen sacrifice the tongue was cut out and given to the heralds, to show that liberty of speech in all places was allowed them.†

## II.

*He embitters not a distasteful message to a foreign prince by his indiscretion in delivering it.*—Commendable was the gravity of Guienne King of Arms in France, and Thomas Bevolt, Clarencieux of England, sent by their several princes to defy Charles the emperor. For, leave [having been] demanded and obtained to deliver the message with safe-conduct to their persons, they delivered the emperor the lie in writing; and, defying him, were sent home safe with rewards. It fared worse with a foolish French herald, sent from the count of Orgell, to challenge combat with the count of Cardonna, admiral of Arragon, where, instead of wearing his coat of arms, the herald was attired in a long linen garment, painted with some dishonest actions, imputed to the said count of Cardonna. But Ferdinand king of Arragon caused the herald to be whipped,

\* Κήρυκες, “heralds.”—EDIT.

† SIR HENRY SPELMAN, *Glossar. de verbo Herald.*

naked, through the streets of Barcelona, as a punishment of his presumption.\* Thus his indiscretion remitted him to the nature of an ordinary person, his armour of proof of public credence fell off, and he, left naked to the stroke of justice, [was] no longer a public officer, but a private offender. Pass we now from his use in war to his employment in peace.

## III.

*He is skilful in the pedigrees and descents of all ancient gentry.*—Otherwise, to be able only to blazon a coat doth no more make a herald, than the reading the titles of gallipots makes a physician. Bring our herald to a monument, *ubi jacet epitaphium*,† and where the arms on the tomb are not only crest-fallen, but their colours scarce to be discerned, and he will tell whose they be, if any certainty therein can be rescued from the teeth of time. But how shameful was the ignorance of the French heralds, some forty years since, who, at a solemn entertainment of queen Mary of Florence, wife to king Henry IV., did falsely devise and blazon both the arms of Florence, and the arms of the dauphin of France, now king thereof! ‡

## IV.

*He carefully preserveth the memories of extinguished families.*—Of such Zelophehads, who, dying, left only daughters. He is more faithful to many ancient gentlemen than their own heirs were, who sold their lands, and with them (as much as in them lay) their memories, which our herald carefully treasureth up.

## V.

*He restoreth many to their own rightful arms.*—An heir is a phenix in a family; there can be but one of them at the same time. Hence comes it often to pass, that younger brothers of genteel families live in low ways, clouded often amongst the yeomanry; and yet those under-boughs grow from the same root with the top-branches. It may happen afterwards, that, by industry, they may advance themselves to their former lustre; and good reason they should recover their ancient ensigns of honour belonging unto them! For the river Anas in Spain, though running many miles under ground, when it comes up again, is still the same river as it was before. And yet,—

\* “Spanish History,” in the Life of Ferdinand.      † “On the part where the epitaph remains.”—EDIT.      ‡ ANDREW FAVIN, (a Parisian advocate,) in his “Theatre of Honour,” book i. chap. iv. p. 35.

## VI.

*He curbs their usurpation who unjustly entitle themselves to ancient houses.*—Hierophilus, a farrier\* in Rome, pretended himself to be nephew to C. Marius, who had seven times been consul; and carried it in so high a strain that many believed him, and some companies in Rome accepted him for their patron.† Such want not amongst us, who, in spite of the stock, will ingraft themselves into noble bloods, and thence derive their pedigree. Hence they new-mould their names,—taking from them, adding to them, melting out all the liquid letters, torturing mutes to make them speak, and making vowels dumb, to bring it to a fallacious homonymy at the last, that their names may be the same with those noble houses they pretend to. By this trick, (to forbear dangerous instances, if affinity of sound makes kindred,) Lutulentus makes himself kin to Luculentus,—“dirt” to “light,” and Angustus to Augustus, some “narrow-hearted” peasant, to some “large-spirited” prince, except our good herald mar their mart, and discover their forgery. For well he knows where indeed the names are the same, (though altered through variety of writing in several ages, and disguised by the lisping of vulgar people, who miscall hard French surnames,) and where the equivocation is untruly affected.

## VII.

*He assigns honourable arms to such as raise themselves by deserts.*—In all ages there must be as well a beginning of new gentry, as an ending of ancient. And let not *linea*, when far-extended in length, grow so proud as to scorn the first *punctum* which gave it the original. Our herald knows also to cure the surfeit of coats, and unsurcharge them, and how to wash-out stained colours, when the merits of posterity have out-worn the disgraces of their ancestors.

## VIII.

*He will not, for any profit, favour wealthy unworthiness.*—If a rich clown, who deserves that all his shield should be the base point, shall repair to the herald-office, as to a draper’s shop, wherein any coat may be bought for money, he quickly finds himself deceived. No doubt, if our herald gives him a coat, he gives him also a badge with it.

\* *Equarius medicus, iatralpos*, “a horse-doctor;” in modern phraseology, “a veterinarian,” or “a veterinary surgeon.”—EDIT.      † *VALERIUS MAXIMUS*, lib. ix. cap. 16.

## CHAPTER XXIV.

## THE LIFE OF MR. WILLIAM CAMDEN.

WILLIAM CAMDEN was born *anno* 1550, in Old Bailey, in the city of London. His father, Samson Camden, was descended of honest parentage in Staffordshire; but, by his mother's side, he was extracted from the worshipful family of the Curwens in Cumberland.\*

He was brought up first in Christ-Church, then in Paul's School, in London; and at fifteen years of age went to Magdalen College in Oxford, and thence to Broadgates Hall† where he first made those short Latin graces, which the servitors still use. From hence he was removed, and made Student of Christ-Church; where he profited to such eminency, that he was preferred to be Master of Westminster School, a most famous seminary of learning.

For, whereas before, of the two grand Schools of England, one sent all her foundation-scholars to Cambridge, the other all to Oxford, the good queen (as the head equally favouring both breasts of learning and religion) divided her scholars here betwixt both Universities, which were enriched with many hopeful plants sent from hence, through Camden's learning, diligence, and clemency. Sure, none need pity the beating of that scholar who would not learn without it under so meek a master.

His deserts called him hence to higher employments. The queen first made him Richmond Herald, and then Clarencieux King of Arms. We read how Dionysius, first king of Sicily, turned afterwards a schoolmaster in his old age. Behold here Dionysius inverted, one that was a schoolmaster in his youth become a King (of Arms) in his riper years, which place none ever did or shall discharge with more integrity. He was a most exact antiquary: witness his worthy work, which is a *comment* on three kingdoms: and never was so large a text more briefly—so dark a text more plainly—expounded. Yea, what a fair garment hath been made out of the very shreds and remains of that greater work!

\* *A quibus nobis (absit invidia) genus maternum.*—CAMDEN'S *Britannia*, in Cumberland. † *Ex Parentatione DEGORII WHEARE.*

It is most worthy observation, with what diligence he inquired after ancient places, making “hue and cry” after many a city which was run away, and, by certain marks and tokens, pursuing to find it; as, by the situation on the Roman highways,\* by just distance from other ancient cities, by some affinity of name, by tradition of the inhabitants, by Roman coins digged up, and by some appearance of ruins. A broken urn is a whole evidence, or an old gate still surviving, out of which the city is run out. Besides, commonly some new, spruce town, not far off, is grown out of the ashes thereof, which yet hath so much natural affection, as dutifully to own those reverend ruins for her mother.

By these and other means, he arrived at admirable knowledge, and restored Britain to herself. And let none tax him for presumption in conjectures, where the matter was doubtful; for, many probable conjectures have stricken the fire, out of which truth’s candle hath been lighted afterwards. Besides, conjectures, like parcels of unknown ore, are sold but at low rates: if they prove some rich metal, the buyer is a great gainer; if base, no loser, for he pays for it accordingly.

His candour and sweet temper were highly to be commended, gratefully acknowledging those by whom he was assisted in the work, (in such a case, confession puts the difference betwixt stealing and borrowing!) and, surely, so heavy a log needed more levers than one. He honourably mentioneth such as differ from him in opinion; not like those antiquaries, who are so snarling, one had as good dissent a mile as a hair’s-breadth from them.

Most of the English ancient nobility and gentry he hath unpartially observed. Some indeed object, that he claws and flatters the grandees of his own age, extolling some families rather great than ancient, making them to flow from a far fountain because they had a great channel, especially if his private friends.† But this cavil hath more of malice than truth: indeed, it is pity he should have a tongue, *that* hath not a word for a friend on just occasion; and justly might the stream of his commendations run broader, where meeting with a confluence of desert and friendship in the same party. For the main, his pen is sincere and unpartial; and they who complain that Grantham steeple stands awry, will not set a straighter by it.

\* Watlin-street, Ermin-street.  
Earl of Leicester.”

† HUGH HOLLAND, in the “Life of the

Some say that, in silencing many genteel families, he makes balks of as good ground as any he plougheth up. But these again acquit him, when they consider that it is not only difficult, but impossible, to anatomize the English gentry so exactly, as to show where every smallest vein thereof runs. Besides, many houses, conceived to be by him omitted, are rather rightly placed by him, not where they live, but whence they came. Lastly, we may perceive that he prepared another work on purpose for the English gentry.

I say nothing of his learned “Annals of Queen Elizabeth,” industriously performed. His very enemies (if any) cannot but commend him. Sure, he was as far from loving Popery,\* as from hating learning, though that aspersion be general on antiquaries; as if they could not honour hoary hairs, but presently themselves must dote.

His liberality to learning is sufficiently witnessed in his founding of a History-Professor in Oxford; to which he gave the manor of Bexley in Kent, worth in present a hundred and forty pounds, but (some years expired) four hundred pounds, *per annum*: so that he merited that distich:—

*Est tibi pro tumulo, Camdene, Britannia tota;  
Oxonium vivens est epigramma tibi.†*

The military part of his office he had no need to employ, passing it most under a peaceable prince. But now, having lived many years in honour and esteem, death at last, even contrary to *jus gentium*,‡ killed this worthy herald; so that it seems, mortality, the law of nature, is above the law of arms. He died *anno* 1623, the ninth of November, in the seventy-fourth year of his age.

\* These words he wrote in the beginning of his Testament: *Christi solius meritis et satisfactione spem omnem salutis mea semper nisi profiteor.*

“I profess that all my hopes of salvation have always rested on the merits and satisfaction of Christ alone.”—EDIT.

† “Camden, Great Britain is thy honour’d tomb,  
And Oxford has thine epitaph become.”

EDIT.

‡ “The law of nations.”—EDIT.

## CHAPTER XXV.

## THE TRUE GENTLEMAN.

We will consider him in his birth, breeding, and behaviour.

## MAXIM I.

*He is extracted from ancient and worshipful parentage.*—When a pippin is planted on a pippin-stock, the fruit growing thence is called a “renate,”\* [rennet,]—a most delicious apple, as both by sire and dam well-descended. Thus, his blood must needs be well-purified who is genteelly born on both sides.

## II.

*If his birth be not—at least his qualities are—generous.*—What, if he cannot, with the Hevenninghams [Effinghams] of Suffolk, count five-and-twenty knights of his family,† or tell sixteen knights successively, with the Tilneys of Norfolk,‡ or, with the Nauntons, show where their ancestors had seven hundred pounds a-year before or at the Conquest? § yet he hath endeavoured, by his own deserts, to ennable himself. Thus valour makes him son to Cæsar, learning entitles him kinsman to Tully, and piety reports him nephew to godly Constantine. It graceth a gentleman of low descent and high desert, when he will own the meanness of his parentage. How ridiculous is it when many men brag, that their families are more ancient than the moon, which, all know, are later than the star which, some seventy years since, shined in Cassiopeia. But if he be generously born, see how his parents breed him:—

## III.

*He is not in his youth possessed with the great hopes of his possession.*—No flatterer reads constantly in his ears a survey of the lands he is to inherit. This hath made many boys’ thoughts swell so great, they could never be kept in compass afterwards. Only his parents acquaint him, that he is the next undoubted heir to correction, if misbehaving himself; and he

\* DRAYTON’s “Poly-Olbion,” p. 298.  
Monuments,” p. 854.

‡ *Idem*, p. 818.

† WEAVER’s “Funera  
§ *Idem*, p. 758.

finds no more favour from his schoolmaster, than his schoolmaster finds diligence in him, whose rod respects persons no more than bullets are partial in a battle.

## IV.

*At the University, he is so studious as if he intended learning for his profession.*—He knows well, that cunning is no burden to carry, as paying neither portage by land, nor pondage\* by sea. Yea, though to have land be a good First, yet to have learning is the surest Second, which may stand to it when the other may chance to be taken away.

## V.

*At the inns of court, he applies himself to learn the laws of the kingdom.*—Object not, “Why should a gentleman learn law, who, if he needeth it, may have it for his money; and if he hath never so much of his own, he must but give it away?” For, what a shame is it for a man of quality to be ignorant of Solon in our Athens, of Lycurgus in our Sparta? Besides, law will help him to keep his own, and bestead† his neighbours’. Say not, that “there be enough which make this their set practice:” for so there are also many masters of defence by their profession; and shall private men, therefore, learn no skill at their weapons?

As for the hospitality, the apparel, the travelling, the company, the recreations, the marriage of gentlemen, they are described in several chapters in the following book. A word or two of his behaviour in the country:—

## VI.

*He is courteous and affable to his neighbours.*—As the sword of the best-tempered metal is most flexible; so the truly generous are most pliant and courteous in their behaviour to their inferiors.

## VII.

*He delights to see himself and his servants well-mounted.*—Therefore he loveth good horsemanship. Let never any foreign Rabshakeh send that brave‡ to our Jerusalem, offering “to lend her two thousand horses, if she be able, for her part, to set

\* According to PHILLIPS and KERSEY, “Poundage is a duty granted to the queen of twelve pence for every twenty shillings’ value of all goods exported or imported; except such as pay tonnage, bullion, and a few others.”—EDIT.  
† Bestead, or besteed, “to aid, to benefit.”—EDIT. ‡ “Challenge.”—EDIT.

riders upon them." (2 Kings xviii. 23.) We know how Darius got the Persian empire from the rest of his fellow-peers, by the first neighing of his generous steed. It were no harm, if, in some needless suits of intricate precedence betwixt equal gentlemen, the priority were adjudged to him who keeps a stable of most serviceable horses.

## VIII.

*He furnisheth and prepareth himself in peace against time of war.*—Lest it be too late to learn when his skill is to be used. He approves himself courageous when brought to the trial; as well remembering the custom which is used at the creation of knights of the Bath, wherein the king's master-cook cometh forth, and presenteth his great knife to the new-made knights, admonishing them to be faithful and valiant, otherwise he threatens them that that very knife is prepared to cut off their spurs.\*

## IX.

*If the Commission of the Peace finds him out, he faithfully discharges it.*—I say, "finds him out;" for a public office is a guest which receives the best usage from them who never invited it. And though he declined the place, the country knew to prize *his* worth *who* would be ignorant of his own. He compounds many petty differences betwixt his neighbours, which are easier ended in his own porch than in Westminster-Hall. For many people think, if once they have fetched a warrant from a Justice, they have given earnest to follow the suit; though, otherwise, the matter be so mean, that the next night's sleep would have bound both parties to the peace, and made them as good friends as ever before. Yet,

## X.

*He connives not at the smothering of punishable faults.*—He hates that practice, as common as dangerous amongst country-people, who, having received again the goods which were stolen from them, partly out of foolish pity, and partly out of covetousness to save charges in prosecuting the law, let the thief escape unpunished. Thus, whilst private losses are repaired, the wounds to the commonwealth, in the breach of the laws, are left uncured; and thus petty-larcenies are encouraged into felonies, and afterwards are hanged for *pounds*, because never whipped for *pence*; who, if they had felt the *cord*, had never been brought to the *halter*.

\* MR. SELDEN, in his "Titles of Honour," p. 820.

## XI.

*If chosen a Member of Parliament, he is willing to do his country service.*—If he be no rhetorician, to raise affections, (yea, Mercury was a greater speaker than Jupiter himself !) he counts it great wisdom to be the good manager of “Yea” and “Nay.” The slow pace of his judgment is recompensed by the swift following of his affections, when his judgment is once soundly informed. And here we leave him in consultation, wishing him, with the rest of his honourable society, all happy success !

# **THE HOLY STATE.**

## **BOOK III.**

**CONTAINING**

**GENERAL RULES.**



# THE HOLY STATE.

---

## THE THIRD BOOK.

---

### CHAPTER I.

#### OF HOSPITALITY.

HOSPITALITY is threefold :—for one's family, this is of necessity ; for strangers, this is courtesy ; for the poor, this is charity. Of the two latter :—

##### MAXIM I.

*To keep a disorderly house is the way to keep neither house nor lands.*—For whilst they keep the greatest roaring, their state steals away in the greatest silence. Yet when many consume themselves with secret vices, then hospitality bears the blame ; whereas it is not the meat but the sauce, not the supper but the gaming after it, doth undo them.

##### II.

*Measure not thy entertainment of a guest by his estate, but thine own.*—Because he is a lord, forget not that thou art but a gentleman ; otherwise, if with feasting him thou breakest thyself, he will not cure thy rupture, and (perchance) rather deride than pity thee.

##### III.

*When provision, as we say, groweth on the same, it is miraculously multiplied.*—In Northamptonshire all the rivers of the county are bred in it, besides those (Ouse and Cherwell) it lendeth and sendeth into other shires : so the good housekeeper hath a fountain of wheat in his field, mutton in his fold, &c., both to serve himself, and supply others. The expense of a feast will but breathe him, which will tire another of the same estate who buys all by the penny.

## IV.

*Mean men's palates are best pleased with fare rather plentiful than various, solid than dainty.*—Dainties will cost more, and content less, to those that are not critical enough to distinguish them.

## V.

*Occasional entertainment of men greater than thyself, is better than solemn inviting them.*—Then short warning is thy large excuse; whereas, otherwise, if thou dost not over-do thy estate, thou shalt under-do his expectation; for thy feast will be but his ordinary fare. A king of France was often pleased, in his hunting, wilfully to lose himself, to find the house of a private park-keeper; where, going from the school of state-affairs, he was pleased to make a play-day to himself. He brought sauce (hunger) with him, which made coarse meat dainties to his palate. At last the park-keeper took heart, and solemnly invited the king to his house; who came with all his court, so that all the man's meat was not a morsel for them. "Well," said the park-keeper, "I will invite no more kings;" having learnt the difference between princes when they please to put on the vizard of privacy, and when they will appear like themselves, both in their person and attendants.

## VI.

*Those are ripe for charity who are withered by age or impotency.*—Especially if maimed in following their calling; for such are industry's Martyrs, at least her Confessors. Add to these, those that with diligence fight against poverty, though neither conquer till death make it a drawn battle. Expect not, but prevent, their craving of thee; for God forbid the heavens should never rain till the earth first opens her mouth, seeing some grounds will sooner burn than chap!

## VII.

*The House of Correction is the fittest Hospital for those cripples whose legs are lame through their own laziness.*—Surely, king Edward VI. was as truly charitable in granting Bridewell for the punishment of sturdy rogues, as in giving St. Thomas's Hospital for the relief of the poor. I have done with the subject; only I desire rich men to awaken hospitality, which, one saith, "since the year 1572, hath in a manner been laid asleep in the grave of Edward earl of Derby."\*

\* CAMDEN's "Elizabeth," anno 1573.

## CHAPTER II.

## OF JESTING.

HARMLESS mirth is the best cordial against the consumption of the spirits ; wherefore jesting is not unlawful if it trespasseth not in quantity, quality, or season.

## MAXIM I.

*It is good to make a jest, but not to make a trade of jesting.*—The earl of Leicester, knowing that queen Elizabeth was much delighted to see a gentleman dance well, brought the master of a dancing-school to dance before her. “Pish!” said the queen, “it is his profession : I will not see him.” She liked it not where it was a master-quality, but where it attended on other perfections. The same may we say of jesting.

## II.

*Jest not with the two-edged sword of God’s word.*\*—Will nothing please thee to wash thy hands in, but the font ? or to drink healths in, but the church-chalice ? And know, the whole art is learnt at the first admission, and profane jests will come without calling. If, in the troublesome days of king Edward IV., a citizen in Cheapside was executed as a traitor, for saying he would make his son heir to the crown, though he only meant his own house, having a crown for the sign ; † more dangerous it is to wit-wanton it with the majesty of God. Wherefore, if without thine intention, and against thy will, by chance-medley thou hittest Scripture in ordinary discourse, yet fly to the city of refuge, and pray to God to forgive thee.

## III.

*Wanton jests make fools laugh, and wise men frown.*—Seeing we are civilized Englishmen, let us not be naked savages in our talk. Such rotten speeches are worst in withered age, when men run after that sin in their words which flieh from them in the deed.

\* Μάχαιρας διστομον, Heb. iv. 12.

† SPEED, in Edward IV.

## IV.

*Let not thy jests, like mummy, be made of dead men's flesh.—Abuse not any that are departed; for, to wrong their memories, is to rob their ghosts of their winding-sheets.*

## V.

*Scoff not at the natural defects of any, which are not in their power to amend.—O, it is cruelty to beat a cripple with his own crutches! Neither flout any for his profession, if honest, though poor and painful. Mock not a cobbler for his black thumbs.*

## VI.

*He that relates another man's wicked jest with delight, adopts it to be his own.—Purge them, therefore, from their poison. If the profaneness may be severed from the wit, it is like a lam-prey: take out the string\* in the back, it may make good meat. But if the staple-conceit consists in profaneness, then it is a viper, all poison, and meddle not with it.*

## VII.

*He that will lose his friend for a jest, deserves to die a beggar by the bargain.—Yet some think their conceits, like mustard, not good except they bite. We read, that all those who were born in England, the year after the beginning of the great mortality 1349,† wanted their four cheek-teeth. Such let thy jests be, that they may not grind the credit of thy friend, and make not jests so long till thou becomest one.*

## VIII.

*No time to break jests when the heart-strings are about to be broken.—No more showing of wit when the head is to be cut off. Like that dying man who, when the priest, coming to him to give him extreme unction, asked of him where his feet were, answered, “At the end of my legs.” But, at such a time, jests are an unmannerly *crepitus ingenii*; ‡ and let those take heed who end here with Democritus, that they begin not with Heraclitus hereafter.*

\* In the third edition “sting” occurs.—EDIT.      + THOMAS WALSINGHAM,  
in eodem anno.      ‡ “Crackling of a flashy genius.”—EDIT.

## CHAPTER III.

## OF SELF-PRAISING.

## MAXIM I.

*He whose own worth doth speak, need not speak his own worth.*—Such boasting sounds proceed from emptiness of desert: whereas the conquerors in the Olympian games did not put on the laurels on their own heads, but waited till some other did it. Only anchorets, that want company, may crown themselves with their own commendations.

## II.

*It sheweth more wit, but no less vanity, to commend one's self, not in a straight line, but by reflexion.*—Some sail to the port of their own praise by a side-wind: as when they dispraise themselves, stripping themselves naked of what is their due, that the modesty of the beholders may clothe them with it again; or when they flatter another to his face, tossing the ball to him, that he may throw it back again to them; or when they commend that quality, wherein themselves excel, in another man, (though absent,) whom all know far their inferior in that faculty; or, lastly, (to omit other ambushes men set to surprise praise,) when they send the children of their own brain to be nursed by another man, and commend their own works in a third person; but, if challenged by the company that they were authors of them themselves, with their tongues they faintly deny it, and with their faces strongly affirm it.

## III.

*Self-praising comes most naturally from a man when it comes most violently from him in his own defence.*—For though modesty binds a man's tongue to the peace in this point, yet, being assaulted in his credit, he may stand upon his guard, and then he doth not so much praise as purge himself. One braved a gentleman to his face, that in skill and valour he came far behind him. “It is true,” said the other, “for when I fought

with you, you ran away before me." In such a case, it was well returned, and without any just aspersion of pride.

## IV.

*He that falls into sin is a man; that grieves at it, is a saint; that boasteth of it, is a devil.*—Yet some glory in their shame, counting the stains of sin the best complexion for their souls. These men make me believe it may be true, what Mandeville writes of the Isle of Somabarre, in the East Indies, that all the nobility thereof brand their faces with a hot iron, in token of honour.

## V.

*He that boasts of sins never committed is a double devil.*—Many brag how many gardens of virginity they have deflowered, who never came near the walls thereof, lying on those with whom they did never lie, and with slanderous tongues committing rapes on chaste women's reputations. Others (who would sooner creep into a scabbard than draw a sword) boast of their robberies, to usurp the esteem of valour: whereas first let them be well whipped for their lying; and, as they like that, let them come afterward, and entitle themselves to the gallows.

## CHAPTER IV.

## OF TRAVELLING.

It is a good accomplishment to a man, if first the stock be well grown whereon travel is grafted, and these rules observed *before, in, and after* his going abroad :—

## MAXIM I.

*Travel not early, before thy judgment be risen.*—Lest thou observest rather shows than substance, marking alone pageants, pictures, beautiful buildings, &c.

## II.

*Get the language, (in part,) without which key thou shalt unlock little of moment.*—It is a great advantage to be one's own interpreter. Object not, that the French tongue learned in England must be unlearned again in France ; for it is easier to add than begin, and to pronounce than to speak.

## III.

*Be well-settled in thine own religion, lest, travelling out of England into Spain, thou goest out of God's blessing into the warm sun.*—They that go over maids for their religion, will be ravished at the sight of the first Popish church they enter into. But if first thou be well-grounded, their fooleries shall rivet thy faith the faster, and travel shall give thee confirmation in that baptism [which] thou didst receive at home.

## IV.

*Know most of the rooms of thy native country, before thou goest over the threshold thereof.*—Especially, seeing England presents thee with so many observables. But late writers lack nothing but age, and home-wonders but distance, to make them admired. It is a tale, what Josephus writes of the two pillars set up by the sens of Seth in Syria, the one of brick, fire-proof ; the other of stone, water-free ; thereon engraving many heavenly matters to perpetuate learning in defiance of time.\* But it is truly moral-

\* *Antiquitat. Jud.*, lib. i. cap. 3.

ized in our Universities,—Cambridge of brick, and Oxford of stone,—wherein learning and religion are preserved, and where the worst College is more sight-worthy than the best Dutch Gymnasium. First view these and the rest home-rarities; not like those English that can give a better account of Fontainebleau than Hampton-Court, of the Spa than Bath, of Anas in Spain than Mole in Surrey.

## V.

*Travel not beyond the Alps.*—Mr. Ascham did thank God, that he was but nine days in Italy, wherein he saw, in one city, (Venice,) more liberty to sin, than in London he ever heard of in nine years.\* That some of our gentry have gone thither, and returned thence without infection, I more praise God's providence than their adventure.

## VI.

*To travel from the sun is uncomfortable.*—Yet the northern parts, with much ice, have some crystal, and want not their remarkable.

## VII.

*If thou wilt see much in a little, travel the Low Countries.*—Holland is all Europe in an Amsterdam-print, for Minerva, Mars, and Mercury,—learning, war, and traffic.

## VIII.

*Be wise in choosing objects, diligent in marking, careful in remembering of them.*—Yet herein men much follow their own humours. One asked a barber, who never before had been at the court, what he saw there. “O!” said he, “the king was excellently well trimmed!” Thus merchants most mark foreign havens, exchanges, and marts; soldiers note forts, armories, and magazines; scholars listen after libraries, disputations, and Professors; statesmen observe Courts of Justice, Councils, &c. Every one is partial in his own profession.

## IX.

*Labour to distil and unite into thyself the scattered perfections of several nations.*—But (as it was said of one, who with more industry than judgment frequented a College-library, and commonly made use of the worst notes he met with in any authours, that “he weeded the library”) many weed foreign countries,

\* In his Preface to his “Schoolmaster.”

bringing home Dutch drunkenness, Spanish pride, French wantonness, and Italian atheism. As for the good herbs, Dutch industry, Spanish loyalty, French courtesy, and Italian frugality,—these they leave behind them. Others bring home just nothing ; and, because they singled not themselves from their countrymen, though some years beyond sea, were never out of England.

## X.

*Continue correspondence with some choice foreign friend, after thy return.*—As some Professor or Secretary, who virtually is the whole University or State. It is but a dull Dutch fashion, their *albus amicorum*, to make “a dictionary of their friends’ names.” But a selected familiar in every country is useful : betwixt you there may be a letter-exchange. Be sure to return as good wares as thou receivest, and acquaint him with the remarkable of thy own country ; and he will willingly continue the trade, finding it equally gainful.

## XI.

*Let discourse rather be easily drawn, than willingly flow, from thee.*—That thou mayest not seem weak to hold—or desirous to vent—news, but content to gratify thy friends. Be sparing in reporting improbable truths, especially to the vulgar, who, instead of informing their judgments, will suspect thy credit. Disdain their peevish pride who rail on their native land, (whose worst fault is, that it bred such ungrateful fools,) and in all their discourses prefer foreign countries ; herein showing themselves of kin to the wild Irish, in loving their nurses better than their mothers.

## CHAPTER V.

## OF COMPANY.

## MAXIM I.

*COMPANY is one of the greatest pleasures of the nature of man.*—For the beams of joy are made hotter by reflexion, when related to another; and, otherwise, gladness itself must grieve for want of one to express itself to.

## II.

*It is unnatural for a man to court and hug solitariness.*—It is observed, that the furthest islands in the world are so seated that there is none so remote but that, from some shore of it, another island or continent may be discerned; as if hereby nature invited countries to a mutual commerce one with another. Why then should any man affect to environ himself with so deep and great reservedness, as not to communicate with the society of others? And though we pity those who made solitariness their refuge in time of persecution, we must condemn such as choose it in the church's prosperity. For, well may we count him not well in his wits, who will live always under a bush, because others in a storm shelter themselves under it.

## III.

*Yet a desert is better than a debauched companion.*—For the wildness of the place is but uncheerful; whilst the wildness of bad persons is also infectious. Better, therefore, ride alone, than have a thief's company: and such is a wicked man, who will rob thee of precious time, if he doth no more mischief. The Nazarites, who might drink no wine, were also forbidden to eat grapes, (Num. vi. 8,) whereof wine is made. We must not only avoid sin itself, but also the causes and occasions thereof; amongst which, bad company (the lime-twigs of the devil) is the chiefest, especially, to catch those natures which, like the good-fellow planet Mercury, are most swayed by others.

## IV.

*If thou beest cast into bad company, like Hercules thou must sleep with thy club in thine hand, and stand on thy guard.—I mean, if against thy will the tempest of an unexpected occasion drives thee amongst such rocks; then be thou like the river Dee, in Merionethshire in Wales, which, running through Pimble-mere, remains entire, and minglest not her streams with the waters of the lake.\* Though with them, be not of them; keep civil communion with them, but separate from their sins. And if, against thy will, thou fallest amongst wicked men, know, to thy comfort, thou art still in thy calling, and therefore in God's keeping, who on thy prayers will preserve thee.*

## V.

*The company he keeps is the comment by help whereof men expound the most close and mystical man.—Understanding him for one of the same religion, life, and manners with his associates. And though perchance he be not such an one, it is just he should be counted so for conversing with them. Augustus Cæsar came thus to discern his two daughters' inclinations: for, being once at a public show, where much people was present, he observed that the grave senators talked with Livia, but loose youngsters and riotous persons with Julia.†*

## VI.

*He that eats cherries with noblemen shall have his eyes spirted out with the stones.—This outlandish proverb hath in it an English truth, that they who constantly converse with men far above their estates, shall reap shame and loss thereby. If thou payest nothing, they will count thee a sucker, no branch; a wen, no member of their company. If in payments thou keepest pace with them, their long strides will soon tire thy short legs. The beavers in New-England, when some ten of them together draw a stick to the building of their lodging, set the weakest beavers to the lighter end of the log, and the strongest take the heaviest part thereof:‡ whereas men often lay the greatest burden on the weakest back; and great persons, to teach meaner men to learn their distance, take pleasure to make them pay for their company. I except such men, who, having some excellent quality, are *gratis* very welcome to their betters;*

\* CAMDEN'S "Britannia," in Merionethshire.  
Augustus Caesar.

† SUETONIUS, in  
Wood, in his Description of New-England.

such an one, though he pays not a penny of the shot, spends enough in lending them his time and discourse.

## VII.

*To affect always to be the best of the company, argues a base disposition.*—Gold always worn in the same purse with silver, loses both of the colour and weight; and so, to converse always with inferiors, degrades a man of his worth. Such there are that love to be the lords of the company, whilst the rest must be their tenants; as if bound by their lease to approve, praise, and admire whatsoever they say. These, knowing the lowness of their parts, love to live with dwarfs, that they may seem proper men. To come amongst their equals, they count it an abridgment of their freedom; but to be with their betters, they deem it flat slavery.

## VIII.

*It is excellent for one to have a library of scholars, especially if they be plain to be read.*—I mean, of a communicative nature, whose discourses are as full as fluent, and their judgments as right as their tongues ready: such men's talk shall be thy lectures. To conclude: Good company is not only profitable whilst a man lives, but sometimes when he is dead. For he that was buried with the bones of Elisha, by a posthumous miracle of that prophet, recovered his life by lodging with such a grave-fellow. (2 Kings xiii. 21.)

## CHAPTER VI.

## OF APPAREL.

CLOTHES are for necessity ; warm clothes, for health ; cleanly, for decency ; lasting, for thrift ; and rich, for magnificence. Now there may be a fault in their—number, if too various—making, if too vain—matter, if too costly—and mind of the wearer, if he takes pride therein. We come therefore to some general directions.

## MAXIM I.

*It is a chargeable vanity to be constantly clothed above one's purse or place.*—I say “constantly ;” for, perchance, sometimes it may be dispensed with. A great man, who himself was very plain in apparel, checked a gentleman for being over-fine ; who modestly answered, “Your lordship hath better clothes at home, and I have worse.” But, sure, no plea can be made when this luxury is grown to be ordinary. It was an arrogant act of Hubert archbishop of Canterbury, who, when king John had given his courtiers rich liveries, to ape the lion, gave his servants the like ; wherewith the king was not a little offended.\* But what shall we say to the riot of our age ? wherein (as peacocks are more gay than the eagle himself) subjects are grown braver than their sovereign.

## II.

*It is beneath a wise man, always to wear clothes beneath men of his rank.*—True, there is a state sometimes in decent plainness. When a wealthy lord, at a great solemnity, had the plainest apparel, “O !” said one, “if you had marked it well, his suit had the richest pockets.” Yet it argues no wisdom, in clothes always to stoop beneath his condition. When Antisthenes saw Socrates in a torn coat, he showed a hole thereof to the people ; “And, lo !” quoth he, “through this I see Socrates's pride ! ”

## III.

*He shows a light gravity who loves to be an exception from a general fashion.*—For the received custom in the place where we

\* MATTHEW PARIS, in *Johan.*, anno 1201.

live, is the most competent judge of decency ; from which we must not appeal to our own opinion. When the French couriers, mourning for their king Henry II., had worn cloth a whole year, all silks became so vile in every man's eyes, that if any was seen to wear them, he was presently accounted a mechanic or country-fellow.\*

## IV.

*It is a folly for one, Proteus-like, never to appear twice in one shape.*—Had some of our gallants been with the Israelites in the wilderness, when for forty years their clothes waxed not old, (Deut. xxix. 5,) they would have been vexed, though their clothes were whole, to have been so long in one fashion. Yet here I must confess, I understand not what is reported of Fulgentius,† that he used the same garment winter and summer, and never altered his clothes, *etiam in sacris peragendis.*‡

## V.

*He that is proud of the rustling of his silks, like a madman, laughs at the rattling of his fetters.*—For, indeed, clothes ought to be our remembrancers of our lost innocence. Besides, why should any brag of what is but borrowed? Should the ostrich § snatch off the gallant's feather, the beaver his hat, the goat his gloves, the sheep his suit, the silk-worm his stockings, and neat || his shoes, (to strip him no farther than modesty will give leave,) he would be left in a cold condition. And yet it is more pardonable to be proud, even of cleanly rags, than, as many are, of affected slovenliness. The one is proud of a mole-hill, the other of a dunghill.

To conclude: Sumptuary laws in this land to reduce apparel to a set standard of price and fashion, according to the several states of men, have long been wished, but are little to be hoped-for. Some think, private men's superfluity is a necessary evil in a State, the floating of fashions affording a standing maintenance to many thousands, who otherwise would be at a loss for a livelihood,—men maintaining more by their pride than by their charity.

\* MONT., book i. chap. 4.  
Quadruplex, lib. xx. cap. 105.  
in the church."—EDIT.

† VINCENTIUS BELLOVACENSIS, *Speculum*  
"Even while performing his public duties  
§ See the note, p. 15.  
|| PHILLIPS and  
KERSEY: "Neat, any kind of beoves; as an ox, cow, steer, or heifer."—EDIT.

## CHAPTER VII.

## OF BUILDING.

He that alters an old house is tied, as a translator, to the original, and is confined to the fancy of the first builder. Such a man were unwise to pluck down good old building, to erect (perchance) worse new. But those that raise a new house from the ground are blameworthy, if they make it not handsome; seeing to them method and confusion are both at a rate. In building, we must respect situation, contrivance, receipt, strength, and beauty. Of situation:—

MAXIM I.

*Chiefly choose a wholesome air.*—For air is a dish one feeds on every minute, and therefore it need be good. Wherefore, great men, (who may build where they please, as poor men where they can,) if herein they prefer their profit above their health, I refer them to their physicians to make them pay for it accordingly.

II.

*Wood and water are two staple commodities where they may be had.*—The former, I confess, hath made so much iron, that it must now be bought with the more silver, and grows daily dearer. But it is as well pleasant as profitable to see a house cased with trees, like that of Anchises in Troy:—

.....\* *quoniam secreta parentis*  
*Anchise domus arboribusque, oblecta recessit.†*

The worst is, where a place is bald of wood, no art can make it a periwig. As for water, begin with Pindar's beginning, ἄριστον μὲν ὑδωρ.† The fort of Gog-Magog Hills, nigh Cambridge, is counted impregnable, but for want of water,§—the mischief of many houses, where servants must bring the well on their shoulders.

\* VIRGILII *Aeneid.* ii. 32.

+ "And though remote my father's palace stood,  
With shades surrounded, and a gloomy wood."

This is PITT's translation of the passage.—EDIT.

¶ "Water, indeed, is the best."—EDIT. § CAMDEN's *Britannia*, in Cambridgeshire.

## III.

*Next, a pleasant prospect is to be respected.*—A medley view, such as of water and land at Greenwich, best entertains the eyes, refreshing the wearied beholder with exchange of objects. Yet I know a more profitable prospect,—where the owner can only see his own land round about.

## IV.

*A fair entrance, with an easy ascent, gives a great grace to a building.*—Where the hall is a preferment out of the court, the parlour out of the hall; not, as in some old buildings, where the doors are so low, pygmies must stoop, and the rooms so high, that giants may stand upright. But now we are come to contrivance:—

## V.

*Let not thy common rooms be several, nor thy several rooms be common.*—The hall, which is a pandocheum,\* ought to lie open; and so ought passages and stairs, provided that the whole house be not spent in paths; chambers and closets are to be private and retired.

## VI.

*Light (God's eldest daughter!) is a principal beauty in a building.*—Yet it shines not alike from all parts of heaven. An east window welcomes the infant beams of the sun, before they are of strength to do any harm, and is offensive to none but a sluggard. A south window in summer is a chimney with a fire in it, and needs the screen of a curtain. In a west window in summer-time, towards night, the sun grows low and over-familiar, with more light than delight. A north window is best for butteries and cellars, where the beer will be sour for the sun's smiling on it. Thorough lights are best for rooms of entertainment, and windows on one side for dormitories. As for receipt:—

## VII.

*A house had better be too little for a day, than too great for a year.*—And it is easier borrowing of thy neighbour a brace of chambers for a night, than a bag of money for a twelve-month. It is vain, therefore, to proportion the receipt to an extraordinary occasion; as those who, by overbuilding their houses, have dilapidated their lands, and their states have been pressed to death under the weight of their house. As for strength:—

\* Πανδοχεῖον, “A house for the reception of guests, an inn.”—EDIT.

## VIII.

*Country-houses must be substantives, able to stand of themselves.*—Not, like city-buildings, supported by their neighbours on either side. By “strength” we mean such as may resist weather and time, not invasion,—castles being out of date in this peaceable age. As for the making of moats round about, it is questionable whether the fogs be not more unhealthful than the fish brings profit, or the water defence. Beauty remains behind, as the last to be regarded, because houses are made to be lived in, not looked on.

## IX.

*Let not the front look asquint on a stranger, but accost him right at his entrance.*—Uniformity, also, much pleaseth the eye; and it is observed, that free-stone, like a fair complexion, soonest waxeth old, whilst brick keeps her beauty longest.

## X.

*Let the office-houses observe the due distance from the mansion-house.*—Those are too familiar which presume to be of the same pile with it. The same may be said of stables and barns; without which, a house is like a city without works,—it can never hold out long.

## XI.

*Gardens, also, are to attend in their place.*—When God planted a garden eastward, he made to grow out of the ground every tree pleasant to the sight, and good for food. (Gen. ii. 9.) Sure, He knew better what was proper to a garden than those who now-a-days therein only feed the eyes, and starve both taste and smell.

To conclude: In building, rather believe any man, than an artificer in his own art, for matter of charges; not that they cannot—but will not—be faithful. Should they tell thee all the cost at the first, it would blast a young builder in the budding, and therefore they soothe thee up till it hath cost thee something to confute them. The spirit of building first possessed people after the flood, which then caused the confusion of languages, and since of the estate of many a man.

## CHAPTER VIII:

## OF ANGER.

ANGER is one of the sinews of the soul : he that wants it hath a maimed mind, and, with Jacob sinew-shrunk in the hollow of his thigh, must needs halt. Nor is it good to converse with such as cannot be angry, and, with the Caspian Sea, never ebb nor flow. This anger is either heavenly, when one is offended for God ; or hellish, when offended with God and goodness ; or earthly, in temporal matters. Which earthly anger (whereof we treat) may also be hellish, if for no cause, no great cause, too hot, or too long.

## MAXIM I.

*Be not angry with any without a cause.*—If thou beest, thou must not only, as the proverb saith, be appeased without amends, (having neither cost nor damage given thee,) but, as our Saviour saith, be in danger of the judgment. (Matt. v. 22.)

## II.

*Be not mortally angry with any for a venial fault.*—He will make a strange combustion in the state of his soul, who, at the landing of every cock-boat, sets the beacons on fire. To be angry for every toy, debases the worth of thy anger ; for he who will be angry for any thing, will be angry for nothing.

## III.

*Let not thy anger be so hot, but that the most torrid zone thereof may be habitable.*—Fright not people from thy presence with the terror of thy intolerable impatience. Some men, like a tiled house, are long before they take fire ; but, once on flame, there is no coming near to quench them.

## IV.

*Take heed of doing irrevocable acts in thy passion.*—As the revealing of secrets, which makes thee a bankrupt for society ever after. Neither do such things which, done once, are done for ever, so that no bemoaning can amend them. Samson's hair grew again, but not his eyes. Time may restore some losses, others are never to be repaired. Wherefore, in thy rage,

make no Persian decree which cannot be reversed or repealed ; but rather Polonian laws, which (they say) last but three days. Do not in an instant what an age cannot recompense.

## V.

*Anger kept till the next morning, with manna, doth putrefy and corrupt.*—Save that manna corrupted not at all, (and anger most of all,) kept the next sabbath. (Exod. xvi. 24.) St. Paul saith, “Let not the sun go down on your wrath ;” (Ephes. iv. 26;) to carry news, to the antipodes in another world, of thy revengeful nature. Yet let us take the apostle’s meaning, rather than his words,—with all possible speed to depose our passion ; not understanding him so literally that we may take leave to be angry till sunset ; then might our wrath lengthen with the days ; and men in Greenland, where day lasts above a quarter of a year, have plentiful scope of revenge. And as the English, by command from William the Conqueror, always raked up their fire, and put out their candles, when the curfew-bell was rung,\* let us then also quench all sparks of anger and heat of passion.

## VI.

*He that keeps anger long in his bosom giveth place to the devil.* (Ephes. iv. 27.)—And why should we make room for him, who will crowd in too fast of himself ? Heat of passion makes our souls to chap, and the devil creeps in at the crannies ; yea, a furious man in his fits may seem possessed with a devil,—foams, fumes, tears himself ; is deaf and dumb, in effect, to hear or speak reason ; sometimes wallows, stares, stamps, with fiery eyes and flaming cheeks. Had Narcissus himself seen his own face when he had been angry, he could never have fallen in love with himself.

\* COWEL’s “Interpreter,” out of STOW’s “Annals.”

## CHAPTER IX.

## OF EXPECTING PREFERMENT.

THERE are as many several tenures of expectation as of possession, some nearer, some more remote, some grounded on strong—others on weaker—reasons. As for a groundless expectation, it is a wilful self-delusion. We come to instructions how men should manage their hopes herein.

## MAXIM I.

*Hope not for impossibilities.*—For though the object of hope be *futurum possibile*, yet some are so mad as to feed their expectation on things, though not in themselves, yet to them, impossible, if we consider the weakness of the means whereby they seek to attain them. He needs to stand on tiptoes that hopes to touch the moon; and those who expect what in reason they cannot expect, may expect.

## II.

*Carefully survey what proportion the means thou hast bear to the end thou expectest.*—Count not a courtier's promise-of-course a specialty that he is bound to prefer thee. Seeing compliments often-times die in the *speaking*, why should thy hopes (grounded on them) live longer than the *hearing*? Perchance the text of his promise intended but common courtesies, which thy apprehension expounds speedy and special favours. Others make up the weakness of their means with conceit of the strength of their deserts, foolishly thinking that their own merits will be the undoubted patrons to present them to all void benefices.

## III.

*The heir-apparent to the next preferment may be disinherited by an unexpected accident.*—A gentleman, servant to the lord admiral Howard, was suitor to a lady above his deserts, grounding the confidence of his success on his relation to so honourable a lord; which lord gave the anchor as badge of his office, and therefore this suitor wrote in a window,—

“ If I be bold,  
The ANCHOR is my hold.”

But his cor-rival to the same mistress, coming into the same room, wrote under :—

“ Yet fear the worst :  
What, if the CABLE burst ? ”

Thus useless is the anchor of hope, (good for nothing but to deceive those that rely on it !) if the cable, or small cords of means and causes, whereon it depends, fail and miscarry. Daily experience tenders too many examples. A gentleman who gave a basilisk for his arms or crest, promised to make a young kinsman of his his heir ; which kinsman, to ingratiate himself, painted a basilisk in his study, and beneath it these verses :—

*Falleris, aspectu basiliscum occidere, Plini,  
Nam vita nostra spem basiliscus alit.*

“ The basilisk’s the only stay,  
My life preserving still ;  
Pliny, thou liedst, when thou didst say,  
The basilisk doth kill.”

But this rich gentleman, dying, frustrated his expectation, and bequeathed all his estate to another, whereupon the epigram was thus altered :—

*Certe aluit, sed spe vanâ, spes vana venenum :  
Ignoscas, Plini, verus es historicus.*

“ Indeed, vain hopes to me he gave,  
Whence I my poison drew :  
Pliny, thy pardon now I crave,  
Thy writings are too true.”

#### IV.

*Proportion thy expenses to what thou hast in possession, not to thy expectancies.*—Otherwise, he that feeds on wind must needs be griped with the colic at last. And if the ceremonial law forbade the Jews to seethe a kid in the mother’s milk, the law of good husbandry forbids us to eat a kid in the mother’s belly, —spending our pregnant hopes before they be delivered.

#### V.

*Imbrue not thy soul in bloody wishes of his death who parts thee and thy preferment.*—A murder the more common, because one cannot be arraigned for it on earth. But those are charitable murderers who wish them in heaven, not so much that they may have ease at their journey’s end, but because they must needs take death in the way.

## VI.

*In earthly matters, expectation takes up more joy on trust, than the fruition of the thing is able to discharge.*—The lion is not so fierce as painted; nor are matters so fair as the pencil of the expectant limns them out in his hopes. They fore-count their wives fair, fruitful, and rich, without any fault; their children witty, beautiful, and dutiful, without any frowardness; and as St. Basil held, that roses in Paradise before man's fall grew without prickles, they abstract the pleasures of things from the troubles annexed to them, which when they come to enjoy, they must take both together. Surely, a good unlooked-for is a virgin-happiness; whereas those who obtain what long they have gazed on in expectation, only marry what themselves have deflowered before.

## VII.

*When our hopes break, let our patience hold.*—Relying on God's providence without murmuring; who often provides for men, above what we can think or desire. When Robert Holgate could not peaceably enjoy his small living in Lincolnshire, because of the litigiousness of a neighbouring knight; coming to London to right himself, he came into the favour of king Henry VIII., and got, by degrees, the archbishopric of York.\* Thus God sometimes defeats our hopes, or disturbs our possession of lesser favours, thereby to bestow on his servants better blessings, if not here, hereafter.

\* GODWIN, in his "Catalogue of Archbishops of York."

## CHAPTER X.

## OF MEMORY.

It is the treasure-house of the mind, wherein the monuments thereof are kept and preserved. Plato makes it the mother of the muses.\* Aristotle sets it one degree further, making experience the mother of arts, memory the parent of experience. Philosophers place it in the rear of the head; and, it seems, the mine of memory lies there, because *there* naturally men dig for it, scratching it when they are at a loss. This again is two-fold: one, the simple retention of things; the other, a regaining them when forgotten.

## MAXIM I.

*Brute creatures equal, if not exceed, men in a bare retentive memory.*—Through how many labyrinths of woods, without other clew of thread than natural instinct, doth the hunted hare return to her muce? † How doth the little bee, flying into several meadows and gardens, sipping of many cups, yet never intoxicated, through an ocean (as I may say) of air, steadily steer herself home, without help of card or compass! But these cannot play an after-game, and recover what they have forgotten, which is done by the mediation of discourse.

## II.

*Artificial memory is rather a trick than an art, and more for the gain of the teacher than profit of the learners.*—Like the tossing of a pike, which is no part of the postures and motions thereof, and is rather for ostentation than use, to show the strength and nimbleness of the arm, and is often used by wandering soldiers as an introduction to beg. Understand it of the artificial rules which at this day are delivered by memory-mountebanks; ‡ for, sure, an art thereof may be made, (wherein

\* *Metaphys.*, lib. i. cap. 1.

† PHILLIPS and KERSEY define it thus: "Muse or *muset*, (a term in hunting,) the place through which a hare goes to relief." The sense which Fuller here attaches to it is that of a hare's *seat*, in modern sporting phraseology.—EDIT. ‡ In FULLER'S "Appeal of injured Innocence," (new edit. 8vo. 1840, p. 447,) he alludes to this passage, and adds an anecdote concerning these "memory-mountebanks;" which, as it shows his ready wit, is worthy of being preserved:—

"None alive ever heard me pretend to the art of memory, who, in my book,

as yet the world is defective,) and that no more destructive to natural memory than spectacles are to eyes, which girls in Holland wear from twelve years of age. But till this be found out, let us observe these plain rules:—

## III.

*First soundly infix in thy mind what thou desirest to remember.*—What wonder is it if agitation of business jog that out of thy head, which was there rather tacked than fastened? whereas those notions which get in by *violenta possessio* will abide there till *ejectio firma*, sickness or extreme age, dispossess them. It is best knocking-in the nail over-night, and clinching it the next morning.

## IV.

*Overburden not thy memory, to make so faithful a servant a slave.*—Remember, Atlas was weary. Have as much reason as a camel,—to rise when thou hast thy full load. Memory [is] like a purse,—if it be over-full that it cannot shut, all will drop out of it. Take heed of a gluttonous curiosity to feed on many things, lest the greediness of the appetite of thy memory spoil the digestion thereof. Beza's case was peculiar and memorable: Being above four-score years of age, he perfectly could say by heart any Greek chapter in St. Paul's epistles, or any thing else which he had learned long before, but forgot whatsoever was newly told him;\* his memory, like an inn, retaining old guests, but having no room to entertain new.

## V.

*Spoil not thy memory by thine own jealousy, nor make it bad by suspecting it.*—How canst thou find that true which thou wilt not trust? St. Augustine tells us of his friend Simplicius, who, being asked, could tell all Virgil's verses backward and forward; and yet the same party vowed to God, that he knew not that he could do it till they did try him.† Sure, there is concealed strength in men's memories, which they take no notice of.

(‘Holy State,’ p. 165,) have decried it as a trick, no art; and, indeed, is more of fancy than memory. I confess, some ten years since, when I came out of the pulpit of St. Dunstan's East, one (who since wrote a book thereof) told me in the vestry, before credible people, that he in Sidney College had taught me *the art of memory*. I returned unto him, *that it was not so; for I COULD NOT REMEMBER that I had ever seen his face!* Which, I conceive, was a real refutation.”—EDIT.

\* THUANI *Obit. Doctorum Virorum*, p. 384. + *Testatus est Deum, nescisse se hoc posse ante illud experimentum.*—AUGUSTINUS, *Liber De Anima et ejus Orig.*, tom. vii. cap. 7.

## VI.

*Marshal thy notions into a handsome method.*—One will carry twice more weight trussed and packed up in bundles, than when it lies untowardly flapping and hanging about his shoulders. Things orderly fardled up under heads are most portable.

## VII.

*Adventure not all thy learning in one bottom, but divide it betwixt thy memory and thy note-books.*—He that, with Bias, carries all his learning about him in his head, will utterly be beggared and bankrupt, if a violent disease (a merciless thief !) should rob and strip him. I know, some have a common-place against common-place books, and yet, perchance, will privately make use of what publicly they declaim against. A common-place book contains many notions in garrison, whence the owner may draw out an army into the field on competent warning.

## VIII.

*Moderate diet and good air preserve memory.*—But what air is best, I dare not define, when such great ones differ. Some say, a pure and subtle air is best, another commends a thick and foggy air.\* For the Pisans, sited in the fens and marsh of Arnus, have excellent memories, as if the foggy air were a cap for their heads.†

## IX.

*Thankfulness to God for it, continues the memory.*—Whereas some proud people have been visited with such oblivion, that they have forgotten their own names. Staupitius, tutor to Luther, and a godly man, in a vain ostentation of his memory repeated Christ's genealogy (Matt. i.) by heart in his sermon; but, being out about the captivity of Babylon, "I see," saith he, "God resisteth the proud;" and so betook himself to his book.‡ Abuse not thy memory to be sin's register, nor make advantage thereof for wickedness. Excellently Augustine: § *Quidam verò pessimi memoriam sunt mirabili, qui tanto peiores sunt, quanto minus possunt, quæ male cogitant, oblivisci.*||

\* PLATO, ARISTOTLE, TULLY.

crassiore fruatur aëre.—MERCATOR, "Atlas," in Tuscia.

ADAMUS, in *Vitâ Staupitii*, p. 20.

† *Singulari valent memoriam, quo urbs*

*‡ MELCHIOR*

*§ De Civitate Dei*, lib. vii. cap. 3.

|| "Some of the most wicked of mankind possess wonderful powers of memory; but they are such persons as become still worse, by their greater inability to forget the evil thoughts which they have themselves conceived."—EDIT.

## CHAPTER XI.

## OF FANCY.

IT is an inward sense of the soul, for a while retaining and examining things brought in thither by the common sense. It is the most boundless and restless faculty of the soul : for whilst the understanding and the will are kept as it were in *liberâ custodiâ* to their objects of *verum et bonum*, the fancy is free from all engagements. It digs without spade, sails without ship, flies without wings, builds without charges, fights without bloodshed, in a moment striding from the centre to the circumference of the world, by a kind of omnipotency creating and annihilating things in an instant ; and things divorced in nature are married in fancy, as in a lawful place. It is also most restless : whilst the senses are bound, and reason in a manner asleep, fancy, like a sentinel, walks the round, ever working, never wearied. The chief diseases of the fancy are, either that they are too wild and high-soaring, or else too low and grovelling, or else too desultory and over-voluble.

Of the first :—

## MAXIM I.

*If thy fancy be but a little too rank, age itself will correct it.*—To lift too high is no fault in a young horse, because with travelling he will mend it, for his own ease. Thus, lofty fancies in young men will come down of themselves, and, in process of time, the overplus will shrink to be but even measure.

But if this will not do it, then observe these rules :—

## II.

*Take part always with thy judgment against thy fancy, in any thing wherein they shall dissent.*—If thou suspectest thy conceits too luxuriant, herein account thy suspicion a legal conviction, and damn whatsoever thou doubttest of. Warily Tully : *Benè monent, qui vetant quicquam facere, de quo dubitas, aequum sit an iniquum.*\*

\* “ Those are excellent moralists who prohibit you from doing any thing, concerning the propriety or impropriety of which you entertain some doubts.”—EDIT.

## III.

*Take the advice of a faithful friend, and submit thy inventions to his censure.*—When thou pennest an oration, let him have the power of *Index Expurgatorius*, to expunge what he pleaseth; and do not thou, like a fond mother, cry if the child of thy brain be corrected for playing the wanton. Mark the arguments and reasons of his alterations,—why that phrase least proper, this passage more cautious and advised; and, after a while, thou shalt perform the place in thine own person, and not go out of thyself for a censurer.

If thy fancy be too low and humble,—

## IV.

*Let thy judgment be king, but not tyrant, over it, to condemn harmless, yea, commendable, conceits.*—Some, for fear their orations should giggle, will not let them smile. Give it also liberty to rove, for it will not be extravagant. There is no danger that weak folks, if they walk abroad, will straggle far, as wanting strength.

## V.

*Acquaint thyself with reading poets, for there fancy is in her throne.*—And in time the sparks of the author's wit will catch hold on the reader, and inflame him with love, liking, and desire of imitation. I confess, there is more required to teach one to write than to see a copy. However, there is a secret force of fascination in reading poems to raise and provoke fancy.

If thy fancy be over-voluble, then—

## VI.

*Whip this vagrant home to the first object whereon it should be settled.*—Indeed, nimbleness is the perfection of this faculty; but levity the bane of it. Great is the difference betwixt a swift horse, and a skittish that will stand on no ground. Such is the ubiquitary fancy, which will keep long residence on no one subject, but is so courteous to strangers, that it ever welcomes that conceit most which comes last; and new species supplant the old ones, before seriously considered. If this be the fault of thy fancy, I say, whip it home to the first object whereon it should be settled. This do as often as occasion requires, and by degrees the fugitive servant will learn to abide by his work without running away.

## VII.

*Acquaint thyself by degrees with hard and knotty studies.*—As school-divinity, which will clog thy over-nimble fancy. True, at the first it will be as welcome to thee as a prison, and their very solutions will seem knots unto thee. But take not too much at once, lest thy brain turn edge. Taste it first as a potion, for physic; and by degrees thou shalt drink it as beer, for thirst: practice will make it pleasant. Mathematics are also good for this purpose: if beginning to try a conclusion, thou must make an end, lest thou losest thy pains that are past, and must proceed seriously and exactly. I meddle not with those Bedlam-fancies, all whose conceits are antics; but leave them for the physician to purge with hellebore.

## VIII.

*To clothe low-creeping matter with high-flown language, is not fine fancy, but flat foolery.*—It rather loads than raises a wren, to fasten the feathers of an ostrich to her wings. Some men's speeches are like the high mountains in Ireland, having a dirty bog in the top of them; the very ridge of them in high words having nothing of worth, but what rather stalls than delights the auditor.

## IX.

*Fine fancies in manufactures invent engines rather pretty than useful.*—And, commonly, one trade is too narrow for them. They are better to project new ways, than to prosecute old; and are rather skilful in many mysteries, than thriving in one. They affect not voluminous inventions, wherein many years must constantly be spent to perfect them; except there be in them variety of pleasant employment.

## X.

*Imagination (the work of the fancy) hath produced real effects.*—Many serious and sad examples hereof may be produced. I will only insist on a merry one. A gentleman having led a company of children beyond their usual journey, they began to be weary, and jointly cried to him to carry them; which, because of their multitude, he could not do, but told them he would provide them horses to ride on. Then cutting little wands out of the hedge as nags for them, and a great stake as a gelding for himself, thus mounted, fancy put mettle into their legs, and they came cheerfully home.

## XI.

*Fancy runs most furiously when a guilty conscience drives it.*—One that owed much money, and had many creditors, as he walked London-streets in the evening, a tenter-hook caught his cloak. “At whose suit?” said he, conceiving some bailiff had arrested him. Thus guilty consciences are afraid where no fear is, and count every creature they meet a serjeant sent from God to punish them.

---

## CHAPTER XII.

## OF NATURAL FOOLS.

THEY have the cases of men, and little else of them beside speech and laughter. And, indeed, it may seem strange that *risibile* being the property of man alone, they who have least of man should have most thereof, laughing without cause or measure.

## MAXIM I.

*Generally nature hangs out a sign of simplicity in the face of a fool.*—And there is enough in his countenance for a hue-and-cry to take him on suspicion: or else it is stamped on the figure of his body; their heads sometimes so little, that there is no room for wit; sometimes so long, that there is no wit for so much room.

## II.

*Yet some, by their faces, may pass current enough till they cry themselves down by their speaking.*—Thus men know the bell is cracked when they hear it tolled; yet some that have stood out the assault of two or three questions, and have answered pretty rationally, have afterwards of their own accord betrayed and yielded themselves to be fools.

## III.

*The oaths and railing of fools is often-times no fault of theirs, but their teachers.*—The Hebrew word [ברך] *Barac* signifies “to bless,” and “to curse;” and it is the speaker’s pleasure if he use it in the worst acceptation. Fools of themselves are

equally capable to pray and to swear ; they, therefore, have the greatest sin who, by their example or otherwise, teach them so to do.

## IV.

*One may get wisdom by looking on a fool.*—In beholding him, think how much thou art beholden to HIM that suffered thee not to be like him. Only God's pleasure put a difference betwixt you. And consider, that a fool and a wise man are alike both in the starting-place—their birth, and at the post—their death ; only they differ in the race of their lives.

## V.

*It is unnatural to laugh at a natural.*—How can the object of thy pity be the subject of thy pastime ? I confess, sometimes the strangeness, and, as I may say, witty simplicity of their actions may extort a smile from a serious man, who at the same time may smile at them and sorrow for them. But it is one thing to laugh at them *in transitu*, “a snap and away,” and another to make a set meal in jeering them, and, as the Philistines, to send for Samson to make them sport.

## VI.

*To make a trade of laughing at a fool, is the highway to become one.*—Tully confessed, that whilst he laughed at one Hircus, a very ridiculous man,\* *dum illum rideo penè factus sum ille.*† And one telleth us of Gallus Vibius, a man first of great eloquence, and afterwards of great madness, which seized not on him so much by accident as his own affectation, so long mimically imitating madmen that he became one.‡

## VII.

*Many have been the wise speeches of fools, though not so many as the foolish speeches of wise men.*—Now, the wise speeches of these silly souls proceed from one of these reasons :—either because, talking much, and shooting often, they must needs hit the mark sometimes, though not by aim, by hap :—or else because a fool's *mediocriter* is *optimè* ; sense from his mouth, a sentence ; and a tolerable speech cried up for an apophthegm :—or, lastly, because God may sometimes illuminate them, and

\* *Epist.*, lib. ii. epist. 9.      + “While I was laughing at him, I became almost the same kind of being.”—*EDIT.*      ‡ *Dum insanos imitatur, quod assimulabat ad vivum redegit.*—*RHODIGINUS, Antiq.*, lib. xi. cap. 13.

(especially towards their death) admit them to the possession of some part of reason. A poor beggar in Paris, being very hungry, stayed so long in a cook's shop, who was dishing-up of meat, till his stomach was satisfied with the only smell thereof. The choleric, covetous cook demanded of him to pay for his breakfast. The poor man denied it, and the controversy was referred to the deciding of the next man that should pass by, who chanced to be the most notorious idiot in the whole city. He, on the relation of the matter, determined that the poor man's money should be put betwixt two empty dishes, and the cook should be recompensed with the gingling of the poor man's money, as he was satisfied with the only smell of the cook's meat. And this is affirmed by credible writers as no fable, but an undoubted fact.\* More waggish was that of a rich-landed fool, whom a courtier had begged, and carried about to wait on him. He, coming with his master to a gentleman's house where the picture of a fool was wrought in a fair suit of arras, cut the picture out with a penknife. And being chidden for so doing, "You have more cause," said he, "to thank me; for if my master had seen the picture of the fool, he would have begged the hangings of the king as he did my lands." When the standers-by comforted a natural who lay on his death-bed, and told him that four proper fellows should carry his body to the church: "Yea," quoth he, "but I had rather by half go thither myself;" and then prayed to God, at his last gasp, not to require more of him than he gave him.

As for a changeling, who is not one child changed for another, but one child on a sudden much changed from itself; and [as] for a jester, which some count a necessary evil in a court, (an office which none but he that hath wit can perform, and none but he that wants wit will perform,) I conceive them not to belong to the present subject.

\* JO. AND. PANOR., BARBA, *et alii indè ad nostram [æstatem]*; HIERO. FRANC. in lib. *Furios. De Reg. Jurisff.*; BOER. *Decis. xxiii. n. 58*; MANTIC. *De Conjecti. ult. v. lib. ii. tit. 5. n. 8*; CORSET. *Sing. Verbi Testamentum.*

## CHAPTER XIII.

## OF RECREATIONS.

**RECREATIONS** is a second creation, when weariness hath almost annihilated one's spirits. It is the breathing of the soul, which otherwise would be stifled with continual business. We may trespass in them, if using such as are forbidden by the—lawyer, as against the statutes—physician, as against health—divine, as against conscience.

## MAXIM I.

*Be well satisfied in thy conscience of the lawfulness of the recreation thou usest.*—Some fight against cock-fighting, and bait bull- and bear-baiting, because man is not to be a common barrister to set the creatures at discord; and, seeing antipathy betwixt creatures was kindled by man's sin, what pleasure can he take to see it burn? Others are of the contrary opinion, and that Christianity gives us a placard\* to use these sports; and that man's charter of dominion over the creatures enables him to employ them as well for pleasure as necessity. In these, as in all other doubtful recreations, be well assured, first, of the legality of them. He that sins against his conscience, sins with a witness.

## II.

*Spill not the morning (the quintessence of the day!) in recreations.*—For sleep itself is a recreation. Add not, therefore, sauce to sauce; and he cannot properly have any title to be refreshed, *who* was not first faint. Pastime, like wine, is poison in the morning. It is then good husbandry to sow the head, which hath lain fallow all night, with some serious work. Chiefly, intrench not on the Lord's-day to use unlawful sports; this were to spare thine own flock, and to shear God's lamb.

\* According to PHILLIPS and KERSEY, “*Placard*, (among the French,) is a table wherein laws, orders, &c., are posted or hung up: also a libel, or abusive writing, posted up or dispersed abroad: in our common-law, a particular license, by which a man is allowed to shoot with a gun, or to use unlawful games, &c.” Fuller here uses the word in the latter, or legal, sense.—EDIT.

## III.

*Let thy recreations be ingenious, and bear proportion with thine age.*—If thou sayest with Paul, “When I was a child, I did as a child ;” say also with him, “But when I was a man, I put away childish things.” Wear also the child’s coat, if thou usest his sports.

## IV.

*Take heed of boisterous and over-violent exercises.*—Ringing oft-times hath made good music on the bells, and put men’s bodies out of tune ; so that, by over-heating themselves, they have rung their own passing-bell.

## V.

*Yet the ruder sort of people scarce count any thing a sport which is not loud and violent.*—The Muscovite women esteem none loving husbands except they beat their wives. It is no pastime with country-clowns that cracks not pates, breaks not shins, bruises not limbs, tumbles and tosses not all the body. They think themselves not warm in their gears, till they are all on fire ; and count it but dry sport, till they swim in their own sweat. Yet I conceive the physician’s rule in exercises, *Ad ruborem*, but *non ad sudorem*,\* is too scant measure.

## VI.

*Refresh that part of thyself which is most wearied.*—If thy life be sedentary, exercise thy body ; if stirring and active, recreate thy mind. But take heed of cozening thy mind, in setting it to do a double task, under pretence of giving it a play-day, as in the labyrinth of chess, and other tedious and studious games.

## VII.

*Yet recreations distasteful to some dispositions relish best to others.*—Fishing with an angle is, to some, rather a torture than a pleasure,—to stand an hour as mute as the fish they mean to take ; yet herewithal Dr. Whitaker was much delighted.† When some noblemen had gotten William Cecil, lord Burleigh, and Treasurer of England, to ride with them a-hunting, and the sport began to be cold, “What call you this ?” said the Treasurer. “O ! now,” said they, “the dogs are at a fault.” “Yea,” quoth the Treasurer, “take me again in such a fault,

\* “Till you are in a gentle glow, but not till you sweat.”—EDIT.  
his “Life,” writ by Mr. Ashton.

† In

and I will give you leave to punish me!" Thus, as soon may the same meat please all palates, as the same sport suit with all dispositions.

## VIII.

*Running, leaping, and dancing, the descants on the plain song of walking, are all excellent exercises.*—And yet those are the best recreations which, beside refreshing, enable, at least dispose, men to some other good ends. Bowling teaches men's hands and eyes mathematics and the rules of proportion. Swimming hath saved many a man's life, when himself hath been both the wares and the ship. Tilting and fencing is war without anger; and manly sports are the grammar of military performance.

## IX.

*But, above all, shooting is a noble recreation, and a half-liberal art.*—A rich man told a poor man, that he walked to get a stomach for his meat. "And I," said the poor man, "walk to get meat for my stomach." Now, shooting would have fitted both their turns; it provides food when men are hungry, and helps digestion when they are full. King Edward VI., though he drew no strong bow, shot very well; and when once John Dudley, duke of Northumberland, commended him for hitting the mark: "You shot better," quoth the king, "when you shot off my good uncle Protector's head." But our age sees his successor exceeding him in that art; whose eye, like his judgment, is clear and quick to discover the mark, and his hands as just in shooting as in dealing aright.\*

## X.

*Some sports, being granted to be lawful, more propend to be ill than well-used.*—Such I count stage-plays, when made always the actors' work, and often the spectators' recreation. Zeuxis, the curious picturer, painted a boy holding a dish full of grapes in his hand, done so lively, that the birds, being deceived, flew to peck the grapes. But Zeuxis, in an ingenious choler, was angry with his own workmanship. "Had I," said he, "made the boy as lively as the grapes, the birds would have been afraid to touch them."† Thus two things are set forth to us in stage-plays: some grave sentences, prudent counsels, and punishment of vicious examples; and, with these, desperate oaths, lustful talk, and riotous acts are so personated to the life, that wantons

\* This refers to the princely accomplishments and high character of king Charles I.  
—EDIT.      + *PLINII Nat. Hist.*, lib. xxxv. cap. 10.

are tickled with delight, and feed their palates upon them. It seems, the goodness is not portrayed out with equal accents of liveliness, as the wicked things are: otherwise, men would be deterred from vicious courses with seeing the woful success which follows them. But the main is, wanton speeches on stages are the devil's ordinance to beget badness; but I question whether the pious speeches spoken there be God's ordinance to increase goodness, as wanting both his institution and benediction.

## XI.

*✓ Choke not thy soul with immoderate pouring-in the cordial of pleasures.*—The creation lasted but six days of the first week. Profane they whose recreation lasts seven days every week. Rather abridge thyself of thy lawful liberty herein; it being a wary rule which St. Gregory\* gives us: *Solus in illicitis non cadit, qui se aliquando et a licitis cautè restringit;* † and then recreations shall both strengthen labour, and sweeten rest; and we may expect God's blessing and protection on us in following them, as well as in doing our work. For he that saith grace for his meat, in it prays also to God to bless the sauce unto him. As for those that will not take lawful pleasure, I am afraid they will take unlawful pleasure, and, by lacing themselves too hard, grow awry on one side.

\* *Moral.*, lib. v.; *et Homil.* xxxv., *supra Evang.*

+ “The only man who does not fall by unlawful things, is he who occasionally refrains with caution from such things as are lawful.”—*EDIT.*

## CHAPTER XIV.

## OF TOMBS.

TOMBS are the clothes of the dead. A grave is but a plain suit, and a rich monument is one embroidered. Most moderate men have been careful for the decent interment of their corpse. Few of the fond mind of Arbogastus, an Irish saint, and bishop of Spires in Germany, who would be buried near the gallows, in imitation of our Saviour, whose grave was in Mount Calvary, near the place of execution.\*

## MAXIM I.

*It is a provident way to make one's tomb in one's life-time.—Both hereby to prevent the negligence of heirs, and to mind him of his mortality.* Virgil tells us, that, when bees swarm in the air, and two armies, meeting together, fight as it were a set battle with great violence, cast but a little dust upon them, and they will be quiet :—

*Hi motus animorum, atque hæc certamina tanta,  
Pulveris exigui jactu compressa quiescent.†*

“ These stirrings of their minds and strivings vast,  
If but a little dust on them be cast,  
Are straightways stinted, and quite overpast.”

Thus the most ambitious motions and thoughts of man's mind are quickly quelled when dust is thrown on him, whereof his fore-prepared sepulchre is an excellent remembrancer.

## II.

*Yet some seem to have built their tombs, therein to bury their thoughts of dying.*—Never thinking thereof, but embracing the world with greater greediness. A gentleman made choice of a fair stone, and, intending the same for his grave-stone, caused it to be pitched up in a field a pretty distance from his house, and used often to shoot at it for his exercise. “ Yea, but,” said a

\* *WARRÆUS, De Scriptor. Hiber.,* p. 26.

† *Georgic, lib. iv.*

wag that stood by, “you would be loath, Sir, to hit the mark.” And so are many unwilling to die, who, notwithstanding, have erected their monuments.

## III.

*Tombs ought, in some sort, to be proportioned not to the wealth, but deserts, of the party interred.*—Yet may we see some rich man of mean worth loaden under a tomb big enough for a prince to bear. There were officers appointed in the Grecian games, who always by public authority did pluck down the statues erected to the victors, if they exceeded the true symmetry and proportion of their bodies.\* We need such now-a-days to order monuments to men’s merits, chiefly to reform such depopulating tombs as have no good fellowship with them, but engross all the room, leaving neither seats for the living, nor graves for the dead. It was a wise and thrifty law which Reutha king of Scotland made: That noblemen should have so many pillars, or long pointed stones, set on their sepulchres, as they had slain enemies in the wars.† If this order were also enlarged to those who in peace had excellently deserved of the church or commonwealth, it might well be revived.

## IV.

*Over-costly tombs are only baits for sacrilege.*—Thus sacrilege hath beheaded that peerless prince, king Henry V., the body of whose statue on his tomb in Westminster was covered over with silver plate gilded, and his head of massy silver; ‡ both which now are stolen away. Yea, hungry palates will feed on coarser meat. I had rather Mr. Stow § than I should tell you of a nobleman who sold the monuments of noblemen, in St. Augustine’s church in Broad-street, for a hundred pounds, which cost many thousands, and, in the place thereof, made fair stablings for horses; as if Christ, who was born in a stable, should be brought into it the second time. It was not without cause, in the civil law, that a wife might be divorced from her husband, if she could prove him to be one that had broken the sepulchres of the dead: || for it was presumed he must needs be a tyranical husband to his wife, who had not so much mercy as to spare the ashes of the departed.

\* LUCIANUS, Περὶ Εἰκόνων.      + HECTOR BOETHIUS, in the “Life of King Reutha.”      ‡ J. SPEED, in the end of Henry V.

§ In the Description of London, Broad-street Ward, p. 184.      || Si nimirum sepulchorum dissolutorem esse probaverit.—KIRKMAN, *De Funer. Roman.*, lib. ii. cap. 26, *ex cod. De Repudiis.*

## V.

*The shortest, plainest, and truest epitaphs are best.*—I say, “the shortest ;” for when a passenger sees a chronicle written on a tomb, he takes it on trust, some great man lies there buried, without taking pains to examine who he is. Mr. Camden in his “Remains” presents us with examples of great men that had little epitaphs.\* And when once I asked a witty gentleman, an honoured friend of mine, what epitaph was fittest to be written on Mr. Camden’s tomb ; “Let it be,” said he, “CAMDEN’S REMAINS.”

I say also “the plainest ;” for except the sense lie above ground, few will trouble themselves to dig for it. Lastly, it must be “true ;” not, as in some monuments, where the red veins in the marble may seem to blush at the falsehoods written on it. He was a witty man that first taught a stone to speak, but he was a wicked man that taught it first to lie.

## VI.

*To want a grave is the cruelty of the living, not the misery of the dead.*—An English gentleman, not long since, did lie on his death-bed in Spain, and the Jesuits did flock about him to pervert him to their religion. All was in vain. Their last argument was, “If you will not turn Roman Catholic, then your body shall be unburied.” “Then,” answered he, “I will stink ;” and so turned his head, and died. Thus love, if not to the dead, to the living, will make him, if not a grave, a hole : and it was the beggar’s epitaph :—

*Nudus eram vivus, mortuus ecce tegor.*

“ Naked I lived, but, being dead,  
Now, behold, I’m covered.”

*A good memory is the best monument.*—Others are subject to casualty and time ; and we know that the pyramids themselves, doting with age, have forgotten the names of their founders. To conclude : Let us be careful to provide rest for our souls, and our bodies will provide rest for themselves. And let us not be herein like unto gentlewomen, who care not to keep the inside of the orange, but candy and preserve only the outside thereof.

\* As, *Fui Caius. Scaligeri quod reliquum est. Depositum Cardinalis Poli, &c.*

## CHAPTER XV.

## OF DEFORMITY.

DEFORMITY is either natural, voluntary, or adventitious, being either caused by God's unseen providence, (by men nicknamed "chance,") or by man's cruelty. We will take them in order.

## MAXIM I.

*If thou beest not so handsome as thou wouldest have been, thank God thou art no more unhandsome than thou art.*—It is his mercy thou art not the mark for passengers' fingers to point at, an heteroclite in nature, with some member defective or redundant. Be glad that thy clay-cottage hath all the necessary rooms thereunto belonging, though the outside be not so fairly plastered as some others.

## II.

*Yet it is lawful and commendable by art to correct the defects and deformities of nature.*—Ericthonius, being a goodly man from the girdle upwards, but, as the poets feign, having downwards the body of a serpent, (moralize him to have had some defect in his feet,) first invented chariots,\* wherein he so sate that the upper parts of him might be seen, and the rest of his body concealed.† Little heed is to be given to his lying pen, who maketh Anna Boleyn, mother to queen Elizabeth, the first finder-out and wearer of ruffs, to cover a wen she had in her neck.‡ Yet the matter is not much, such an addition of art being without any fraud or deceit.

## III.

*Mock not at those who are misshapen by nature.*—There is the same reason of the poor and of the deformed ; he that despiseth them despiseth God that made them. A poor man is a picture of God's own making, but set in a plain frame, not gilded ; a deformed man is also his workmanship, but not drawn with

\* Fuller employs the word *charets* ; which our lexicographers derive from the Law-Latin word *charea*, "a car," "cart," or "chariot."—EDIT.      † SERVIUS in *illud Virgili*, lib. iii. *Georg.*, *Primus Ericthonius, &c.*      ‡ SANDERS *De Schismate Anglic.*, lib. i. p. 17.

even lines and lively colours: the former not for want of wealth—as the latter not for want of skill—but both for the pleasure—of the Maker. As for Aristotle, who would have parents expose their deformed children to the wide world without caring for them, his opinion herein, not only deformed but most monstrous, deserves rather to be exposed to the scorn and contempt of all men.\*

## IV.

*Some people, handsome by nature, have wilfully deformed themselves.*—Such as wear Bacchus's colours in their faces, arising not from having—but being—bad livers. When the woman considered the child that was laid by her, “Behold,” said she, “it was not my son, which I did bear.” (1 Kings iii. 21.) Should God survey the faces of many men and women, he would not own and acknowledge them for those whom he created: many are so altered in colour, and some in sex, women to men and men to women in their monstrous fashions; so that they who behold them cannot, by the evidence of their apparel, give up their verdict of what sex they are. It is most safe to call the users of these hermaphroditical fashions, “Frances” and “Philips,” names agreeing to both sexes.

## V.

*Confessors, who wear the badges of truth, are thereby made the more beautiful.*—Though deformed in time of persecution for Christ's sake, through men's malice. This made Constantine the Great to kiss the hole in the face of Paphnutius, out of which the tyrant Maximinus had bored his eye for the profession of the faith; † the good emperor making much of the socket even when the candle was put out. Next these, wounds in the war are most honourable. Halting ‡ is the stateliest march of a soldier; and it is a brave sight to see the flesh of an ancient as torn as his colours. He that mocks at the marks of valour in a soldier's face, is likely to live to have the brands of justice on his own shoulders.

## VI.

*Nature often-times recompenseth deformed bodies with excellent wits.*—Witness Æsop, than whose Fables children cannot read

\* *Polit.*, lib. vii. cap. 16.

† *RUFFINUS*, lib. i. cap. iv.

‡ Not

in the modern military meaning of “stopping,” but in the ancient sense of “limping,” “walking like a lame man.” “Bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt and the blind.” (Luke xiv. 21.)—ED. T.

an easier, nor men a wiser, book ; for all latter moralists do but write comments upon them. Many jeering wits who have thought to have rid at their ease on the bowed backs of some cripples, have, by their unhappy answers, been unhorsed and thrown flat on their own backs. A jeering gentleman commended a beggar, who was deformed, and little better than blind, for having an excellent eye. "True," said the beggar, "for I can discern an honest man from such a knave as you are !"

## VII.

*Their souls have been the chapels of sanctity, whose bodies have been the spitals\* of deformity.*—An emperor of Germany, coming by chance on a Sunday into a church, found there a most misshapen priest, *penè portentum naturæ*,† insomuch as the emperor scorned and contemned him. But when he heard him read those words in the service, "For it is He that made us, and not we ourselves," the emperor checked his own proud thoughts, and made inquiry into the quality and condition of the man ; and finding him, on examination, to be most learned and devout, he made him archbishop of Cologne, which place he did excellently discharge.‡

\* This word is also used by ancient English writers in the forms of *spital*, *spittall*, *spittle*, and *spittle-house*, for "hospital" or "alms-house."—EDIT.      † "Almost a monster of nature."—EDIT.      ‡ *GULIELMUS MALMSBUR.*, lib. ii. cap. 10.

## CHAPTER XVI.

## OF PLANTATIONS.

PLANTATIONS make mankind broader, as generation makes it thicker. To advance a happy plantation, the undertakers, planters, and place itself must contribute their endeavours.

## MAXIM I.

*Let the prime undertakers be men of no shallow heads, nor narrow fortunes.*—Such as have a real estate; so that, if defeated in their adventure abroad, they may have a retreating-place at home, and such as will be contented, with their present loss, to be benefactors to posterity. But if the prince himself be pleased not only to wink at them with his permission, but also to smile on them with his encouragement, there is great hope of success: for then he will grant them some immunities and privileges. Otherwise, (infants must be swathed, not laced!) young plantations\* will never grow, if straitened with as hard laws as settled commonwealths.

## II.

*Let the planters be honest, skilful, and painful people.*—For if they be such as leap thither from the gallows, can any hope for cream out of scum? when men send, as I may say, Christian savages to Heathen savages! It was rather bitterly than falsely spoken concerning one of our Western Plantations, consisting most of dissolute people, that it was “very like unto England, as being spit out of the very mouth of it.” Nor must the planters be only honest, but industrious also. What hope is there that they who were drones at home, will be bees abroad? especially if far off from any to oversee them.

## III.

*Let the place be naturally strong, or, at leastwise, capable of fortification.*—For though, at the first, planters are suffi-

\* The application of this word to “colonies” and “colonization,” so common in Fuller’s days, has gradually been disused. The definition of PHILLIPS and KERSEY is that which generally obtained till the reign of queen Anne:—“*Plantation*, a company of people sent from one country to settle in another: also, a spot of ground in America, for the planting of tobacco, sugar-canæ, &c.”—EDIT.

ciently fenced with their own poverty ; and though, at the beginning, their worst enemies will spare them, out of pity to themselves, their spoil not countervailing the cost of spoiling them ; yet when once they have gotten wealth, they must get strength to defend it. Here know, islands are easily shut, whereas continents have their doors ever open, not to be bolted without great charges. Besides, unadvised are those planters who, having choice of ground, have built their towns in places of a servile nature,—as being over-awed and constantly commanded by some hills about them.

## IV.

*Let it have a self-sufficiency, or some staple commodity, to balance traffic with other countries.*—As for a self-sufficiency, few countries can stand alone ; and such as can for matter of want, will for wantonness lean on others. Staple commodities are such as are never out of fashion, as belonging to a man's being,—being with comfort, being with delight,—the luxury of our age having made superfluities necessary. And such a place will thrive the better, when men may say with Isaac, *Rehoboth*, “Now the Lord hath made room for us ;” (Gen. xxvi. 22;) when new colonies come not in with extirpation of the natives ; for this is rather a supplanting than a planting.\*

## V.

*Let the planters labour to be loved and feared of the natives.*—With whom let them use all just bargaining, being as naked in their dealings with them, as the other in their going ; keeping all covenants, performing all promises with them. Let them embrace all occasions to convert them, knowing that each convert is a conquest ; and it is more honour to overcome Paganism in one, than to conquer a thousand Pagans. As for the inscription of a Deity in their hearts, it need not be new written, but only new scoured, in them. I am confident, that America, though the youngest sister of the four, is now grown marriageable, and daily hopes to get Christ to her Husband, by the preaching of the Gospel. This makes me attentively to listen after some Protestants' first-fruits, in hope the harvest will ripen afterwards.

\* These and the subjoined reflections are indicative of a benevolent heart and an enlightened understanding, worthy of a Christian philanthropist.—EDIT.

## CHAPTER XVII.

## OF CONTENTMENT.

It is one property which (they say) is required of those who seek for the philosopher's stone, that they must not do it with any covetous desire to be rich ; for otherwise they shall never find it. But most true it is, that whosoever would have this jewel of contentment, (which turns all into gold, yea, want into wealth,) must come with minds divested of all ambitious and covetous thoughts, else are they never likely to obtain it. We will describe contentment first negatively :—

## MAXIM I.

*It is not a senseless stupidity [respecting] what becomes of our outward estates.*—God would have us take notice of all accidents, which, from Him, happen to us in worldly matters. Had the martyrs had the dead palsy before they went to the stake to be burnt, their sufferings had not been so glorious.

## II.

*It is not a word-braving or scorning of all wealth in discourse.*—Generally those who boast most of contentment, have least of it. Their very boasting shows, that they want something, and basely beg it, namely, commendation. These in their language are like unto kites in their flying, which mount in the air so scornfully, as if they disdained to stoop for the whole earth, fetching about many stately circuits. But what is the spirit these conjurers, with so many circles, intend to raise ? A poor chicken, or, perchance, a piece of carrion : and so the height of the others' proud boasting will humble itself for a little base gain.

## III.

*But it is a humble and willing submitting ourselves to God's pleasure in all conditions.*—One observeth, (how truly, I dispute not !) that the French naturally have so elegant and graceful a carriage, that what posture of body soever in their salutations, or what fashion of attire soever they are pleased to take on them, it doth so beseem them that one would think nothing

can become them better. Thus, contentment makes men carry themselves gracefully in wealth, want, in health, sickness, freedom, fetters, yea, what condition soever God allots them.

## IV.

*It is no breach of contentment for men to complain, that their sufferings are unjust, as offered by men.*—Provided they allow them for just, as proceeding from God, who useth wicked men's injustice to correct his children. But let us take heed, that we bite not so high at the handle of the rod, as to fasten on His hand that holds it ; our discontentments mounting so high, as to quarrel with God himself.

## V.

*It is no breach of contentment for men, by lawful means, to seek the removal of their misery, and bettering of their estate.*—Thus men ought, by industry, to endeavour the getting of more wealth, ever submitting themselves to God's will. A lazy hand is no argument of a contented heart. Indeed, he that is idle, and followeth after vain persons, shall have enough : but how ? “ Shall have poverty enough.” (Prov. xxviii. 19.)

## VI.

*God's Spirit is the best schoolmaster to teach contentment.*—A Schoolmaster who can make good scholars, and warrant the success as well as his endeavour. The school of sanctified afflictions is the best place to learn contentment in : I say, “ sanctified ; ” for, naturally, like resty horses, we go the worse for the beating, if God bless not afflictions unto us.

## VII.

*Contentment consisteth not in adding more fuel, but in taking away some fire.*—Not in multiplying of wealth, but in subtracting men's desires. Worldly riches, like nuts, tear many clothes in getting them, spoil many teeth in cracking them, but fill no belly with eating them, obstructing only the stomach with toughness, and filling the guts with windiness. Yea, our souls may sooner surfeit, than be satisfied, with earthly things. He that at first thought ten thousand pounds too much for any one man, will afterwards think ten millions too little for himself.

## VIII.

*Men create more discontents to themselves, than ever happened to them from others.*—We read of our Saviour, that, at the burial of Lazarus, Ἐτάραξεν ἑαυτόν, “He troubled himself,” (John xi. 33,) by his spirit raising his own passions, though without any ataxy or sinful disturbance. What was an act of power in Him, is an act of weakness in other men. “Man disquieteth himself in vain,” with many causeless and needless afflictions.

## IX.

*Pious meditations much advantage contentment in adversity.*—Such as these are, to consider, first, that more are beneath us than above us. Secondly, many of God’s dear saints have been in the same condition. Thirdly, we want rather superfluities than necessaries. Fourthly, the more we have, the more we must account for. Fifthly, earthly blessings, through man’s corruption, are more prone to be abused than well-used. In some fenny places in England, where they are much troubled with gnats, they use to hang up dung in the midst of the room for a bait for the gnats to fly to, and so catch them with a net provided for the purpose. Thus the devil ensnareth the souls of many men by illuring \* them with the muck and dung of this world, to undo them eternally. Sixthly, we must leave all earthly wealth at our death; “and riches avail not in the day of wrath.” But as some use to fill up the stamp of light gold with dirt, thereby to make it weigh the heavier; so it seems some men load their souls with thick clay, to make them pass the better in God’s balance: but all to no purpose. Seventhly, the less we have, the less it will grieve us to leave this world. Lastly, it is the will of God, and therefore both for his glory and our good, whereof we ought to be assured. I have heard, how a gentleman, travelling in a misty morning, asked of a shepherd, (such men being generally skilled in the physiognomy of the heavens,) what weather it would be. “It will be,” said the shepherd, “what weather shall please me:” and being courteously requested to express his meaning; “Sir,” said he, “it shall be what weather pleaseth God; and what weather pleaseth God, pleaseth me.” Thus contentment maketh men to

\* “Deceiving.” The substantive and adjective of this expressive word, (*illusion, illusive,*) are still in fashion; but we have abandoned the use of the verb *to illure*.  
—EDIT.

have even what they think fitting themselves, because submitting to God's will and pleasure.

To conclude : A man ought to be like a cunning actor, who, if he be enjoined to represent the person of some prince or nobleman, does it with a grace and comeliness ; if, by and by, he be commanded to lay that aside, and play the beggar, he does that as willingly and as well. But, as it happened in a tragedy, (to spare naming the person and place,) that one, being to act Theseus (in *Hercules Furens*) coming out of hell, could not for a long time be persuaded to wear old sooty clothes proper for his part, but would needs come out of hell in a white satin doublet : so we are generally loath, and it goes against flesh and blood, to live in a low and poor estate, but would fain act in richer and handsomer clothes, till grace, with much ado, subdues our rebellious stomachs to God's will.

---

## CHAPTER XVIII.

### OF BOOKS.

SOLomon saith truly, "Of making many books there is no end ;" so insatiable is the thirst of men therein : as also endless is the desire of many in buying and reading them. But we come to our rules :—

#### MAXIM I.

*It is a vanity to persuade the world one hath much learning, by getting a great library.*—As soon shall I believe every one is valiant that hath a well-furnished armory. I guess good house-keeping by the smoking, not the number, of the tunnels, as knowing that many of them (built merely for uniformity) are without chimnies, and more without fires. Once a dunce, void of learning but full of books, flouted a library-less scholar with these words : *Salve, Doctor sine libris !* \* But, the next day, the scholar coming into the jeerer's study crowded with books, *Salvete, libri*, saith he, *sine Doctore !* †

\* "Good morning, Mr. Doctor without books !"—EDIT.  
ye good books without a Doctor !"—EDIT.

+ "All hail,

## II.

*Few books, well selected, are best.*—Yet, as a certain fool bought all the pictures that came out, because he might have his choice ; such is the vain humour of many men in gathering of books. Yet, when they have done all, they miss their end ; it being in the editions of authors as in the fashions of clothes, —when a man thinks he hath gotten the latest and newest, presently another newer comes out.

## III.

*Some books are only cursorily to be tasted of.*—Namely, first, voluminous books, the task of a man's life to read them over. Secondly, auxiliary books, only to be repaired-to on occasions. Thirdly, such as are mere pieces of formality, so that if you look *on* them you look *through* them ; and he that peeps through the casement of the index, sees as much as if he were in the house. But the laziness of those cannot be excused who perfunctorily pass over authors of consequence, and only trade in their tables and contents. These, like city-cheaters, having gotten the names of all country-gentlemen, make silly people believe they have long lived in those places where they never were, and flourish with skill in those authors they never seriously studied.

## IV.

*The genius of the author is commonly discovered in the Dedicatory Epistle.*—Many place the purest grain in the mouth of the sack, for chapmen to handle or buy : and from the dedication one may probably guess at the work, saving some rare and peculiar exceptions. Thus, when once a gentleman admired how so pithy, learned, and witty a dedication was matched to a flat, dull, foolish book ; “In truth,” said another, “they may be well-matched together, for I profess they be nothing akin.”

## V.

*Proportion an hour's meditation to an hour's reading of a staple author.*—This makes a man master of his learning, and dis-spirits \* the book into the scholar. The king of Sweden never filed his men above six deep in one company, because he would not have them lie in useless clusters in his army, but so

\* One of the now-unusual meanings of this old word, from the distributive force of the particle *dis*, is, “to infuse the spirit” of the book into the reader who thus meditates.—EDIT.

that every particular soldier might be drawn out into service.\* Books that stand thin on the shelves, yet so as the owner of them can bring forth every one of them into use, are better than far greater libraries.

## VI.

*Learning hath gained most by those books by which the printers have lost.*—Arias Montanus, in printing the Hebrew Bible, (commonly called “the Bible of the King of Spain,”) much wasted himself, and was accused in the Court of Rome for his good deed, and being cited thither, † *Pro tantorum laborum præmio vix veniam impetravit.*‡ Likewise Christopher Plantin, by printing of his curious interlineary Bible in Antwerp, through the unseasonable exactions of the king’s officers, sunk and almost ruined his estate.§ And our worthy English knight, who set forth the golden-mouthed Father in a silver print,|| was a loser by it.

## VII.

*Whereas foolish pamphlets prove most beneficial to the printers.*

—When a French printer complained that he was utterly undone by printing a solid, serious book of Rabelais concerning physic, Rabelais, to make him recompense, made that his jesting, scurrilous work, which repaired the printer’s loss with advantage. Such books the world swarms too much with. When one had set out a witless pamphlet, writing *Finis* at the end thereof, another wittily wrote beneath it,—

“ Nay, there thou liest, my friend,  
In writing foolish books there is NO END.”

And, surely, such scurrilous, scandalous papers do more than conceivable mischief. First, their lusciousness puts many palates out of taste, that they can never after relish any solid and wholesome writers. Secondly, they cast dirt on the faces of

\* WARD’s “Animadversions of War,” sect. xvii. lib. ii. cap. 5.      † “With difficulty obtained pardon, instead of a reward, for the editorial pains which he had bestowed on that immense undertaking.”—EDIT.      ‡ TRUANUS *Obit. Virorum Doctorum, anno 1598.*      § *Idem, in eodem opere, anno 1589.*      || This is an allusion to sir Henry Savile’s splendid edition of “the Works of St. Chrysostom,” in 8 vols, folio. (Eton, 1613.) The Greek types employed in printing that edition were accounted the most beautiful of any in that age, and, according to vulgar exaggeration respecting this and similar works, were supposed to be formed of silver. The whole cost, including adequate literary aid, was estimated to be upwards of eight thousand pounds.—EDIT.

many innocent persons, which, dried-on by continuance of time, can never after be washed off. Thirdly, the pamphlets of this age may pass for records with the next, because publicly uncontrolled ; and what we laugh at, our children may believe. Fourthly, grant the things true they jeer at, yet this music is unlawful in any Christian church,—to play upon the sins and miseries of others ; the fitter object of the elegies, than the satires, of all truly religious.

But what do I, speaking against multiplicity of books in this age, who trespass in this nature myself ? What was a learned man's \* compliment, may serve for my confession and conclusion : *Multi mei similes hoc morbo laborant, ut cum scribere nesciant, tamen a scribendo temperare non possint.*†

## CHAPTER XIX.

### OF TIME-SERVING.

THERE be four kinds of time-serving. First, out of Christian discretion, which is commendable. Second, out of human infirmity, which is more pardonable. Third and Fourth, out of ignorance or affectation, both which are damnable.

Of them in order :—

#### MAXIM I.

*He is a good time-server that complies his manners to the several ages of this life.*—Pleasant in youth, without wantonness ; grave in old age, without frowardness. Frost is as proper for winter, as flowers for spring. Gravity becomes the ancient ; and a green Christmas is neither handsome nor healthful.

#### II.

*He is a good time-server that finds out the fittest opportunity for every action.*—God hath made “a time for every thing under the sun,” save only for that which we do at all times,—to wit, sin.

\* ERASMUS, in *Praefatione in tertiam seriem Hieron. Operum*, tom. iv. p. 408.

† “Many persons labour under an infirmity similar to my own : Though ill-qualified for authorship, yet they are not able to refrain from scribbling.”—EDIT.

## III.

*He is a good time-server that improves the present for God's glory and his own salvation.*—Of all the extent of time, only the instant is that which we can call “ours.”

## IV.

*He is a good time-server that is pliant to the times in matters of mere indifferency.*—To blame are they whose minds may seem to be made of one entire bone, without any joints. They cannot bend at all, but stand as stiffly in things of pure indifferency, as in matters of absolute necessity.

## V.

*He is a good time-server that in time of persecution neither betrays God's cause nor his own safety.*—And this he may do,—

1. By lying hid both in his person and practice. Though he will do no evil, he will forbear the public doing of some good. He hath as good cheer in his heart, though he keeps not open house, and will not publicly broach his religion, till the palate of the times be better in taste to relish it. “The prudent shall keep silence in that time, for it is an evil time;” (Amos v. 13;) though, according to St. Peter's command, we are “to give a reason of our hope to every one that asketh;” (1 Peter iii. 15;) namely, that asketh for his instruction, but not for our destruction, especially if wanting lawful authority to examine us. “Ye shall be brought,” saith Christ, (no need have they, therefore, to run!) “before princes for my sake.” (Matt. x. 18.)

2. By flying away. If there be no absolute necessity of his staying, no scandal given by his flight; if he wants strength to stay it out till death; and, lastly, if God openeth a fair way for his departure. Otherwise, if God bolts the doors and windows against him, he is not to creep out at the top of the chimney, and to make his escape by unwarrantable courses. If all should fly, truth would want champions for the present; if none should fly, truth might want champions for the future.

We come now to time-servers out of infirmity:—

## VI.

*Heart-of-oak hath sometimes warped a little in the scorching heat of persecution.*—Their want of true courage herein cannot be excused. Yet many censure them for surrendering up their forts after a long siege, who would have yielded up their own

at the first summons. O ! there is more required to make one valiant, than to call Cranmer or Jewel "coward;" as if the fire in Smithfield had been no hotter than what is painted in "the Book of Martyrs."

## VII.

*Yet afterwards they have come into their former straightness and stiffness.*—The troops which at first rather wheeled about than ran away, have come-in seasonable at last. Yea, their constant blushing for shame of their former cowardliness hath made their souls ever after look more modest and beautiful. Thus Cranmer, who subscribed to Popery, grew valiant afterwards, and thrust his right hand, which subscribed, first into the fire ; so that *that* hand died (as it were) a malefactor, and all the rest of his body a martyr.

## VIII.

*Some have served the times out of mere ignorance.*—Gaping, for company, as others gaped before them, *Pater noster*, or "Our Father."\* I could both sigh and smile at the witty simplicity of a poor old woman, who had lived in the days of queen Mary and queen Elizabeth, and said her prayers daily both in Latin and English ; and "Let God," said she, "take to himself which he likes best."

## IX.

*But worst are those who serve the times out of mere affectation.*—Doing as the times do, not because the times do as they should do, but merely for sinister respects, to ingratiate themselves. We read of an earl of Oxford fined by king Henry VII. fifteen thousand marks, for having too many retainers.† But how many retainers hath time had in all ages, and servants in all offices ! yea, and chaplains too !

## X.

*It is a very difficult thing to serve the times.*—They change so frequently, so suddenly, and sometimes so violently from one extreme to another. The times under Diocletian were Pagan ; under Constantine, Christian ; under Constantius, Arian ; under Julian, apostate ; under Jovian, Christian again : and all within

\* With open mouth uttering, like parrots, the Lord's Prayer, either according to the Popish or the Protestant form.—*EDIT.* † *LORD BACON*, in "Henry VII.," p. 211.

the age of man,—the term of seventy years. And would it not have wrenched and sprained *his* soul with short turning, *who* in all these should have been “of the religion *for the time being?*”

## XI.

*Time-servers are often-times left in the lurch.*—If they do not only give their word for the times in their constant discourses, but also give their bonds for them, and write in their defence. Such, when the times turn afterwards to another extreme, are left in the briars, and come off very hardly from the bill of their hands. If they turn again with the times, none will trust them ; for who will make a staff of an osier ?

## XII.

*Miserable will be the condition of such time-servers when their master is taken from them.*—When, as the angel swore, that “TIME shall be no longer.” (Rev. x. 6.) Therefore, it is best serving of Him who is ETERNITY, a Master that can ever protect us.

To conclude : He that intends to meet with one in a great fair, and knows not where he is, may sooner find him by standing still in some principal place there, than by traversing it up and down. Take thy stand on some good ground in religion, and keep thy station in a fixed posture, never hunting after the times to follow them ; and, a hundred to one, they will come to thee once in thy life-time.

## CHAPTER XX.

## OF MODERATION.

“MODERATION is the silken string running through the pearl-chain of all virtues.”\* It appears both in practice and judgment: we will insist on the latter, and describe it first negatively:—

## MAXIM I.

*Moderation is not a halting betwixt two opinions, when the thorough believing of one of them is necessary to salvation.*—No pity is to be shown to such voluntary cripples. We read of a haven in Crete, “which lay toward the south-west, and towards the north-west.” (Acts xxvii. 12.) Strange, that it could have part of two opposite points, north and south; sure it must be very winding. And thus, some men’s souls are in such intricate postures, they lie towards the Papists, and towards the Protestants; such we count not of a moderate judgment, but of an immoderate unsettledness.

## II.

*Nor is it a lukewarmness in those things wherein God’s glory is concerned.*—Herein it is a true rule: † *Non amat qui non zelat.*‡ And they that are thus lukewarm here, shall be too hot hereafter in that oven wherein dough-baked cakes shall be burnt.

## III.

*But it is a mixture of discretion and charity in one’s judgment.*—Discretion puts a difference betwixt things absolutely necessary to salvation to be done and believed, and those which are of a second sort and lower form, wherein more liberty and latitude is allowed. In maintaining whereof, the stiffness of the judgment is abated, and supplied with charity towards his neighbour. The lukewarm man eyes only his own ends and particular profit; the moderate man aims at the good of others, and unity of the church.

\* BISHOP HALL, “Of Christian Moderation,” p. 6.      † AUGUSTINUS  
*contra Adamant.*, cap. 13.      ‡ “He who evinces little zeal possesses no love.”  
 —EDIT.

## IV.

*Yet such moderate men are commonly crushed betwixt the extreme parties on both sides.*—But what said Ignatius? \*—“I am Christ’s wheat, and must be ground with the teeth of beasts, that I may be made God’s pure manchet.” † Saints are born to suffer, and must take it patiently. Besides, in this world generally they get the least preferment; it faring with them, as with the guest that sate in the midst of the table, who could reach to neither mess, above or beneath him:—

*Esuriunt medi, fines bene sunt saturati;*  
*Dixerunt stulti, Medium tenuere beati.*

“ Both ends o’ th’ table furnish’d are with meat,  
 Whilst they in middle nothing have to eat.  
 They were none of the wisest, well I wist,  
 Who made *bliss in the middle to consist.*”

Yet these temporal inconveniences of moderation are abundantly recompensed with other better benefits: for,—

1. A well-informed judgment in itself is a preferment. Potamon began a sect of philosophers called *Ἐκλεκτικοί*, ‡ [“the Eclectics”] who wholly adhered to no former sect, but chose out of all of them what they thought best. Surely, such divines, who in unimporting controversies extract the probablest opinions from all professions, are best at ease in their minds.

2. As the moderate man’s temporal hopes are not great, so his fears are the less. He fears not to have the splinters of his party, when it breaks, fly into his eyes, or to be buried under the ruins of his side, if suppressed. He never pinned his religion on any man’s sleeve; no, not on “the arm of flesh;” and therefore is free from all dangerous engagements.

3. His conscience is clear from raising schisms in the church. The Turks did use to wonder much at our Englishmen for pinking § or cutting their clothes, counting them little better than mad for their pains, to make holes in whole cloth, which time of itself would tear too soon! || But grant, men may do with their own garments as their fancy adviseth them; yet woe be to such who willingly cut and rend the seamless coat of Christ with dissensions!

\* IRENÆUS, lib. v.

† According to PHILLIPS and KERSEY: “*Manchet*, the finest and smallest sort of wheaten bread.”—EDIT.

‡ DIOGENES LAERTES, *in fine proemii.*

§ According to PHILLIPS and KERSEY: “*To pink*, to cut silk, taffety, cloth, &c., with variety of figures.”—EDIT.

|| BIDULPH, in his “*Travel to Jerusalem*,” p. 98.

4. His religion is more constant and durable; being here, *in vii*, “in his way” to heaven, and, jogging-on a good traveller’s pace, he overtakes and outgoes many violent men, whose over-hot, ill-grounded zeal was quickly tired.

5. In matters of moment, indeed, none are more zealous. He thrifly treasured up his spirits for that time, who if he had formerly rent his lungs for every trifle, he would have wanted breath in points of importance.

6. Once in an age the moderate man is in fashion. Each extreme courts him, to make them friends; and, surely, he hath a great advantage to be a peace-maker betwixt opposite parties. Now, whilst (as we have said) moderate men are constant to themselves,—

## v.

*Violent men reel from one extremity to another.*—Who would think that the East and West Indies were so near together? whose names speak them at diametrical opposition. And yet their extremities are either the same continent, or parted with a very narrow sea. As the world is round, so we may observe a circulation in opinions, and violent men turn often round in their tenets.

## vi.

*Pride is the greatest enemy to moderation.*—This makes men stickle for their opinions, to make them fundamental. Proud men, having deeply studied some additional point in divinity, will strive to make the same necessary to salvation, to enhance the value of their own worth and pains; and it must be fundamental in religion, because it is fundamental to their reputation. Yea, as love doth descend, and men doat most on their grandchildren; so these are indulgent to the deductions of their deductions and consequential inferences to the seventh generation, making them all of the foundation, though scarce of the building, of religion. Ancient Fathers\* made “the Creed,” *Symbolum*,† the shot and total sum of faith. Since which, how many arrearages and after-reckonings have men brought us in? To which if we will not pay our belief, our souls must be arrested, without bail, upon pain of damnation. Next to pride, popular applause is the greatest foe moderation hath; and, sure,

\* IRENÆUS, cap. 2, 3; TERTULLIANUS *De Virgin. Velan.*; HILARIUS *ad Constant. August.*; TAUR. MAXIM, *Sermo De Symbolo*; AUGUSTINI, *Serm. 2, et 1081. De tempore.* † That fine summary of necessary Christian doctrine, commonly called “the Apostles’ Creed.”—EDIT.

they who sail with that wind have their own vain-glory for their haven.

To close up all: Let men, on God's blessing, soundly (yet wisely) whip and lash lukewarmness and time-serving; their thongs will never fly in the face of true moderation, to do it any harm; for, however men may undervalue it, that Father\* spake most truly: *Si virtutum finis ille sit maximus, qui plurimorum spectat profectum, moderatio propè omnium pulcherrima est.*†

## CHAPTER XXI.

### OF GRAVITY.

GRAVITY is the ballast of the soul, which keeps the mind steady. It is either true, or counterfeit.

#### MAXIM I.

*Natural dulness, and heaviness of temper, is sometimes mistaken for true gravity.*—In such men in whose constitutions one of the tetrarch elements, fire, may seem to be omitted. These sometimes not only cover their defects, but get praise: *Sæpè latet vitium proximitate boni.*‡ They do wisely to counterfeit a reservedness, and to keep their chests always locked, not for fear any should steal treasure thence, but lest some should look in, and see that there is nothing within them. But they who are born eunuchs, deserve no such great commendation for their chastity. Wonder not much, that such men are grave, but wonder at them if they be not grave.

#### II.

*Affected gravity passes often for that which is true.*—I mean, with dull eyes, for in itself is nothing more ridiculous. When one shall use the preface of a mile, to bring-in a furlong of matter, set his face and speech in a frame, and, to make men

\* AMBROSIUS *De Paenit. contra Novat.*, lib. i. cap. 1.      + “For if that design of the virtues be the most sublime which has regard to the benefit of the greatest number of persons, then may moderation stand, almost without rivalry, as the fairest of the fair.”—EDIT.      ‡ “A vice often lies concealed in the immediate vicinage of a virtue.”—EDIT.

believe it is some precious liquor, their words come out drop by drop: such men's vizards do sometimes fall from them, not without the laughter of the beholders. One was called "Gravity" for his affected solemnness, who, afterwards being catched in a light prank, was ever after, to the day of his death, called "Gravity-levity."

## III.

*True gravity expresseth itself in gait, gesture, apparel, and speech.—\* Vox quædam est animi, corporis motus.† As for speech, gravity enjoins it,—*

1. Not to be overmuch. "In the multitude of words there wanteth not sin." (Prov. x. 19.) For, of necessity, many of them must be idle, whose best commendation is, that they are good for nothing. Besides, ‡ *Dum otiosa verba cavere negligimus, ad noxia pervenimus.*§ And great talkers discharge too thick to take always true aim; besides, it is odious in a company. A man full of words, who took himself to be a grand wit, made his brag that he was the leader of the discourse in what company soever he came, and, "None," said he, "dare speak in my presence, if I hold my peace." "No wonder," answered one, "for they are all struck dumb at the miracle of your silence."

2. To be wise and discreet. "Let your speech be always with grace, seasoned with salt." (Coloss. iv. 6.) *Always*, not only sometimes in the company of godly men. Tindal's being in the room hindered a juggler that he could not play his feats.|| (A saint's presence stops the devil's elbow-room to do his tricks!) And so some wicked men are awed into good discourse, whilst pious people are present. But it must be always "seasoned with salt," which is the *primum vivens et ultimum moriens* at a feast, first brought, and last taken away, and set in the midst as most necessary thereunto. *With salt*, that is, with wisdom and discretion, *non salibus, sed sale;*¶ nor yet with smarting jeers, like those whose discourse is "fire-salt," speaking constant satires to the disgrace of others.

\* *Ambrosius De Offic., lib. i. cap. 18.*

† "The motion of the body is frequently an indication, almost equal to a vocal declaration, of the feelings or intentions of the mind."—EDIT. ‡ *GREG. Moral., lib. vii. cap. 17.* § "While we are negligent in avoiding the use of vain words, we soon begin to employ those which are injurious."—EDIT. || *Fox's "Martyrs," p. 1079.* ¶ "Not with smart and flighty sayings, but with such pleasant and uncorrupted discourse as may minister grace to the hearers."—EDIT.

## IV.

*That may be done privately without breach of gravity, which may not be done publicly.*—As when a father makes himself his child's rattle, sporting with him till the father hath devoured the wise man in him.

*Equitans in arundine longā.*

“Instead of stately steed,  
Riding upon a reed :”

making play unto him, that one would think he killed his own discretion, to bring his child asleep. Such cases are no trespass on gravity ; and married men may claim their privilege,—to be judged by their peers, and may herein appeal from the censuring verdict of bachelors.

## V.

*Nature in men is sometimes unjustly taxed for a trespass against gravity.*—Some have active spirits ; yea, their ordinary pace is a race. Others have so scornful a carriage, that he who seeth them once, may think them to be all pride ; whilst he that seeth them often, knows them to have none. Others have, perchance, a misbeseeming garb in gesture which they cannot amend ; that fork needing strong tines\* wherewith one must thrust away nature. A fourth sort are of a merry, cheerful disposition ; and God forbid all such should be condemned for lightness ! O, let not any envious eye disinherit men of that which is their “portion in this life,” (Eccles. v. 18,)—comfortably to enjoy the blessings thereof ! Yet gravity must prune, though not root out, our mirth.

## VI.

*Gracious deportment may sometimes unjustly be accused of lightness.*—Had one seen David dancing before the ark, (2 Sam. vi. 16,) Elijah in his praying-posture when he put his head betwixt his legs, (1 Kings xviii. 42,) perchance he might have condemned them of unfitting behaviour. Had he seen Peter

\* The *teeth* or *grains* of a fork or harrow. Fuller in this passage alludes to Horace's celebrated line, (Epist. lib. i. 10, 24,)

*Naturam expelles furcā, tamen usque recurret.*

Which FRANCIS thus translates :—

“Drive Nature out with proud disdain,  
The powerful goddess will return again.”

EDIT.

and John posting to Christ's grave, (John xx. 4,) Rhoda running into the house, (Acts xii. 14,) he would have thought they had left their gravity behind them. But let none blame them for their speed until he knows what were their spurs, and what were the motives that urged them to make such haste. These their actions were the true conclusions, following from some inward premisses in their own souls ; and that may be a syllogism in grace, which appears a solecism in manners.

## VII.

*In some persons gravity is most necessary.*—Namely, in magistrates and ministers. One Palavizine, an Italian gentleman, and kinsman to Scaliger, had in one night all his hair changed from black to grey.\* Such an alteration ought there to be in the heads of every one that enters into holy orders or public office,—metamorphosed from all lightness to gravity.

## VIII.

*God alone is the giver of all gravity.*—No man wants so much of any grace as He hath to spare ; and a constant impression of God's omnipresence is an excellent way to fix men's souls. Bishop Andrews ever placed the picture of Mulcaster, his schoolmaster, over the door of his study, (whereas in all the rest of his house you should scarce see a picture,) as to be his tutor and supervisor.† Let us constantly apprehend God's being in presence, and this will fright us into staid behaviour.

\* SCALIGER, *De Subtil.*, p. 18.  
p. 18.

† *Vide* in the Funeral Sermon on him,

## CHAPTER XXII.

## OF MARRIAGE.

SOME men have too much decried marriage, as if she (the mother) were scarce worthy to wait on virginity, (her daughter,) and as if it were an advancement for marriage to be preferred before fornication, and praise enough for her to be adjudged lawful. Give this holy estate her due, and then we shall find,—

## MAXIM I.

*Though bachelors be the strongest stakes, married men are the best binders, in the hedge of the commonwealth.*—It is the policy of the Londoners, when they send a ship into the Levant or Mediterranean Sea, to make every mariner therein a merchant,—each seaman adventuring somewhat of his own, which will make him more wary to avoid, and more valiant to undergo, dangers. Thus married men, especially if having posterity, are the deeper sharers in that State wherein they live; which engageth their affections to the greater loyalty.

## II.

*It is the worst clandestine marriage, when God is not invited to it.*—Wherefore, beforehand beg his gracious assistance. Marriage shall prove no lottery to thee, when the hand of Providence chooseth for thee; who, if drawing a blank, can turn it into a prize, by sanctifying a bad wife unto thee.

## III.

*Deceive not thyself by over-expecting happiness in the married estate.*—Look not therein for contentment greater than God will give, or a creature in this world can receive; namely, to be free from all inconveniences. Marriage is not like the hill Olympus,  $\delta\lambdaος\ λαμπρός$ , “wholly clear,” without clouds. Yea, expect both wind and storms sometimes, which when blown over, the air is the clearer and wholsomer for it. Make account of certain cares and troubles which will attend thee. Remember the nightingales which sing only some months in the spring, but commonly are silent when they have hatched their eggs, as

if their mirth were turned into care for their young ones. Yet all the molestations of marriage are abundantly recompensed with other comforts, which God bestoweth on them who make a wise choice of a wife, and observe the following rules :—

## IV.

*Let grace and goodness be the principal loadstone of thy affections.*—For, love which hath ends, will have an end ; whereas that which is founded in true virtue, will always continue. Some hold it unhappy to be married with a diamond-ring ; perchance, (if there be so much reason in their folly,) because the diamond hinders the roundness of the ring, ending the infiniteness thereof, and seems to presage some termination in their love, which ought ever to endure ; and so it will, when it is founded in religion.

## V.

*Neither choose all, nor not at all, for beauty.*—A cried-up beauty makes more for her own praise than her husband's profit. They tell us of a floating-island in Scotland ; but, sure, no wise pilot will cast anchor there, lest the land swim away with his ship. So are they served, and justly enough, who only fasten their love on fading beauty, and both fail together.

## VI.

*Let there be no great disproportion in age.*—They that marry ancient people merely in expectation to bury them, hang themselves, in hope that one will come and cut the halter. Nor is God's ordinance, but man's abusing thereof, taxed in this homely expression, used by the apostle himself. If virginity enforced above the parties' power be termed by St. Paul, “a snare or halter,”\* (1 Cor. vii. 35,) marriage is no better when against one's will, for private respects.

## VII.

*Let wealth in its due distance be regarded.*—There be two towns in the land of Liege called Bovins and Dinant, the inhabitants whereof bear almost an incredible hatred one to another, and yet notwithstanding their children usually marry together ; and the reason is, because there is none other good town or wealthy place near them.† Thus parents, for a little

\* Ὁὐχὶ τὰ βρόχον ὑμῖν ἐπιβδλω, 1 Cor. vii. 35.  
lib. ii. cap. 1.

† PHILIP DE COMINES,

self, often marry their children to those whose persons they hate; and thus union betwixt families is not made, but the breach rather widened the more.

This shall serve for a conclusion: A bachelor was saying, "Next to no wife, a good wife is best." "Nay," said a gentlewoman, "next to a good wife, no wife is the best." I wish to all married people the outward happiness which, *anno* 1605, happened to a couple in the city of Delph in Holland, living most lovingly together seventy-five years in wedlock; till the man, being one hundred and three, the woman, ninety-nine years of age, died within three hours each of other, and were buried in the same grave.\*

---

## CHAPTER XXIII.

### OF FAME.

FAME is the echo of actions, resounding them to the world, save that the echo repeats only the last part, but fame relates all, and often more than all.

#### MAXIM I.

*Fame sometimes hath created something of nothing.*—She hath made whole countries, more than ever nature did, especially near the poles; and then hath peopled them likewise with inhabitants of her own invention,—pigmies, giants, and Amazons. Yea, fame is sometimes like unto a kind of mushroom, which Pliny recounts to be the greatest miracle in nature, because growing and having no root, as fame no ground of her reports.†

#### II.

*Fame often makes a great deal of a little.*—Absalom killed one of David's sons, (2 Sam. xiii. 30,) and fame killed all the rest; and generally she magnifies and multiplies matters. Loud was that lie which that bell told, hanging in a clock-house at West-

• THUANUS, *De Obit. Virorum Doctorum*, in *eodem anno*, p. 185.      † *In miraculis vel maximum est tubera nasci et vivere sine ulla radice.*—PLINII *Nat. Hist.*, lib. xix. cap. 2.

minster, and usually rung at the coronation and funerals of princes, having this inscription about it,—

“ King Edward made me  
Thirty thousand and three ;  
Take me down and weigh me,  
And more shall you find me.”

But when this bell was taken down at the dooms-day of abbeys, this and two more were found not to weigh twenty thousand.\* Many relations of fame are found to shrink accordingly.

### III.

*Some fames are most difficult to trace home to their form.*—And those who have sought to track them, have gone rather in a circle than forward ; and oftentimes, through the doubling of reports, have returned back again where they began. Fame being a bastard, or *filia populi*, it is very hard to find her father ; and often-times she hath rather *all* than *any* for her first authors.

### IV.

*Politicians sometimes raise fames on purpose.*—As that such things are done already, which they mean to do afterwards. By the light of those false fires, they see into men’s hearts ; and these false rumours are true scouts to discover men’s dispositions. Besides, the deed, though strange in itself, is done afterwards with the less noise, men having vented their wonder beforehand ; and the strangeness of the action is abated, because formerly made stale in report. But if the rumour startles men extremely, and draws with it dangerous consequences, then they can presently confute it, let their intentions fall, and prosecute it no further.

### V.

*The Papal side, of all fame-merchants, drive the most gainful trade.*—As that worthy knight hath given us an exact “ Survey” thereof.† But, long before them, strange was that plot of Stratocles, who gave it out that he had gotten a victory ; and the constant report thereof continued three days, and then was confuted : and Stratocles being charged with abusing his people

\* STOW’s “Survey of London,” p. 528.  
“View of the West Religions,” p. 100.

† SIR EDWARD SANDYS’S

with a lie, “Why,” said he, “are ye angry with me for making you pass three days in mirth and jollity, more than otherwise you should?” \*

## VI.

*Incredible is the swiftness of fame in carrying reports.*—First, she creeps through a village, then she goes through a town, then she runs through a city, then she flies through a country, still the farther the faster. Yea, Christ, who made the dumb speak, made not tell-tale fame silent, though charging those he cured to hold their peace; “but so much the more went there a FAME abroad of him.” (Luke v. 15.) Yea, some things have been reported soon as ever they were done at impossible distance. The overthrow of Perseus was brought out of Macedon to Rome in four days.† And, in Domitian’s time, a report was brought two thousand five hundred miles in one day. In which accidents,—

1. Fame takes post on some other advantage. Thus the overthrow of the Sabines was known at Rome *prius penè quam nunciari possit*,‡ by the means of the arms of the Sabines drowned in the river of Tiber, and carried down by the tide to Rome.§ And thus, *anno* 1568, the overthrow which the Spaniards gave the Dutch at the river of Ems, was known at Groningen before any horseman could reach thither, by the multitude of the Dutch caps which the river brought down into the city.|| But these conveyances are but slugs to make such miraculous speed: wherefore sometimes reports are carried,

2. By the ministration of spirits. The devils are well at leisure to play such pranks, and may do it in a frolic. And yet they would scarce be the carriers, except they were well paid for the portage, getting some profit thereby, (doing of mischief is all the profit they are capable of,) and do harm to some by the suddenness of those reports. Or else,

3. The fame is antedated and raised before the fact, being related at guess before it was acted. Thus, some have been causelessly commended for early rising in the morning, who indeed came to their journey’s end over-night. If such fore-made reports prove true, they are admired and registered; if false, neglected and forgotten: as those only which escaped shipwreck hung up *votivas tabulas*, “tablets with their names,”

\* PLUTARCH’s Πολιτικὰ Παραγγέλματα.  
princip.      ‡ “Almost sooner than it could be narrated.”—EDIT.

† LIVY, lib. xlv., *juxta*  
lib. i.      § LIVY,  
|| FAMIANUS STRADA *De Bello Belgico*, lib. v. p. 456.

in those haven-towns where they came ashore. But as for those who are drowned, their memorials are drowned with them.

## VII.

*General reports are seldom false. Vox populi vox Dei.*—A body of that greatness hath an eye of like clearness; and it is impossible that a wanderer, with a counterfeit pass, should pass undiscovered.

## VIII.

*A fond fame is best confuted by neglecting it.*—By “fond” understand such a report as is rather ridiculous, than dangerous, if believed. It is not worth the making a schism betwixt newsmongers to set up an anti-fame against it. Yea, seriously and studiously to endeavour to confute it, will grace the rumour too much, and give suspicion that indeed there is some reality in it. What madness were it to plant a piece of ordnance to beat down an aspen leaf, which, having always the palsy, will at last fall down of itself! And fame hath much of the scold in her; the best way to silence her is, to be silent, and then at last she will be out of breath with blowing her own trumpet.

## IX.

*Fame sometimes reports things less than they are.*—Pardon her for offending herein, she is guilty so seldom. For one kingdom of Scotland, which, they say, geographers describe a hundred miles too short, most northern countries are made too large. Fame generally overdoes; underdoes but in some particulars. The Italian proverb hath it: “There is less honesty, wisdom, and money in men than is counted on:” yet sometimes a close churl, who locks his coffers so fast fame could never peep into them, dieth richer than he was reported when alive. None could come near to feel his estate; it might therefore cut fatter in his purse than was expected. But fame falls most short in those transcendentals which are above her predicaments; as in Solomon’s wisdom: “And, behold, one half was not told me: thy wisdom and prosperity exceedeth the fame that I heard.” (1 Kings x. 7.) But chiefly in fore-reporting the happiness in heaven, which eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither hath it entered into the heart of man to conceive.

## CHAPTER XXIV.

### OF THE ANTIQUITY OF CHURCHES, AND NECESSITY OF THEM.

WE will consider their antiquity amongst the Jews, Heathens, and Christians.

Now, temples, amongst the Jews, were more or less ancient, as the acceptation of the word is straiter or larger.

#### MAXIM I.

*Take TEMPLE for “a covered standing structure,” and the Jews had none till the time of Solomon.*—Which was, from the beginning of the world, about two thousand nine hundred [and] thirty-two years : \* till then, they had neither leave nor liberty to build a temple. For the patriarchs, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, lived in pilgrimage ; their posterity in Egypt, in persecution ; their children in the wilderness, in constant travelling ; their successors in Canaan, in continual warfare, till the days of Solomon.

#### II.

*Take TEMPLUM for TECTUM AMPLUM,† “a large place covered to serve God therein,” and the tabernacle was a movable temple.*—Built by Moses in the wilderness, about the year of the world two thousand four hundred [and] fifty-five. Yea, we find God’s Spirit styling this tabernacle “a temple :” “Eli the priest sate upon a seat by a pillar of the temple.” (1 Sam. i. 9.) “Before the lamp of the Lord went out in the temple.” (1 Sam. iii. 8.) Such a portable church Constantine had carried about with him when he went to war.‡

#### III.

*God’s children had places with altars to serve God in, before they had any temples.*—Such altars seem as ancient as sacrifices ; both which are twins ; and in relatives find one and find both. Indeed, the first altar we read of in Scripture is that which Noah built after the flood. But hear what a learned man saith thereof : § *Non tamen existimandum toto illo tempore, quo ante*

\* *Vide Chron. HELVICI.*      † *ISIDORUS, lib. xv. cap. 14.*      ‡ *SOCRATES,*  
lib. i. cap. 14 ; *et SOZOMEN., lib. i. cap. 8.*      § *RIVETUS, in Genesim,*  
p. 275.

*diluvium pii homines Deo sacrificarunt, altarium usum fuisse incognitum. Potius id credendum, Noachum sequutum fuisse exemplum eorum, qui eum praecesserant; imò morem inolitum.\**

## IV.

*The Jews, beside the temple, had many other synagogues.—* Serving instead of chapels-of-ease to the mother-church at Jerusalem. In the New Testament, (the temple yet standing,) it is plain that Christ often graced such synagogues with his presence and preaching; and it is probable they were in use ever since Joshua's time, when the land was first inhabited with Israelites, and that the Levites, dispersed all over the land, did teach the people therein: † otherwise, Palestine was a great parish, and some therein had [to walk] an hundred miles to church; besides, people's souls were poorly fed, having but three meals in a year, being but thrice to appear at Jerusalem.

## V.

*Many Heathen temples were ancienter than that of Solomon's.—* Amongst which Pagan temples, there is much justling for precedence; though some think that of Apis in Egypt shows the best evidence for her seniority, wherein was worshipped an ox, of whose herd (not to say breed) was the calf which the Israelites worshipped in the wilderness, being made in imitation thereof. But the Heathen had this gross conceit,—that their gods were affixed to their statues, as their statues were confined in their temples; so that, in effect, they did not so much build temples for their gods, as thereby lay nets to catch them in, inviting them thither as into a palace, and then keeping them there as in a prison.

## VI.

*Most civilized Heathen nations had temples for their gods.—* I say, *most*.—For the Persians are said to have none at all. Perchance, it was because they chiefly worshipped the sun; and then, according to the general opinion of fixing deities to their temples, it was in vain to erect any structure, therein to restrain and keep his ubiquitary beams. And yet that the

\* “ For the supposition must not be once entertained, that in the long period before the flood, during which pious men offered sacrifices to God, the use of altars was unknown. We ought rather to believe, that in this Noah followed the example of his predecessors, and that this ancient usage had become regularly engrafted on the general practice of mankind.”—EDIT. † HOSPINIANUS, *De Orig. Temp.*, cap. iv.

Persians were wholly temple-less will hardly be believed, seeing the Assyrians on this side, (Sennacherib was killed, worshipping in the house of Nisroch his god, 2 Kings xix. 37,) and the Indians on the other side of them, had their temples erected, as some will have it, by Bacchus, their Dionysius. Yea, we find a temple in Persia dedicated to Nanea, in the time of Antiochus :\* and though it may be pretended that the influence of the Grecian empire on the Persians had then spiced them with a smack of Grecism, yet Nanea will scarce be proved any Grecian deity; not to say any thing of the temple of Bel. *Civilized.*—For, as for the Scythian wandering Nomades, temples sorted not with their condition, as wanting both civility and settledness: and who can expect churches from them, who had no houses for themselves? Lastly, I say, *nation.*—For the Stoicks only, a conceited sect, forbade any building of temples, either out of derision of the common deceit that deities were kept in durance in their temples; or else out of humour, because they counted the general practice of other men a just ground for their contrary opinion. And now we come to the antiquity of Christian churches; and crave leave of the reader, that we may for a while dissolve our continued discourse into a dialogue.

A.—I am much perplexed to find the beginning of Christian churches in the Scripture. There I find the saints meeting “in the house of Mary the mother of Mark,” in “the school of Tyrannus,” “in an upper chamber;” but can see no foundation of a church; I mean, of a place and structure separated and set apart solely for Divine service.

B.—That the saints had afterwards churches in your sense, is plain: “Have ye not houses to eat and drink in, or despise ye the church of God, and shame them that have not?” (1 Cor. xi. 22.) Here the opposition is a good exposition of the apostle’s meaning; and the antithesis betwixt *houses* and *church* speaks them both to be local: so that St. Paul thought their material church “despised,” that is, abused and unreverenced, by their lay-meeting of love-feasts therein.

A.—By your favour, sir, the apostle by “church” meaneth there “the assembly or society of God’s servants,” as appears by what followeth: “Or despise ye the church of God, and shame them that have not?” *Them*, and not *that*, not speaking of the place but persons. The latter words of the apostle comment on the former, showing how “to shame those who had not,” (that is,

\* 2 Maccabees i. 13. *Vide etiam* 1 Maccabees vi. 2.

to neglect and upbraid the poor,) is to “despise the church of God.”

B.—Pardon me, sir; for the apostle therein accuseth the Corinthians of a second fault. *Imprimis*, he chargeth them for despising God’s material church; *item*, for shaming their poor brethren in their love-feasts; the particle “and” sheweth the addition of a new charge, but no expounding or amplifying of the former. But, sir, suspending our judgments herein, let us descend to the primitive times before Constantine: we shall there find churches, without any contradiction.

A.—Not so, neither. Herein also the trumpet of antiquity giveth a very uncertain sound. Indeed, we have but little left of the story of those times, wherein Christian books were as much persecuted as men; and but a few confessor-records, escaping martyrdom, are come to our hands. Yea, God may seem to have permitted the suppression of primitive history, lest men should be too studious in reading, and observant in practising, the customs of that age, even to the neglecting and undervaluing of his written word.

B.—Yet how slenderly soever those primitive times are storied, there is enough in them to prove the antiquity of churches. I will not instance on the decrees of Euaristus, Hyginus, and other Popes, in the first three hundred years, about the consecrating of churches, because their authority is suspected as antedated; and none are bound to believe, that the Gibeonites came from so far a country as their mouldy bread and clouted shoes did pretend. Churches are plainly to be found in Tertullian, two hundred years after Christ; and Eusebius witnesseth, that, before the time of Diocletian, the Christians had churches, which the tyrant caused to be destroyed.\*

A.—But Origen, Minutius Felix, Arnobius, and Lactantius, being pressed by the Heathen, that Christians had no churches, answered, by way of confession, yielding that they had none.†

\* *Hist. Eccles.*, lib. viii. cap. 1 et 2.

† *Objicit nobis Celsus quod non habeamus imagines, aut aras, aut tempa.*—**ORIGINES**, *Contra Celsum*, lib. iv. *Celsus et aras et simulacra et delubra ait nos defugere quo minus fundentur.*—*Idem, Contra Celsum*, lib. viii. *Accusat nos quod nec tempa habeamus, nec imagines, nec aras.*—**ARNOBIUS**, *Contra Gentes*, lib. iv. *Putatis autem nos oculare quod colamus, si delubra et aras non habemus.*—**MINUTIUS FELIX**, p. 73. *Quid sibi tempa, quid are volunt, quid denique ipsa simulacra?* &c.—**LACTANTIUS**.

“Celsus objects against us, that we have no images, altars, or temples.”—**ORIGEN**. “Celsus says, that we refrain from erecting altars, statues, and temples.”—*Idem*. “You accuse us of having neither temples, images, nor altars.”—

This is the difficulty [which] perplexeth me. It was a bloody speech of Abner: "Let the young men rise up and play before us." But worse is their cruelty who make sport at the falling out of the old men, when the reverend brows of antiquity knock one against another, and Fathers thus extremely differ in matters of fact.

B.—Why, Sir? A charitable distinction may reconcile them: if by *churches*, "stately magnificent fabrics" be meant, in that acceptation the Christians had no churches. But small oratories and prayer-places they then had, though little, low, and dark; being so fearful of persecution, they were jealous the sun-beams should behold them: and indeed stately churches had but given a fairer aim to their enemies' malice to hit them. Such a homely place learned sir Henry Spelman \* presents us with, which was first founded at Glastonbury, thatched and wattled: and let not our churches, now grown men, look with a scornful eye on their own picture, when babes in their swaddling clothes. And no wonder if God's house

*Erubuit Domino cultior esse suo,*

"The church did blush more glory for to have  
Than had her Lord. He begg'd; should she be brave?"

Christ himself being then cold, and hungry, and naked in his afflicted members. Such a mean oratory Tertullian calls *Triclinium Christianorum*,† "the parlour," or "three-bed-room, of the Christians."

A.—But it seems not to consist with Christian ingenuity ‡ for the fore-named Fathers absolutely to deny their having of churches, because they had only poor ones.

B.—Take, then, another answer; namely, In denying they had no temples, they meant it in the same notion wherein they were interrogated,—to wit, they had no temples like the Pagans for Heathen gods, no *claustra numinum*, "wherein the Deity they served was imprisoned." Or may we not say, that in that age the Christians had no churches generally, though they might have them in some places? the elevation of their happiness being varied according to several climates: and Chris-

**ARNOBius.** "But you suppose that we conceal the object of our worship, since we have neither temples nor altars."—**MINUTIUS FELIX.** **LACTANTIUS** says, "What meaning do they wish to convey by *temples* and *altars*, or even by *statues*?"—**EDIT.**

\* *De Conciliis Britan.*, p. 11.

† *Adversus Gentes*, cap. 3, 9.

‡ "Ingenuousness," as the word then very generally signified.—**EDIT.**

tendom then being of so large an extent, it might be stormy with persecution in one country, and fair weather in another.

We come now to the NECESSITY.

#### VII.

*There is no absolute necessity that Christians should have churches.*—No necessity at all in respect of God, no absolute necessity in respect of men, when persecution hinders the erecting of them: in such a case, any place is made a church for the time being; as any private house where the king and his retinue meet is presently made the court.

#### VIII.

*Christians have no direct precept to build churches under the Gospel.*—I say, “direct:” for the law of God, which commands a public sanctification of a sabbath, must needs, by way of necessary consequence, imply a set, known, and public place.\* Besides, God’s command to Moses and Solomon to build a temple, in a manner obligeth us to build churches. In which command, observe the body and the soul thereof. The BODY thereof was ceremonial and mortal, yea, died, and is buried in our Saviour’s grave: the SOUL thereof is moral and eternal, as founded in nature, and is always to endure. Thus St. Paul finds a constant bank for ministers’ maintenance locked up in a ceremonial law: “Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the ox that treadeth out the corn.” The apostle, on the morality couched therein, founded the charter of endowment for ministers in the Gospel. Besides, God hath left a warrant dormant with his church: “Let all things be done decently and in order.” And this ties Christians to the building of churches for their public assemblies, whereby not only decency but piety is so much advanced, especially in these three respects:—

1. Hereby the same meat serves to feed many guests, one pastor instructing many people in the same place.

2. Devotion is increased with company. Their praises are the louder; and music is sweetest in a full concert. Their prayers are the stronger, besetting God as it were in a round,

\* *Ut communes fidelibus preces Deus verbo suo edicit, sic et templa publica ipsis peragendis destinata esse oportet.*—*CALVINI Institutiones*, lib. iii. cap. xx. num. 30.

CALVIN says, “As God in his word enjoins on believers the performance of common prayers, so it is of necessary consequence that He has appointed the erection of churches for such Divine service.”—*EDIT.*

and not suffering Him to depart till he hath blessed them.  
 \* *Hæc vis grata Deo.*†

3. The very place itself, being dedicated to God's service, is a monitor to them *hoc agere*,‡ and stirs up pious thoughts in them. Say not, "It is but lame devotion that cannot mount without the help of such a wooden stock ;" rather, it is lame indeed which is not raised, though having the advantage thereof.

## IX.

*Those that may, must frequent the public churches.*—Such as now-a-days are ambitious of conventicles are deeply guilty : for as it had been desperate madness, in time of persecution, publicly to resort to Divine service, so it is no less unthankfulness to God now, to serve him in woods and holes, not taking notice of the liberty of the Gospel, which he graciously hath vouchsafed ; yea, such people in effect deny the king to be a "Defender of the Faith," but make him a persecutor rather, in that they dare not avouch the truth in the face of his authority. If it be good they do, thanks be to God ! it may be done anywhere ; if bad, it must be done no where. Besides, by their voluntary private meetings, they give occasions to many to suspect their actions there : and, grant them unjustly traduced for their behaviour therein, yet can they not justly be excused, because they invite slanderous tongues to censure them, in not "providing for honest things in the sight of men," and clearing God's service as well from the suspicion, as from the guilt, of any dishonesty.

We should now come to speak of the holiness, reverence, decency, and magnificence of churches : but herein I had rather hear the judgments of other men. Let it serve instead of a conclusion to observe,—that Solomon's temple was the stateliest structure that ever was or shall be in the world ; built by the wealthiest—contrived by the wisest—king, in seven years, (now counted the life of a man,) by an army of workmen, no fewer than one hundred fifty-three thousand three hundred, (1 Kings v. 15, 16,) of the soundest timber, most precious stones, most proper metal, as the nature of the things required ; either the strongest, brass ; or the richest, gold : in a word, earth gave it most costly matter, and Heaven itself most curious workmanship, God directing them. And though Solomon had no mines

\* *TERTULLIANI Apologia.*      + "Such holy violence is pleasing to God."  
 —EDIT.      ‡ "To perform such Divine service."—EDIT.

of gold and silver in his own land, yet had he the spoils and gifts of the neighbouring nations ; and, once in three years, the golden land of Ophir came swimming to Jerusalem. God being the landlord of the earth, Solomon was then his receiver, to whom the world paid-in her rent, to build his temple. And was not he a most wealthy king, “in whose days silver was nothing accounted of?” seeing, in our days, the commander of both Indies hath so much brass coin current in his court? As for Josephus’s conceit, that the second edition of the temple by Zerubbabel, as it was new forelled and filleted\* with gold by Herod, was a stately volume than the first of Solomon; it is too weak a surmise to have a confutation fastened to it.

And yet we will not deny but the world hath seen greater buildings for the piles and fabrics; as may appear by this parallel:—

1. *God’s temple*, built at Jerusalem by Solomon; sixty cubits long, twenty cubits broad, thirty cubits high. (2 Chron. iii. 3.)

2. *Diana’s temple*, built at Ephesus by the kings of Asia; four hundred and twenty-five feet long, two hundred and twenty feet broad, sixty feet high.†

3. *Sepulchre church*, built on Mount Calvary by Constantine; — long, — broad, — high. We find no set dimension, but hyperbolical expressions of it.‡

4. *St. Sophia’s church*, built at Constantinople by Justinian; two hundred and sixty feet long, seventy-five feet broad, one hundred and eighty feet high.§

5. *St. Paul’s church*, built at London by king Ethelbert; six hundred and ninety feet long, one hundred and thirty feet broad, one hundred and two feet high.||

6. *Turkish mosque*, built at Fez; one hundred and fifty

\* These two verbs are book-binders’ terms, well understood in Fuller’s days, and not now obsolete. *To forel* then meant to cover with vellum, as well as with common parchment; though it is now generally restricted to the latter material, prepared from sheep-skins. *To fillet* signifies to adorn with a gold line any part of the back or sides of a book. The word *volume*, in the next clause of the sentence, shows that this was our author’s meaning.—EDIT. + PLINII *Nat. Hist.*, lib. xxxvi. cap. 14. ‡ “Τύπος, ἀπειρον· μῆκος [καὶ] ὠλάτος, ἐπὶ ὠλεῖστα εὐρυνόμενον.”—EUSEBIUS, *De Vitâ Constantini*, lib. iii. cap. 24.

“In height it was boundless; in length and breadth it extended beyond conception.”—EDIT.

§ EVAGRIUS, lib. iv. cap. 30. || Namely, in the body of the church, beside the steeple.—CAMDEN’S *Britannia*, in Middlesex.

Florentine cubits long, eighty Florentine cubits broad, — Florentine cubits high.\*

But when the reader hath with his eyes surveyed these temples, and findeth them to exceed Solomon's, yet let him remember, first, that there is nothing more uncertain than the measures used in several countries ; one country's span may be another country's cubit, and the toe of one country as big as the foot of another. Secondly, that in Solomon's temple great cubits were meant, *prima mensurae*. (2 Chron. iii. 3.) Thirdly, that we see most of these structures only through the magnifying glass of fame ; or else by the eyes of travellers, who usually count the best *they ever saw* to be the best [that] *was ever seen* ; yea, in charity, will lend a church some hundreds of feet, to help out the dimension thereof, as Bellonius, a modern eye-witness, counteth three hundred and sixty-five doors in the present church of Sophia,† which hath but four, as an exact traveller hath observed.‡ Lastly, whilst human historians will overlash for the honour of their own nations, we know it must needs be true what Truth hath written of Solomon's temple.

• “The height we find not; but it is a mile and half in compass.”—LEO AFRICANUS, lib. iii. p. 126.      † *Observ.*, lib. i. cap. 76.      ‡ GEORGE SANDYS's “Travels,” p. 32.

## CHAPTER XXV.

## OF MINISTERS' MAINTENANCE.

MAINTENANCE of ministers ought to be plentiful, certain, and in some sort proportionable to their deserts.

It should be plentiful, because—

## MAXIM I.

*Their education was very chargeable, to fit them for their profession.*—Both at school and in the University; their books very dear; and those which they brought\* in folio, shrink quickly into quartos, in respect of the price their executors can get for them. Say not, that scholars draw needless expenses on themselves by their own lavishness, and that they should rather lead a fashion of thrift, than follow one of riot; for let any equal man tax the bill of their necessary charges, and it amounts to a great sum; yea, though they be never so good husbands. Besides, the prices of all commodities daily rise higher; all persons and professions are raised in their manner of living. Scholars, therefore, even against their wills, must otherwhiles be involved in the general expensiveness of the times; it being impossible that one spoke should stand still, when all the wheel turns about.

OBJECTION.—“But many needlessly charge themselves, in living too long in the University; sucking so long of their mother they are never a whit the wiser for it; whilst others, not staying there so long, nor going through the porch of human arts, but entering into divinity at the postern, have made good preachers, providing their people wholesome meat, though not so finely dressed.”

ANSWER.—Much good may it do their very hearts that feed on it! But how necessary a competent knowledge of those sciences is for a perfect divine, is known to every wise man. Let not men’s suffering be counted their fault, nor those accused to “stand idle in the market, whom no man hath hired.” Many would leavethe University sooner, if called into the country on tolerable conditions.

\* The antithesis in the sentence requires this word to be *bought*.—EDIT.

## II.

*Because ministers are to subsist in a free, liberal, and comfortable way.*—Balaam, the false prophet, rode with his two men ; (Numb. xxii. 22;) God's Levite had one man. (Judges xix. 11.) O, let not the ministers of the Gospel be slaves to others, and servants to themselves ! They are not to pry into gain through every small chink. It becomes them rather to be acquainted with the *natures* of things, than with the *prices* ; and to know them rather as they are in the world, than as they are in the market. Otherwise, if his means be small, and living poor, necessity will bolt him out of his own study, and send him to the barn, when he should be at his book, or make him study his Easter-book more than all other writers. Hereupon, some, wanting what they should have at home, have done what they should not abroad.

## III.

*Because hospitality is expected at their hands.*—The poor come to their houses, as if they had interest in them ; and the ministers can neither receive them nor refuse them. Not to relieve them, were not Christianity ; and to relieve them, were worse than infidelity, because therein they wrong their providing for their own family. Thus, sometimes are they forced to be Nabals against their will ; yet it grieveth them to send away the people empty. But what shall they do, seeing they cannot multiply their loaves and their fishes ? Besides, clergymen are deeply rated to all payments. O that their profession were but as highly prized, as their estate is valued !

## IV.

*Because they are to provide for their posterity.*—That after the death of their parents they may live, though not in a high, yet in an honest, fashion ; neither leaving them to the wide world, nor to a narrow cottage.

## V.

*Because the Levites, in the Old Testament, had plentiful provision.*—O ! it is good to be God's pensioner, for He giveth *His* large allowance. They had cities and suburbs, (houses and glebe-land,) tithes, freewill-offerings, and their parts in first-fruits and sacrifices. Do the ministers of the Gospel deserve worse wages for bringing better tidings ? Besides, the Levites'

places were hereditary, and the son sure of his father's house and land without a faculty *ad succedendum patri*.\*

## VI.

*Because the Papists, in time of Popery, gave their priests plentiful means.*—Whose benefactors, so bountiful to them, may serve to condemn the covetousness of our age towards God's ministers, in such who have more knowledge, and should have more religion.

OBJECTION.—“But the great means of the clergy in time of Popery was rather wrested than given. The priests melted men's hearts into charity with the scare-fire of purgatory: and for justice now to give back what holy fraud had gotten away, is not sacrilege, but restitution. And when those grand and vast donations were given to the church, there was, as some say, a voice of angels heard from heaven, saying, *Hodiè venenum in ecclesiam Christi cecidit.*”†

ANSWER.—If poison *then* fell into the church, *since* hath there a strong antidote been given to expel it, especially in impropriations. Distinguish we betwixt such donations given to uses in themselves merely unlawful and superstitious, as praying for the dead, and the like; and those which *in genere* were given to God's service, though *in specie* some superstitious ends were annexed thereto: and grant the former of these to be void in their very granting, yet the latter ought to be rectified and reduced to the true use, and in no case to be alienated from God. Plato saith, that in his time it was a proverb amongst children: Τὰν ὅρθως δοθέντων, οὐκ ἔστιν ἀφαιρεσίς. “Things that are truly given must not be taken away again.” Sure, as our Saviour set a child in the midst of his disciples to teach them humility, so now-a-days a child need be set in the midst of some men to teach them justice. Excellently Luther: † *Nisi superesset spolium Aegypti, quod rapimus Papae, omnibus ministris verbi fame pereundum esset; quod si sustentandi essent de contributione populi, miserè profectò ac duriter viverent. Alimus ergò de spoliis Aegypti collectis sub Papatu; et hoc ipsum tamen quod reliquum est diripitur a magistratu: spoliantur parochiae et scholæ, non aliter ac si fame necare nos velint.* §

\* “To succeed to his father.”—EDIT.

into the church of Christ.”—EDIT.

p. 631. † In his “Comment on Genesis xlviij.”

§ “Unless some of the spoils had remained which we snatched from the Pope, all the ministers of God's word must have perished through hunger; for if their maintenance had depended on the contributions of the people, they would

**OBJECTION.**—“But in the pure primitive times the means were least, and ministers the best: and now-a-days does not wealth make them lazy, and poverty keep them painful? Like hawks, they fly best when sharp. The best way to keep the stream of the clergy sweet and clear, is to fence out the tide of wealth from coming unto them.”

**ANSWER.**—Is this our thankfulness to the God of heaven, for turning persecution into peace, in pinching his poor ministers? When the commonwealth now makes a feast, shall neither Zadok the priest, nor Nathan the prophet, be invited to it? that so the footsteps of primitive persecution may still remain in these peaceable times, amongst the Papists, in their needless burning of candles; and amongst the Protestants, in the poor means of their ministers! And what, if some turn the spurs unto virtue into the stirrups of pride,—grow idle and insolent? let them soundly suffer for it themselves, on God’s blessing; but let not the bees be starved, that the drones may be punished.

#### VII.

*Ministers’ maintenance ought to be certain.*—Lest some of them meet with Labans for their patrons and parishioners; changing their wages ten times; and at last, if the fear of God doth not fright them, send them away empty.

#### VIII.

*It is unequal that there should be an equality betwixt all ministers’ maintenance.*—Except that first there were made an equality betwixt all their parts, pains, and piety. Parity in means will quickly bring a level and flat in learning; and few will strive to be such spiritual musicians, to whom David directeth many psalms, (“To him that excelleth,”) but will even content themselves with a canonical sufficiency; and desiring no more than what the law requires, more learning would be of more pains and the same profit, seeing the *mediocriter* goeth abreast with *optimè*.\*

indeed have had only a miserable and mean pittance. Our sustenance, therefore, is derived from the spoils of Egypt, which had been collected together under the Papacy; and yet the rest of these spoils are seized on by the magistrates, who despoil parishes and schools just as though they were desirous of destroying us by hunger.”

This passage will remind some readers of similar vituperative sentences in the Sermons of our undaunted Latimer.—*EDIT.*

\* “He that possesses only a mediocrity of talent and learning goeth abreast with him who is best qualified.”—*EDIT.*

OBJECTION.—“But neither the best, nor the most painful and learned, get the best preferment. Sometimes men of the least—get livings of the best—worth ; yea, such as are not worthy to be the curates to their curates, and *crassa ingenia* go away with *opima sacerdotia*.”\*

ANSWER.—Thus it ever was, and will be. But is this dust only to be found in churches, and not in civil courts ? Is merit every where else made the exact square of preferment ? Or did ever any urge, that all offices should be made champaign for their profits, none higher than other ? Such corruptions will ever be in the church, except there were a law, (ridiculous to be made, and impossible to be kept !) that men should be no-men ; but that all patrons or people, in their election or presentations of ministers, should wholly divest themselves of by-respects of kindred, friendship, profit, affection, and merely choose for desert : and then should we have all things so well-ordered, such pastors and such people, the church in a manner would be triumphant whilst militant. Till then, though the best livings light not always on the ablest men, yet, as long as there be such preferments in the church, there are still encouragements for men to endeavour to excel ; all hoping, and some happening on, advancement.

OBJECTION.—“But ministers ought to serve God merely for love of Himself ; and pity but his eyes were out that squints at his own ends in doing God’s work.”

ANSWER.—Then should God’s best saints be blind ; for Moses himself had “an eye to the recompence of reward.” Yea, ministers may look not only on their eternal but on their temporal reward, as motives to quicken their endeavours. And though it be true, that grave and pious men do study for learning’s sake, and embrace virtue for itself, yet it is true that youth (which is the season when learning is gotten) is not without ambition, nor will ever take pains to excel in any thing, when there is not hope of excelling others in the reward and dignity. And what reason is it that whilst Law and Physic are great portions to such as marry them, Divinity, their eldest sister, should only be put off with her own beauty ? In after-ages men will rather bind their sons to one *gainful* than to seven *liberal* sciences : only the lowest of the people would be made ministers, who cannot otherwise subsist ; and it will

\* “The greatest blockheads bear away the richest benefices.”—EDIT.

be bad when God's church is made a sanctuary only for men of desperate estates to take refuge in it.

However, let every minister take up this resolution: "To preach the word, to be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort, with all long-suffering and doctrine." If thou hast competent means comfortably to subsist on, be the more thankful to God the Fountain, to man the channel; painful in thy place, pitiful to the poor, cheerful in spending some, careful in keeping the rest. If not, yet retire not for want of a spur. Do something for love, and not all for money; for love of God, of goodness, of the godly, of a good conscience. Know, it is better to want means, than to detain them; the one only suffers, the other deeply sins: and it is as dangerous a persecution to religion, to draw the fuel from it, as to cast water on it. Comfort thyself that another world will pay this world's debts, "and great is thy reward with God in heaven: " *a reward*, in respect of his promise; *a gift*, in respect of thy worthlessness: and yet the less thou lookest at it, the surer thou shalt find it, if labouring with thyself to serve God for Himself; in respect of whom even heaven itself it but a sinister end.

## TO THE READER.

THESE "General Rules" we have placed in the middle, that the books on both sides may equally reach to them; because all persons therein are indifferently concerned.

THE HOLY STATE.

BOOK IV.

CONTAINING

ESSAYS AND CHARACTERS.



# THE HOLY STATE.

---

## THE FOURTH BOOK.

---

### CHAPTER I.

#### THE FAVOURITE.

A FAVOURITE is a court-dial, whereon all look whilst the king shines on him; and none, when it is night with him. A minion differs from a favourite; for he acts things by his own will and appetite, as a favourite by the judgment and pleasure of his prince. These again are two-fold: either such as rely wholly on their king's favour, or such as the king partly relies on their wisdom, loving them rather for use than affection. The former are like pretty wands in a prince's hand, for him to play with at pleasure; the latter, like staves, whereon he leans and supports himself in state-affairs.

#### MAXIM I.

*God is the original patron of all preferment, all dignities being in his disposal.*—“Promotion,” saith David, “comes neither from the east, nor from the west, nor yet from the south.” (Psalm lxxv. 6.) The word here translated *south*, in the Hebrew signifies “the desert;” and such a coarse list bounded Palestine both on the south and north; so that in effect preferment bloweth from no point of the compass.\* True, every man is *fortuna sue faber*, “the smith to beat out his own fortune;” but God first doth give him coals, iron, and anvil, before he can set up his trade.

\* TREMELLIOUS, on the verse.

## II.

*The first inlet into a prince's knowledge is half-way into his favour.*—Indeed, the heat of the sun pierceth into the innermost bowels of the earth, but only the surface thereof is gilded with his beams: so, though the influence of the prince's protection reacheth the utmost and obscurest man in his dominions; yet only some few, who lie on the top of the heap of his subjects, can be graced with his favour. He therefore that is known to his prince, starts in the half-way of his race to honour. A notable fellow, and a soldier to Alexander, finding this first admission to be the greatest difficulty, put feathers into his nose and ears, and danced about the court in an antic fashion, till the strangeness of the show brought the king himself to be a spectator. Then this mimic, throwing off his disguise, “Sir,” said he to the king, “thus I first arrive at your majesty's notice in the fashion of a fool, but can do you service in the place of a wise man, if you please to employ me.”

## III.

*It is the easier for them to leap into preferment, who have the rise of noble blood.*—Such get their honour with more ease, and keep it with less envy, which is busiest in maligning of upstarts. Nor is it any hinderance unto him, but rather an advantage, if such an able man be of an ancient family, decayed in state through the fault of his ancestors; for such, princes count the object as well of their pity as favour, and it an act as well of charity as bounty to relieve and raise them. But those are, in some sort, born favourites, and succeed by descent to a prince's affection, (rather as a debt than a gift,) whose parents have formerly suffered in the prince's or his predecessor's behalf. This made queen Elizabeth first reflect on the lord Norris, (for in the peaceable beginning of her reign the martial spirits of his son were not yet raised,) because his father died her mother's martyr, to attest her innocency in the reign of king Henry VIII.

## IV.

*Several doors open to preferment, but the king keeps the key of them all.*—Some have been advanced for their faces, their beauty; their heads, their wisdom; their tongues, their eloquence; their hands, their valour; their blood, their nobility; their feet, their nimbleness and comeliness in dancing; but all is ultimately resolved on the prince's pleasure.

## V.

*Happy the favourite that is raised without the ruin of another.*—As those who succeed in a dead place, who draw less envy of competitors, in keeping others out of the king's favour, than those that cast one out of the passions thereof. Also, he that climbeth up by degrees, stands more firmly in favour, as making his footing good as he goes.

## VI.

*Sometimes the prince's favour is all the known worth in the favourite.*—I say, “known:” for he is an infidel that believes not more than he sees, and that a rational prince will love where he sees no loveliness. Surely, Charles IX. of France beheld some worth in Albertus Tudius, a huckster's son, to whom, in five years, beside other honours, he gave six hundred thousand crowns; though some affirm, all the good the king got by him, was to learn to swear by the name of God.\* Except we will say, that kings desire in some to show as the absolute-ness of their power, to raise them from nothing, so of their will also, to advance them for nothing. But princes have their grounds reared above the flats of common men; and who will search the reasons of their actions must stand on an equal basis with them.

## VII.

*Some kings, to make a jest, have advanced a man in earnest.*—When amongst many articles exhibited to king Henry VII., by the Irish, against the earl of Kildare, the last was: “Finally, all Ireland cannot rule this earl.” “Then,” quoth the king, “shall this earl rule all Ireland;” and made him deputy thereof.† But such accidents are miraculous; and he shall starve that will not eat till such manna is dropped into his mouth.

## VIII.

*But by what lawful means soever he hath gotten his advancement, he standeth but in a slippery place.*—And therefore needs constantly to wear ice-spurs, for he rather glides than goes, and is in continual fear to be crushed from above by his prince's anger, and undermined from beneath by his fellow-subjects' envy. Against both which, see how he fenceth himself:—

\* CAMERARIUS, *Med. Hist.*, cap. iv.

† CAMDEN'S “Remains,” p. 271.

## IX.

*He praiseth God for preferring him, and prayeth to Him to preserve him.*—His greatness must needs fall which is not founded in goodness. First, he serveth his God in heaven, and then his master on earth. The best way to please all, or to displease them with least danger, is to please Him who is “all in all.”

## X.

*Next, he studieth the alphabet of his prince's disposition.*—Whose inclination, when found out, is half fitted. Then he applies himself to please his natural, though not vicious, humours; never preferring himself before his prince in any thing, wherein he desires or conceiveth himself to excel. Nero, though indeed but a fiddler, counted himself as well emperor of music as of Rome; and his followers too grossly did soothe him up in the admiration of his skill in that art. But the most temperate princes love to taste the sweetness of their own praises, (if not over-luscious with flattery,) where their own deserts lay the ground-work, and their favourites give the varnish to their commendations.

## IX.

*Bluntness of speech hath become some, and made them more acceptable.*—Yea, this hath been counted free-heartedness, in courtiers; conscience and Christian simplicity, in clergymen; valour, in soldiers. “I love thee the better,” said queen Elizabeth to archbishop Grindal, “because you live unmarried.” “And I, madam,” replied Grindal, “because you live unmarried, love you the worse.” But those who make music with so harsh an instrument, need have their bow well rosined before, and to observe time and place, lest that *gall* which would *tickle* at other times.

## XII.

*He leaveth his prince always with an appetite, and never gluts him with his company.*—Sometimes taking occasion to depart, whilst still his staying might be welcome. Such intermissions render him more gracious; yet he absents himself neither far, nor long, lest he might seem to neglect. Though he doth not always spur up close to the king's side, (to be constantly in his presence,) he never lags so far behind as to be out of distance. Long absence hath drawn the curtain betwixt a favourite and his sovereign, and thereby hath made room for others to step in betwixt them.

## XIII.

*He doth not boldly engross and limit his master's favour unto himself.*—He is willing his prince should shine beside him, but especially through him, on others. Too covetous are they who, not content to be sole heirs to their prince's favour, grudge that any pensions should be allotted to their younger brethren. Why should it not as well be treason to confine a prince's affection, as to imprison his person?

## XIV.

*He makes provident, yet moderate, use of his master's favour.*—Especially if he be of a various nature, and loveth exchange; counting it not to stand with the state of a king to wear a favourite threadbare. To blame they, who, thinking it will be continual summer with them, as in the country under the equator, will not so much as frost-nip their souls with a cold thought of want hereafter, and provide neither to oblige others, nor to maintain themselves. As bad they, on the other side, who, like those who have a lease, without impeachment of waste, speedily to expire, whip and strip, and rap and rend, whatsoever can come to their fingers.

## XV.

*He makes his estate invisible, by purchasing reversions, and in remote countries.*—He hath a moderate estate in open view, that the world may settle their looks on it, (for if they see nothing, they will suspect the more,) and the rest far off and hereafter. The eyes of envy can never bewitch that which it doth not see. These reversions will be ripe for his heir, by that time his heir shall be ripe for them, and the money of distracted revenues will meet entirely in one purse.

## XVI.

*Having attained to a competent height, he had rather grow a buttress broader, than a story higher.*—He fortifieth himself by raising outworks, and twisting himself by intermarriages of his kindred in noble families: his countenance will give all his kinswomen beauty. Some favourites, whose heels have been tripped up by their adversaries, have with their hands held on their allies, till they could recover their feet again.

## XVII.

*He makes not great men dance invidious attendance to speak with him.*—O, whilst their heels cool, how do their hearts burn!

Wherefore, in the midst of the term of his business, he makes himself a vacation to speak with them. Indeed, some difficulty of access and conference begets a reverence towards them in common people, who will suspect the ware not good, if cheap to come by ; and therefore he values himself in making them to wait. Yet he loves not to over-linger any in an afflicting hope, but speedily dispatcheth the fears or desires of his expecting clients.

## XVIII.

*He loveth a good name, but will not woo or court it otherwise than as it is an attendant on honesty and virtue.*—But chiefly he avoideth the sweet poison of popularity, wherewith some have swollen till they have broken. Especially, he declines the entertainment of many martialists, the harsh counsel of soldiers being commonly untunable to the court-way. The immoderate resorting of military men to a favourite, (chiefly if by any palliation he pretends to the crown,) is like the flocking of so many ravens and vultures which foretell his funeral.

## XIX.

*He preserves all inferior officers in the full rights and privileges of their places.*—Some are so boisterous, no severals will hold them, but lay all offices common to their power ; or else are so busy, that, making many circles in other men's professions, they raise up ill spirits in them ; and, for every finger they needlessly thrust into other men's matters, shall find a hand against them, when occasion shall serve. As bad are they, who, leaping over meaner persons to whom the business is proper, bring it *per saltum* to themselves, not suffering matters to run along in a legal channel, but in a by-ditch of their own cutting, so drawing the profit to themselves which they drain from others.

## XX.

*If accused by his adversaries, he flies with speed to his prince's person.*—No better covert for a hunted favourite to take to : where, if innocent, with his loyal breath he easily dispels all vapours of ill suggestions ; if guilty, yet he is half-acquitted, because judged by the prince himself, whose compassion he moves by an ingenuous confession. But if this sanctuary-door be bolted against him, then his ruin is portended ; and, not long after,

## xxi.

*He is a fish on the dry shore, when the tide of his master's love hath left him.*—So that if he be not the more wise, he will be made a prey to the next that finds him. Several are the causes of favourites' falls, proceeding either from the king's pleasure, their enemies' malice, or their own default. Different the degrees and manner of their ruin: some, when grown too great, are shifted under honourable colours of employment into a foreign air, there to purge and lessen; others receive their condemnation at home. But, how bad soever his cast be, see how he betters it by good playing it:—

## xxii.

*He submits himself, without contesting, to the pleasure of his prince.*—For, being a tenant-at-will to the favour of his sovereign, it is vain to strive to keep violent possession when his landlord will out him. Such struggling makes the hook of his enemies' malice strike the deeper into him. And whilst his adversaries spur him with injuries, on purpose to make him spring out into rebellious practices, he reins-in his passions with the stronger patience.

## xxiii.

*If he must down, he seeks to fall easily, and, if possible, to light on his legs.*—If stripped out of his robes, he strives to keep his clothes; losing his honour, yet to hold his lands; if not them, his life; and thanks his prince, for giving him whatsoever he takes not away from him.

To conclude: A favourite is a trade, whereof he that breaks once, seldom sets up again. Rare are the examples of those who have compounded and thrived well afterwards. Mean men are like underwood, which the law calls *sylva cædua, quæ succisa renascitur*,\* “being cut down, it may spring again.” But favourites are like oaks, which scarce thrive after, (to make timber,) being lopped; but, if once cut down, never grow more. If we light on any who have flourished the second time, impute it to their prince's pleasure to cross the common observation, and to show that nothing is past cure with so great a surgeon, who can even set a broken favourite.

Now, to show the inconstancy of greatness not supported with virtue, we will first insist in a remarkable pattern in holy

\* *LYNWOOD*, lib. iii. cap. *Quanquam exsolventibus.*

Scripture. Next, will we produce a parallel of two favourites in our English court, living in the same time and height of honour with their sovereign ; the one, through his viciousness, ending in misery ; the other, by his virtuous demeanour, shining bright to his death : for I count it a wrong to our country to import precedents out of foreign histories, when our home-chronicles afford us as plentiful and proper examples.

---

## CHAPTER II.

### THE LIFE OF HAMAN.

HAMAN, the son of Hammedatha, of the kindred of Agag, and people of Amalek, was highly favoured by Ahasuerus, emperor of Persia. I find not what precious properties he had. Sure, he was a pearl in the eye of Ahasuerus, who commanded all his subjects to do lowly reverence unto him : only Mordecai the Jew excepted himself from that rule, denying him the payment of so humble an observance.

I fathom not the depth of Mordecai's refusal :—perchance, Haman interpreted this reverence, farther than it was intended, as a divine honour, and therefore Mordecai would not blow wind into so empty a bladder, and be accessory to puff him up with self-conceit ;—or because Amalek was the devil's first-fruits, which first brake the peace with Israel, and God commanded an antipathy against them ;—or he had some private countermand from God, not to reverence him. Whatever it was, I had rather accuse myself of ignorance, than Mordecai of pride.

Haman swells at this neglect : “ Will not his knees bow ? his neck shall break with a halter ! ” But, O ! this was but poor and private revenge : one lark will not fill the belly of such a vulture. What, if Mordecai will not stoop to Haman, must Haman stoop to Mordecai to be revenged of him alone ? Wherefore he plotteth, with the king's sword, to cut off the whole nation of the Jews.

Repairing to Ahasuerus, he requested that all the Jews might be destroyed. He backs his petition with three arguments : First, it was a scattered nation ; had they inhabited one entire

country, their extirpation would have weakened his empire ; but being dispersed, though killed every where, they would have been missed no where. Secondly, his empire would be more uniform when this irregular people, not observing his laws, were taken away. Thirdly, ten thousand talents Haman would pay, into the bargain, into the king's treasure.

What, out of his own purse ? I see, his pride was above his covetousness ; and spiteful men count their revenge a purchase which cannot be over-bought : or, perchance, this money should arise out of the confiscation of their goods. Thus Ahasuerus should lock all the Jews into his chest, and, by help of Haman's chemistry, convert them into silver.

See how this grand destroyer of a whole nation pleads the king's profit ! Thus our puny depopulators allege, for their doings, the king's and country's good ; and we will believe them when they can persuade us, that their private coffers are the king's exchequer. But never any wounded the commonwealth, but first they kissed it, pretending the public good.

Haman's *silver* is dross with Ahasuerus : only his *pleasure* is current with him. If Haman will have it so, so it shall freely be ; he will *give* him and not *sell* him his favour. It is woful when great judges see parties accused, by other men's eyes ; but condemn them, by their own mouths. And now posts were sent through all Persia, to execute the king's cruel decree.

I had almost forgotten how, before this time, Mordecai had discovered the treason which two of the king's chamberlains had plotted against him ; which good service of his, though not presently paid, yet was scored up in the chronicles, (not rewarded but recorded,) where it slept till a due occasion did awake it. Perchance, Haman's envy kept it from the king's knowledge ; and princes sometimes, to reward the desert of men, want not mind, but minding of it.

To proceed : See the Jews all pitifully pensive and fasting in sackcloth and ashes, even to queen Esther herself, who, unknown to Haman, was one of that nation. And, to be brief, Esther invites Ahasuerus and Haman to a banquet, (whose life shall pay the reckoning !) and, next day, they are both invited to a second entertainment.

Meantime Haman provides a gallows of fifty cubits high, to hang Mordecai on. Five cubits would have served the turn ; and, had it taken effect, the height of the gallows had but set his soul so much the farther on his journey towards heaven. His stomach was so sharp set, he could not stay till he had

dined on all the Jews, but first he must break his fast on Mordecai; and fit it was this bell-wether should be sacrificed before the rest of the flock: wherefore he comes to the court, to get leave to put him to death.

The night before, Ahasuerus had passed without sleep. The chronicles are called for, either to invite slumber, or to entertain waking with the less tediousness. God's hand in the margin points the reader to the place where Mordecai's good service was related; and Ahasuerus asketh Haman, (newly come into the presence,) "What shall be done to the man whom the king will honour?"

Haman, being now, as he thought, to measure his own happiness, had been much to blame if he made it not of the largest size. He cuts out a garment of honour, royal both for matter and making, for Mordecai to wear. By the king's command, he becomes Mordecai's herald and page, lackeying by him riding on the king's steed, (who, he hoped, by this time should have mounted *the wooden horse*,) \* and then, pensive in heart, hastens home to bemoan himself to his friends. Haman's wife proves a true prophetess, presaging his ruin. If the feet of a favourite begin to slip on the steep hill of honour, his own weight will down with him to the bottom: once past noon with him, it is presently night.

For, at the next feast, Ahasuerus is mortally incensed against him for plotting the death of Esther, with the rest of her people. (For had his project succeeded, probably the Jew had not been spared for being a queen, but the queen had been killed for being a Jew.) Haman, in a careless, sorrowful posture, more minding his life than his lust, had cast himself on the queen's bed. "Will he force the queen also," said Ahasuerus, "before me in the house?" These words rang his passing-bell in the court; and, according to the Persian fashion, they covered his face, putting *him* in a winding sheet *that* was dead in the king's favour. The next news we hear of him is, that, by exchange, Haman inherits the gibbet of Mordecai, and Mordecai, the house and greatness of Haman, the decree against the Jews being generally reversed.

\* The wooden gallows which Haman had provided.—EDIT.

## CHAPTER III.

## THE LIFE OF CARDINAL WOLSEY.

THOMAS WOLSEY was born at Ipswich in Suffolk ; whose father was a butcher, and an honest man,\* and was there brought up at school, where afterwards he built a beautiful College. From Ipswich he went to Oxford, and from thence was preferred to be schoolmaster to the marquess of Dorset's children, where he first learnt to be imperious over noble blood. By the stairs of a parsonage or two, he climbed up at last into the notice of Fox, bishop of Winchester, and was received to be his secretary.

There was, at that time, a faction at court betwixt bishop Fox, and Thomas Howard, earl of Surrey. The bishop, being very old, was scarce able to make good his party ; yet it grieved him not so much to stoop to nature, as to the earl, his cor-rival : wherefore, not able to manage the matter himself, he was contented to be the stock whereon Wolsey should be grafted, whom he made heir to his favour, commanding him to king Henry VII. for one fit to serve a king, and command others ; and, hereupon, he was entertained at court.

Soon after, when Henry his son came to the crown, Wolsey quickly found the length of his foot, and fitted him with an easy shoe. He persuaded him, that it was good accepting of pleasure whilst youth tendered it : let him follow his sports, whilst Wolsey would undertake every night briefly to represent unto him all matters of moment which had passed the council-table : for princes are to take state-affairs not in the mass and whole bulk of them, but only the spirits thereof skilfully extracted. And, hereupon, the king referred all matters to Wolsey's managing, on whom he conferred the bishoprics of Durham, Winchester, and York, with some other spiritual promotions.

Nothing now hindered Wolsey's prospect to overlook the whole court, but the head of Edward Stafford, duke of Buckingham, who was high in birth, honour, and estate. For, as for Charles Brandon, duke of Suffolk, he stood not in Wolsey's way, but rather beside than against him ; Brandon being the

\* *Parentem habuit virum probum at lanium.*—POLYDORUS VIRGILIUS, p. 633.

king's companion in pleasures, Wolsey his counsellor in policy ; Brandon, favourite to Henry, Wolsey, to the king. Wolsey takes this Buckingham to task, who (otherwise a brave gentleman) was proud and popular ; and that tower is easily undermined whose foundation is hollow. His own folly, with Wolsey's malice, overthrew him. Vain-glory ever lieth at an open guard, and giveth much advantage of play to her enemies. The duke is condemned of high treason, though rather cor-rival with the king for his clothes than his crown, being excessively brave in apparel.

The axe that kills Buckingham, frights all others, who turn contesting into complying with our archbishop,—now cardinal, legate *a latere*, and Lord-Chancellor. All the Judges stood at the bar of his devotion. His displeasure [was] more feared than the king's, whose anger, though violent, was placable ; the cardinal's, of less fury, but more malice. Yet, in matters of judicature, he behaved himself commendably : I hear no widows' sighs, nor see orphans' tears, in our chronicles, caused by him. Sure, in such cases, wherein his private ends made him not a party, he was an excellent justiciary, as being too proud to be bribed, and too strong to be overborne.

Next, he aspires to the triple crown ; he only wants " Holiness," and must be Pope. Yet was it a great labour for a *Tramontane*\* to climb over the Alps to St. Peter's chair ; a long leap from York to Rome ; and, therefore, he needed to take a good rise. Besides, he used Charles V., emperor, for his staff ; gold he gave to the Romish cardinals, and they gave him golden promises ; so that, at last, Wolsey perceived, both the emperor and the court of Rome delayed and deluded him.

He is no fox whose den hath but one hole. Wolsey, finding this way stopped, goes another way to work, and falls off to the French king, hoping, by his help, to obtain his desires. However, if he help not himself, he would hinder Charles the emperor's designs ; and revenge is a great preferment. Wherefore, covertly he seeks to make a divorce betwixt queen Catherine dowager, the emperor's aunt, and king Henry VIII., his master.

Queen Catherine's age was above her husband's ; her gravity above her age ; more pious at her beads, than pleasant in her bed ; a better woman than a wife ; and a fitter wife for any prince than king Henry. Wolsey, by his instruments, per-

\* *Tramontain* was the orthography, in Fuller's days, of " one born on the northern side of the Alps, one not an Italian."—EDIT.

suades the king to put her away, pleading they were so contiguous and near in kindred, they might not be made continuous (one flesh) in marriage, because she before had been wife to prince Arthur, the king's brother. Besides, the king wanted a male heir, which he much desired.

Welcome whisperings are quickly heard. The king embraceth the motion. The matter is entered in the Romish court, but long delayed ; the Pope first meaning to divorce most of the gold from England in this tedious suit. But here Wolsey miscarried in the master-piece of his policy. For he hoped, upon the divorce of king Henry from queen Catherine his wife, which with much ado was effected, to advance a marriage betwixt him and the king of France's sister, thinking, with their nuptial ring, to wed the king of France eternally to himself, and mould him for farther designs : whereas, contrary to his expectation, king Henry fell in love with Anna Boleyn, a lady whose beauty exceeded her birth, though honourable ; wit, her beauty ; piety, all ; one for his love, not lust : so that there was no gathering of green fruit from her till marriage had ripened it ; whereupon the king took her to wife.

Not long after followed the ruin of the Cardinal, caused by his own viciousness, heightened by the envy of his adversaries. He was caught in a premunire, for procuring to be legate *de latere*, and advancing the Pope's power against the laws of the realm ; and eight other articles were framed against him, for which we report the reader to our chronicles.\* The main was his *Ego et rex meus*,† wherein he remembered his old profession of a schoolmaster, and forgot his present estate of a statesman. But as for some things laid to his charge, his friends plead, that where potent malice is promoter, the accusations shall not want proof, though the proof may want truth. Well : the broad seal was taken from him, and some of his spiritual preferments. Yet was he still left bishop of Winchester, and archbishop of York ; so that the king's goodness hitherto might have seemed rather to ease him of burdensome greatness, than to have deprived him of wealth or honour ; which whether he did out of love to Wolsey, or fear of the Pope, I interpose no opinion.

Home now went Wolsey into Yorkshire, and lived at his manor of Cawood, where he wanted nothing the heart of man could desire for contentment. But great minds count every place a prison, which is not a king's court ; and just it was, that

\* Fox's "Acts and Monuments," p. 996.

† "I and my king."—EDIT.

he who would not see his own happiness, should therefore feel his own misery. He provided for his installing archbishop-state, equivalent to a king's coronation; which his ambition revived other of his misdemeanours, and, by command from the king, he was arrested by the earl of Northumberland, and so took his journey up to London. By the way, his soul was racked betwixt different tidings; now hoisted up with hope of pardon, then instantly let down with news of the king's displeasure, till at Leicester his heart was broken with these sudden and contrary motions. The story goes, that he should breathe out his soul with speeches to this effect: "Had I been as careful to serve the God of heaven, as I have to comply with the will of my earthly king, God would not have left me in mine old age, as the other hath done."

His body swelled after his death, as his mind did whilst he was living; which, with other symptoms, gave the suspicion, that he poisoned himself. It will suffice us to observe, if a great man, much beloved, dieth suddenly, the report goes that others poisoned him: if he be generally hated, then, that he poisoned himself. Sure, never did a great man fall with less pity. Some of his own servants, with the feathers they got under him, flew to other masters. Most of the clergy (more pitying his profession than person) were glad, that the felling of this oak would cause the growth of much underwood.

Let geometricians measure the vastness of his mind by the footsteps of his buildings,—Christ-Church, White-Hall, Hampton-Court: and no wonder if some of these were not finished, seeing his life was rather broken off than ended! Sure, king Henry lived in two of his houses, and lies now in the third,—I mean, his tomb at Windsor. In a word, in his prime he was the bias of the Christian world, drawing the bowl thereof to what side he pleased.

## CHAPTER IV.

## THE LIFE OF CHARLES BRANDON, DUKE OF SUFFOLK.

CHARLES BRANDON was son to sir William Brandon, standard-bearer to king Henry VII., in whose quarrel he was slain in Bosworth-field; wherefore the king counted himself bound in honour and conscience to favour young Charles, whose father spent his last breath to blow him to the haven of victory, and caused him to be brought up with prince Henry, his second son.

The intimacy betwixt them took deep impression in their tender years, which, hardened with continuance of time, proved indelible. It was advanced by the sympathy of their active spirits, (men of quick and large-striding minds loving to walk together,) not to say, that the looseness of their youthful lives made them the faster friends. Henry, when afterwards king, heaped honours upon him, created him viscount Lisle and duke of Suffolk.

Not long after, some of the English nobility got leave to go to the public tilting in Paris, and there behaved themselves right valiantly; though the sullen French would scarce speak a word in their praise. For they conceived, it would be an eternal impoverishing of the credit of their nation, if the honour of the day should be exported by foreigners. But Brandon bare away the credit from all, fighting at barriers with a giant Almain,\* till he made an earthquake in that mountain of flesh, making him reel and stagger; † and many other courses at tilt he performed to admiration. Yea, the lords beheld him not with more envious—than the ladies with gracious—eyes, who darted more glances in love, than the other ran spears in anger against him; especially Mary the French queen, and sister to king Henry VIII., who afterwards proved his wife.

For, after the death of Lewis XII. her husband, king Henry her brother employed Charles Brandon to bring her over into England, who improved his service so well that he got her

\* *Almain*, a German.—EDIT.

† HOLLINSHED, p. 833.

good-will to marry her. Whether his affections were so ambitious to climb up to her, or hers so courteous as to descend to him, (who had been twice a widower before,)\* let youthful pens dispute it: it sufficeth us, both met together. Then wrote he in humble manner to request king Henry's leave to marry his sister; but, knowing that matters of this nature are never sure till finished, and that leave is sooner got to do such attempts when done already; and wisely considering with himself, that there are but few days in the almanack, wherein such *marriages come in*, and subjects have opportunity to wed queens, he first married her privately in Paris.†

King Henry, after the acting of some anger, and showing some state-discontent, was quickly contented therewith; yea, the world conceiveth that he "gave this woman to be married to this man," in sending him on such an employment. At Calais they were afterward re-married, or, if you will, their former private marriage publicly solemnized, and, coming into England, lived many years in honour and esteem, no less dear to his fellow-subjects than his sovereign. He was often employed general in martial affairs, especially in the wars betwixt the English and French, though the greatest performance on both sides was but mutual indenting the dominions each of other with inroads.

When the divorce of king Henry from queen Catherine was so long in agitation, Brandon found not himself a little aggrieved at the king's expense of time and money: for the court of Rome in such matters, wherein money is gotten by delays, will make no more speed than the beast in Brazil, which the Spaniards call *Pigritia*, which goes no farther in a fortnight than a man will cast a stone. Yea, Brandon well perceived that cardinal Campeius and Wolsey in their court at Bridewell, wherein the divorce was judicially handled, intended only to produce a solemn nothing, their court being but the clock set according to the dial at Rome, and the instructions received thence. Wherefore, knocking on the table, in the presence of the two cardinals, he bound it with an oath, that "it was never well in England since cardinals had any thing to do therein:" and from that time forward, as an active instrument, he endeavoured the abolishing of the Pope's power in England.

\* First married to Margaret Nevile, after to Anne daughter to sir Anthony Brown. † HOLLINSHEAD, p. 836.

For he was not only (as the Papists complain of him)\* a principal agent in that Parliament, *anno* 1534, wherein the Pope's supremacy was abrogated, but also a main means of the overturning of abbeys; as conceiving, that though the head was struck off, yet as long as that neck and those shoulders remained, there would be a continual appetite of re-uniting themselves. Herein his thoughts were more pure from the mixture of covetousness than many others employed in the same service: for, after that our eyes, justly dazzled at first with the brightness of God's justice on those vicious fraternities, have somewhat recovered themselves, they will serve us to see the greedy appetites of some instruments to feed on church-morsels.

He lived and died in the full favour of his prince; though, as cardinal Pole observed, they who were highest in this king's favour, their heads were nearest danger. Indeed, king Henry was not very tender in cutting off that joint; and, in his reign, the axe was seldom wiped, before wetted again with noble blood. He died *anno* 1544, much beloved, and lamented of all, for his bounty, humility, valour, and all noble virtues; since the heat of his youth was tamed in his reduced age; and [he] lies buried at Windsor.

\* SANDERS, *De Schismate Anglicano*, p. 108.

## CHAPTER V.

## THE WISE STATESMAN.

To describe the statesman at large, is the subject rather of a volume than a chapter, and is as far beyond my power, as wide of my profession. We will not launch into the deep, but satisfy ourselves to sail by the shore, and briefly observe his carriage towards God, his king, himself, home-persons, and foreign princes.

## MAXIM I.

*He counts the fear of God the beginning of wisdom.*—And therefore esteemeth no project profitable, which is not lawful; nothing politic, which crosseth piety. Let not any plead, for the contrary, Hushai's dealing with Absalom, which strongly savoured of double-dealing; for, what is a question cannot be an argument, seeing the lawfulness of his deed therein was never decided; and he is unwise that will venture the state of his soul on the litigious title of such an example. Besides, we must live by God's precepts, not by the godlies' practice; \* and though God causeth sometimes the sun of success to shine as well on bad as good projects, yet, commonly, wicked actions end in shame at the last.

II.

*In giving counsel to his prince, he had rather displease than hurt him.*—Plain-dealing is one of the daintiest rarities [which] can be presented to some princes, as being novelty to them all times of the year. The philosopher † could say, *Quid omnia possidentibus deest? Ille qui verum dicat.*‡ Wherefore, our statesman seeks to undeceive his prince from the fallacies of flatterers, who, by their plausible persuasions, have bolstered-up their crooked counsels, to make them seem straight in the king's eyes.

III.

*Yet, if dissenting from his sovereign, he doth it with all humility and moderation.—It is neither manners nor wit to*

\* "The practice of the godly."—**EDIT.** + *SENECA De Beneficiis*,  
lib. iii. cap. 30. † "What is it that is still wanting to those who are in  
possession of every thing? They are in great need of one who will speak the truth."  
—**EDIT.**

cross princes in their game, much less in their serious affairs. Yea, it may be rebellion in a subject to give his sovereign loyal counsel, if proceeding from a spirit of contradiction and contempt, and uttered in audacious language. What do these but give wholesome physic, wrapped up in poisoned papers?

## IV.

*He is constant, but not obstinate, in the advice he gives.*—Some think it beneath a wise man to alter their opinion: a maxim both false and dangerous. We know what worthy Father wrote his own “Retraction;”\* and it matters not though we go back from our word, so we go forward in the truth and a sound judgment. Such an one changeth not his main opinion, which ever was this,—to embrace that course which, upon mature deliberation, shall appear unto him the most advised.

As for his carriage towards himself,—

## V.

*He taketh an exact survey of his own defects and perfections.*—As for the former, his weaknesses and infirmities he doth carefully and wisely conceal. Sometimes he covers them over with a cautious confidence, and presents a fair hilt, but keeps the sword in the sheath, which wanteth an edge. But this he manageth with much art; otherwise, being betrayed, it would prove most ridiculous, and it would make brave music to his enemies, to hear the hissing of an empty bladder when it is pricked.

## VI.

*His known perfections he seeks modestly to cloud and obscure.*—It is needless to show the sun shining, which will break out of itself. Not like our fantasists,† who, having a fine watch, take all occasions to draw it out to be seen. Yea, because sometimes he concealeth his sufficiency in such things wherein others know he hath ability, he shall therefore be thought, at other times, to have ability in those matters wherein indeed he wants it; men interpreting him therein rather modestly to dissemble, than to be defective. Yet, when just occasion is offered, he shows his perfections soundly, though seldom, and then graceth them out to the best advantage.

\* ST. AUGUSTINE'S “Retractations.”—EDIT.  
dandies of those days.—EDIT.

† A name for the

## VII.

*In discourse he is neither too free, nor over-reserved, but observes a mediocrity.*—His hall is common to all comers, but his closet is locked. General matters he is as liberal to impart, as careful to conceal importancies. Moderate liberty in speech inviteth and provoketh liberty to be used again, where a constant closeness makes all suspect him; and his company is burdensome that liveth altogether on the expenses of others, and will lay out nothing himself. Yea, who will barter intelligence with him that returns no considerable ware in exchange?

## VIII.

*He trusteth not any with a secret which may endanger his estate.*—For if he tells it to his servant, he makes him his master; if to his friend, he enables him to be a foe, and to undo him at pleasure; whose secrecy he must buy at the party's own price, and if ever he shuts his purse, the other opens his mouth. Matters of inferior consequence he will communicate to a fast friend, and crave his advice; for, two eyes see more than one, though it be never so big, and set (as in Polyphemus) in the midst of the forehead.

## IX.

*He is careful and provident in the managing of his private estate.*—Excellently Ambrose: \* *An idoneum putabo qui mihi det consilium, qui non dat sibi?* † Well may princes suspect those statesmen not to be wise in the business of the commonwealth, who are fools in ordering their own affairs. Our politician, if he enlargeth not his own estate, at least keeps it in good repair. As for avaricious courses, he disdaineth them. Sir Thomas More, though some years Lord-Chancellor of England, scarce left his son five-and-twenty pounds a-year more than his father left him. ‡ And sir Henry Sidney, father to sir Philip, being Lord-President of Wales and Ireland, got not one foot of land in either country, rather seeking after the common good, than his private profit. § I must confess, the last age produced an English statesman, who was the picklock of the cabinets of foreign princes; who, though the wisest in his time and way, died poor, and indebted to private men, though not so

\* *De Officis*, lib. ii. cap. 112.

† “Shall I consider that man competent to afford me wise counsel, who, it is evident, does not receive it himself?”—EDIT.

‡ SANDERS *De Schismate Anglicano*, p. 118.

§ HENRY LHOUD, in the beginning of his “Welch Chronicle.”

much as the whole kingdom was indebted to him.\* But such an accident is rare ; and a small hospital will hold those statesmen who have impaired their means, not by their private carelessness, but carefulness for the public.

As for his carriage towards home-persons,—

## x.

*He studieth men's natures, first reading the title-pages of them by the report of fame.*—But credits not fame's relations to the full : otherwise, as, in London-exchange, one shall over-buy wares who gives half the price at first demanded, so he that believeth the moiety of fame may believe too much. Wherefore, to be more accurate,—

## xi.

*He reads the chapters of men's natures, (chiefly his concurrents and competitors,) by the reports of their friends and foes.*—Making allowance for their engagements, not believing all in the mass, but only what he judiciously extracteth. Yet virtues confessed by their foes, and vices acknowledged by their friends, are commonly true. The best intelligence, if it can be obtained, is from a fugitive privado.†

## xii.

*But the most legible character and truest edition wherein he reads a man, is in his own occasional openings.*—And that in these three cases :—

1. When the party discloses himself in his wine.—For, though it be unlawful to practise on any to make them drunk, yet, no doubt, one may make a good use of another man's abusing himself. What they say of the herb *lunaria*, ceremoniously gathered at some set times, that, laid upon any lock, it makes it fly open, is most true of drunkenness, unbolting the most important secrets.

2. When he discovereth himself in his passions.—Physicians, to make some small veins in their patients' arms plump and full, that they may see them the better to let them blood, use to put them into hot water : so the heat of passion presenteth many invisible veins in men's hearts to the eye of the beholder ;

\* Sir Francis Walsingham.—*EDIT.*

† From one who, having been a man's bosom-friend, abandons him and becomes his enemy.—*EDIT.*

yea, the sweat of anger washeth off their paint, and makes them appear in their true colours.

3. When accidentally they bolt-out speeches unawares to themselves.—More hold is then to be taken of a few words casually uttered, than of set, solemn speeches, which rather show men's arts than their natures, as indited rather from their brains than hearts. The *drop* of one word may show more than the *stream* of a whole oration; and our statesman, by examining such fugitive passages, (which have stolen on a sudden out of the party's mouth,) arrives at his best intelligence.

## XIII.

*In court-factions, he keeps himself in a free neutrality.*—Otherwise, to engage himself needlessly, were both folly and danger. When Francis I., king of France, was consulting with his captains how to lead his army over the Alps into Italy, whether this way or that way, Amaril his fool sprung out of a corner, where he sat unseen, and bade them rather take care which way they should bring their army out of Italy back again.\* Thus, it is easy for one to interest and embark himself in others' quarrels, but much difficulty it is to be disengaged from them afterwards. Nor will our statesman entitle himself a party in any feminine discords, knowing that “women's jars breed men's wars.”

## XIV.

*Yet he counts neutrality profaneness in such matters wherein God, his prince, the church, or state are concerned.*—Indeed, “he that meddleth with strife not belonging unto him, is like one that taketh a dog by the ears.” (Prov. xxvi. 17.) Yet, if the dog worrieth a sheep, we may, yea, ought, to rescue it from his teeth; and must be champions for innocence, when it is overborne with might. He that will stand neuter in such matters of moment, wherein his calling commands him to be a party, with Servilius in Rome, will please neither side: of whom the historian says: *P. Servilius, medium se gerendo, nec plebis vitavit odium, nec apud patres gratiam invit.*† And just it is with God, that they should be strained in the twist, who stride so wide as to set their legs in two opposite sides. Indeed, an upright shoe may fit both feet, but never saw I a glove that

\* PERE DE LANCRE, “Of the Uncertainty of Things,” lib. ii. disc. 4.

† “By steering a middle course, P. Servilius neither avoided popular odium, nor ingratuated himself into favour with the patricians.”—EDIT.

would serve both hands. Neutrality in matters of an indifferent nature may fit well; but never suits well in important matters, of far different conditions.

## XV.

*He is the centre wherein lines of intelligence meet from all foreign countries.*—He is careful that his outlandish instructions be full, true, and speedy; not, with the sluggard, telling for news at noon, that the sun is risen. But more largely hereof in the “Ambassador,” hereafter.

## XVI.

*He refuseth all underhand pensions from foreign princes.*—Indeed, honorary rewards, received with the approbation of his sovereign, may be lawful and less dangerous. For, although even such gifts tacitly oblige him, by way of gratitude, to do all good offices to that foreign prince whose pensioner he is; yet his counsels pass not but with an open abatement, in regard of his known engagements; and so the State is armed against the advice of such who are well known to lean to one side. But secret pensions which flow from foreign princes, like the river Anas in Spain, under ground, not known or discerned, are most mischievous. The receivers of such will play under-board at the council-table; and the eating and digesting of such outlandish food will, by degrees, fill their veins with outlandish blood, even in their very hearts.

## XVII.

*His master-piece is in negotiating for his own master with foreign princes.*—At Rhodes there was a contention betwixt Apelles and Protogenes, cor-rivals in the mystery of limning. Apelles with his pencil drew a very slender, even line; Protogenes drew another more small and slender in the midst thereof with another colour: Apelles again, with a third line of a different colour, drew through the midst of that Protogenes had made; \* *nullum relinquens amplius subtilitati locum.*† Thus our statesman traverseth matters, doubling and redoubling in his foreign negotiations with the politicians of other princes, winding and intrenching themselves mutually within the

\* *PLINII Nat. Hist.*, lib. xxxiv. cap. 10.  
space for any further refinement.”—EDIT.

† “And thus left no possible

thoughts each of other, till at last our statesman leaves no degrees of subtlety to go beyond him.

To conclude: Some plead that dissembling is lawful in state-craft, upon the presupposition that men must meet with others who dissemble. Yea, they hold, that thus to counterfeit, *se defendendo* against a crafty cor-rival, is no sin, but a just punishment on our adversary, who first began it. And therefore statesmen sometimes must use crooked shoes, to fit hurled feet.\* Besides, the honest politician would quickly be beggared, if, receiving black money from cheaters, he pays them in good silver, and not in their own coin back again. For my part, I confess that herein I rather see *what* than *whither* to fly: neither able to answer their arguments, nor willing to allow their practice. But what shall I say? They need to have steady heads who can dive into these gulfs of policy, and come out with a safe conscience. I will look no longer on those whirlpools of state, lest my pen turn giddy.

\* By *hurled feet* is generally understood "mis-shapen and twisted feet," from the ancient meaning of the word, "turned about;" of which the old English word, *hurtled*, "wheeled round," and the provincial term, *herpled feet*, "feet with which a man is forced to waddle like a duck," are, if not cognates, varieties. But *hurled* seems to be here applied by Fuller to a person that is "club-footed," rather than to one "splay-footed."—EDIT.

## CHAPTER VI.

## THE LIFE OF WILLIAM CECIL, LORD BURLEIGH.

WILLIAM CECIL, born at Bourne in Lincolnshire, descended from the ancient and worshipful family of the Sitsilts or Cecils, of Alterynnis, in Herefordshire, on the confines of Wales; a name which a great antiquary thinks probably derived from the Roman CÆCILII.\* No credit is to be given to their pens who tax him with meanness of birth, and whose malice is so general against all goodness, that it had been a slander if this worthy man had not been slandered by them. The servant is not above his master; and we know what aspersions their malice sought to cast on the queen herself.

He, being first bred in St. John's College in Cambridge, went thence to Gray's Inn, (and used it as an inn indeed, studying there in his passage to the court,) where he attained good learning in the laws. Yet his skill in fencing made him not daring to quarrel, who in all his life-time neither sued any, nor was sued himself.† He was after Master of the Requests (the first that ever bare office) unto the duke of Somerset, Lord-Protector, and was knighted by king Edward VI.

One challengeth him to have been a main contriver of that Act, and unnatural will of king Edward VI., wherein the king, passing by his sisters Mary and Elizabeth, entailed the crown on queen Jane; and that he furnished that Act with reasons of state, as Judge Montague filled it with arguments of law.‡ Indeed, his hand wrote it, as Secretary of State, but his heart consented not thereto; yea, he openly opposed it, though at last yielding to the greatness of Northumberland, in an age wherein it was present drowning, not to swim along with the stream.§ But, as the philosopher tells us, that, though the planets be whirled about daily from east to west by the motion of the *primum mobile*, yet have they also a contrary proper motion of their own, from west to east, which they slowly yet surely move at their leisures:|| so Cecil had secret counter-

\* VERSTEGAN, "Restitution of decayed Intelligence," p. 312.

+ CAM-

DEN'S "Elizabeth," in *anno* 1598.

‡ SIR JOHN HAYWARD, in his

"Edward VI.," p. 417.

§ CAMDEN *ut prius.*

|| ARISTOTELES

*De Caelo*, lib. ii. cap. 4, 10.

endeavours against the strain of the court herein, and privately advanced his rightful intentions against the foresaid duke's ambition ; and we see that afterward queen Mary not only pardoned but employed him ; so that, towards the end of her reign, he stood in some twilight of her favour.

As for sir Edward Montague, Lord Chief Justice, what he did was by command against his own will ; as appears by his written protestation at his death, still in the hands of his honourable posterity. But whilst in this army of offenders, the nobility in the front made an escape for themselves, queen Mary's displeasure overtook the old Judge in the rear, the good old man being not able with such speed to provide for himself ; yea, though he had done nothing but by general consent and command, the rest of the lords laid load on him, desirous that the queen's anger should send him on an errand to the prison, and thence to the scaffold, to excuse themselves from going on the same message. However, after some imprisonment, he was pardoned : a sufficient argument, that the queen conceived him to concur passively in that action.

In queen Elizabeth's days he was made Secretary of State, Master of the Wards, Lord Treasurer, and at last, after long service, baron of Burleigh. For the queen honoured her honours, in conferring them sparingly ; thereby making titles more substantial, wherewith she paid many for their service. The best demonstration of his care in stewarding her treasure was this, that the queen, vying gold and silver with the king of Spain, had money or credit, when the other had neither ; her exchequer, though but a pond in comparison, holding water, when his river, fed with a spring from the Indies, was drained dry.

In that grand faction betwixt Leicester and Sussex, he meddled not openly, though it is easy to tell whom he wished the best to. Indeed, this cunning wrestler would never catch hold to grapple openly with Leicester, as having somewhat the disadvantage of him both in height and strength ; but, as they ran to their several goals, if they chanced to meet, Burleigh would fairly give him a trip, and be gone ; and the earl had many a rub laid in his way, yet never saw who put it there.

It is true, the sword-men accused him as too cold in the queen's credit, and backward in fighting against foreign enemies. Indeed, he would never engage the State in a war, except necessity or her Majesty's honour sounded the alarm. But no reason he should be counted an enemy to the sparks of

valour, who was so careful to provide them fuel, and pay the soldier. Otherwise, in vain do the brows frown, the eyes sparkle, the tongue threaten, the fist bend, and the arm strike, except the belly be fed.

The queen reflected her favour highly upon him, counting him both her Treasurer, and her principal Treasure. She would cause him always to sit down in her presence, because troubled with the gout; and used to tell him: "My Lord, we make much of you, not for your bad legs, but for your good head." This caused him to be much envied of some great ones at court; and at one time no fewer than the marquess of Winchester, duke of Norfolk, earls of Arundel, Northumberland, Westmoreland, Pembroke, and Leicester, combining against him, taking advantage about his making-over some moneys beyond sea to the French Protestants, and on some other occasions; \* sir Nicholas Throgmorton advised them first to clap him up in prison, saying, that if he were once shut up, men would open their mouths to speak freely against him. But the queen, understanding hereof, and standing, as I may say, in the very prison-door, quashed all their designs, and freed him from the mischief projected against him.

He was a good friend to the church, as then established by law;—he used to advise his eldest son Thomas never to bestow any great cost, or to build any great house, on an impropriation, as fearing the foundation might fail hereafter;—a patron to both Universities, chiefly to Cambridge, whereof he was Chancellor; and though rent-corn first grew in the head of sir Thomas Smith, it was ripened by Burleigh's assistance; whereby, though the rents of Colleges stand still, their revenues increase.

No man was more pleasant and merry at meals; and he had a pretty wit-rack in himself, to make the dumb to speak, to draw speech out of the most sullen and silent guest at his table, to show his disposition in any point he should propound.† For foreign intelligence, though he traded sometimes on the stock of Secretary Walsingham, yet wanted he not a plentiful bank of his own. At night when he put off his gown, he used to say, "Lie there, Lord Treasurer!" and, bidding adieu to all state-affairs, disposed himself to his quiet rest.

Some, looking on the estate he left, have wondered that it

\* CAMDEN's "Elizabeth," anno 1579.

† HOTTOMAN, in his "Description of the Ambassador," witnesseth so much, who had been at his table.

was so great ; and afterwards wondered more, that it was so little, having considered what offices he had, and how long he enjoyed them. His harvest lasted every day for above thirty years together, wherein he allowed some of his servants the same courtesy Boaz granted to Ruth,—to glean even among the sheaves, and to suffer some handfuls also to fall on purpose for them, whereby they raised great estates.

To draw to a conclusion : There arose a great question in State, whether war with Spain should be continued, or a peace drawn up. The sword- and gown-men brought weighty arguments on both sides, stamping also upon them with their private interests, to make them more heavy. Burleigh was all against war ; now old, being desirous to depart in peace,—both private in his conscience, and public in the State. But his life was determined before the question was fully decided. In his sickness the queen often visited him,—a good plaster to assuage his pain, but unable to prolong his life ; so that, *Cum satis naturæ, satisque gloriæ, patriæ autem non satis vixisset,\** in the seventy-seventh year of his age, *anno* 1598, he exchanged this life for a better. God measured his outward happiness not by an ordinary standard. How many great undertakers in State set in a cloud ! whereas he shined to the last. Herein MUCH is to be ascribed to *the queen's constancy*, who, to confute the observation of feminine fickleness, where her favour did light it did lodge :—MORE to *his own temper and moderation* ; whereas violent and boisterous meddlers in State cripple themselves with aches in their age :—MOST to *God's goodness*, who honoureth them that honour Him. He saw Thomas, his eldest son, richly married to an honourable co-heir ; Robert, able to stand alone in court, having a competent portion of favour, which he knew thrifitly to improve, being a pregnant proficient in State-discipline.

\* “When he had attained to such an age as sufficed for the gratification of nature, for the acquisition of glory, but (alas !) not for the further benefit of his country,” he died.—EDIT.

## CHAPTER VII.

## THE GOOD JUDGE.

THE good advocate, whom we formerly described,\* is since, by his prince's favour and own deserts, advanced to be a Judge; which his place he freely obtained, with sir Augustine Nicolls, whom king James used to call "the Judge that would give no money." † Otherwise, they that buy justice by wholesale, to make themselves savers, must sell it by retail.

## MAXIM I.

*He is patient and attentive in hearing the pleadings on both sides.*—And hearkens to the witnesses, though tedious. He may give a waking testimony, who hath but a dreaming utterance; and many country people must be impertinent, before they can be pertinent, and cannot give evidence about a hen, but first they must begin with it in the egg. All which our Judge is contented to hearken to.

## II.

*He meets not a testimony half-way, but stays till it come at him.*—He that proceeds on half-evidence, will not do quarter-justice. Our Judge will not go till he is led. If any shall browbeat a pregnant witness, on purpose to make his proof miscarry, he checketh them, and helps the witness, that labours in his delivery. On the other side, he nips those lawyers, who, under pretence of kindness to lend a witness some words, give him new matter, yea, clean contrary to what he intended.

## III.

*Having heard with patience, he gives sentence with uprightness.*—For when he put on his robes, he put off his relations to any; and, like Melchisedec, becomes without pedigree. His private affections are swallowed up in the common cause, as rivers lose

\* Lib. ii. cap. 1. pp. 49—51.

† BOLTON, in his Funeral Notes on him.

their names in the ocean. He therefore allows no noted favourites; which cannot but cause multiplication of fees, and suspicion of by-ways.

## IV.

*He silences that lawyer who seeks to set the neck of a bad cause, once broken with a definitive sentence.—And causeth that contentious suits be spewed out, as the surfeits of courts.*

## V.

*He so hates bribes, that he is jealous to receive any kindness above the ordinary proportion of friendship.—Lest, like the sermons of wandering preachers, they should end in begging. And, surely, integrity is the proper portion of a Judge. Men have a touchstone whereby to try gold, but gold is the touchstone whereby to try men. It was a shrewd gird which Catulus gave the Roman Judges for acquitting Clodius, a great malefactor, when he met them going home well attended with officers: "You do well," quoth he, "to be well guarded for your safety, lest the money be taken away from you [which] you took for bribes."\* Our Judge also detesteth the trick of Mendicant Friars, who will touch no money themselves, but have a boy with a bag to receive it for them.*

## VI.

*When he sits upon life, in judgment, he remembereth mercy.—Then, they say, a but chermay not be of the jury; much less let him be the Judge. O! let him take heed how he strikes that hath a dead hand. It was the charge queen Mary gave to Judge Morgan, Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, that, notwithstanding the old error amongst Judges did not admit any witness to speak, or any other matter to be heard in favour of the adversary, her Majesty being party; yet her Highness's pleasure was, that whatsoever could be brought in the favour of the subject should be admitted and heard.†*

## VII.

*If the cause be difficult, his diligence is the greater to sift it out.—For though there be mention of "righteousness as clear as the noon-day," (Psalm xxxvii. 6;) yet God forbid that that*

\* PLUTARCH, in the Life of Cicero, p. 872.  
Mary, p. 1112.

† HOLLINSHEAD, in Queen

innocency which is no clearer than twilight should be condemned ! And, seeing one's oath commands another's life, he searcheth whether malice did not command that oath : yet, when all is done, the Judge may be deceived by false evidence. But blame not the hand of the dial, if it points at a false hour, when the fault is in the wheels of the clock which direct it, and are out of frame.

## VIII.

*The sentence of condemnation he pronounceth with all gravity.*  
—It is best when steeped in the Judge's tears. He avoideth all jesting on men in misery : easily may he put them out of countenance, whom he hath power to put out of life.

## IX.

*Such as are unworthy to live, and yet unfitted to die, he provides shall be instructed.*—By God's mercy, and good teaching, the reprieve of their bodies may get the pardon of their souls ; and one day's longer life for them here, may procure a blessed eternity for them hereafter, as may appear by this memorable example :—It happened, about the year one thousand five hundred and fifty-six, in the town of Weissensteine in Germany, that a Jew, for theft he had committed, was in this cruel manner to be executed : he was hanged by the feet, with his head downwards betwixt two dogs, which constantly snatched and bit at him. The strangeness of the torment moved Jacobus Andreas (a grave, moderate, and learned divine as any in that age) to go to behold it. Coming thither, he found the poor wretch, as he hung, repeating verses out of the Hebrew Psalms, wherein he cried out to God for mercy. Andreas hereupon took occasion to counsel him to trust in Jesus Christ, the true Saviour of mankind. The Jew, embracing the Christian faith, requested but this one thing,—that he might be taken down and be baptized, though presently after he were hanged again, but by the neck, as Christian malefactors suffered ; which was accordingly granted him.\*

## X.

*He is exact to do justice in civil suits betwixt sovereign and subject.*—This will most ingratiate him with his prince at last.

\* MELCHIOR ADAMUS, in *Vitâ Jacobi Andreas*, p. 639.

Kings neither are, can, nor should be lawyers themselves, by reason of higher State-employments; but herein they see with the eyes of their Judges, and at last will break those false spectacles which, in point of law, shall be found to have deceived them.

## xi.

*He counts, the rules of State and the laws of the realm mutually support each other.*—Those who made the laws to be not only desperate, but even opposite terms to maxims of government, were true friends neither to laws nor government. Indeed, *salus reipublica* is *charta maxima*:\* extremity makes the next the best remedy. Yet, though hot waters be good to be given to one in a swoon, they will burn his heart out who drinks them constantly when in health. Extraordinary courses are not ordinarily to be used, when not enforced by absolute necessity.

And thus we leave our good Judge to receive a just reward of his integrity from the Judge of judges, at the great assize of the world.

\* “The safety of the commonwealth is not merely our *Magna Charta*, but our *Marine Charta*.”—EDIT.

## CHAPTER VIII.

## THE LIFE OF SIR JOHN MARKHAM.

JOHN MARKHAM was born at Markham in Nottinghamshire, descended of an ancient and worthy family. He employed his youth in the studying of the municipal law of this realm, wherein he attained to such eminency that king Edward IV. knighted him, and made him Lord Chief Justice of the King's Bench, in the place of sir John Fortescue, that learned and upright Judge who fled away with king Henry VI.\*

Yet Fortescue was not missed, because Markham succeeded him; and that loss, which otherwise could not be repaired, now could not be perceived. For though these two Judges did severally lean to the sides of Lancaster and York, yet both sat upright in matters of judicature.

We will instance and insist on one memorable act of our Judge, which, though single in itself, was plural in the concerns thereof. And let the reader know, that I have not been careless to search, though unhappy not to find, the original record, perchance abolished on purpose, and silenced for telling tales to the disgrace of great ones. We must now be contented to write this story out of the English chronicles; † and let him die of drought without pity, who will not quench his thirst at the river, because he cannot come at the fountain.

King Edward IV., having married into the family of the Woodvilles, (gentlemen of more antiquity than wealth, and of higher spirits than fortunes,) thought it fit, for his own honour, to bestow honour upon them. But he could not so easily provide them of wealth, as titles. For, honour he could derive from himself, like light from a candle, without any diminishing of his own lustre; whereas wealth flowing from him, as water from a fountain, made the spring the shallower. Wherefore, he resolved to cut down some prime subjects, and to engraft the queen's kindred into their estates, who otherwise, like suckers, must feed on the stock of his own exchequer.

\* 13 Maii, 1 Edwardi IV. † FABIAN, p. 497, &c.; HOLLINSHED, p. 670; and SROW, in 12 of Edward IV.

There was, at this time, one sir Thomas Cook, late Lord Mayor of London, and Knight of the Bath, one who had well licked his fingers under queen Margaret, (whose wardrobe he was, and customer\* of Hampton,) a man of a great estate. It was agreed that he should be accused of high treason, and a Commission of Oyer and Terminer granted forth to the Lord Mayor, the duke of Clarence, the earl of Warwick, the lord Rivers, sir John Markham, sir John Fogg, &c., to try him in Guild-Hall: and the king, by private instructions to the Judge, appeared so far, that Cook, though he was not—must be found—guilty; and if the law were too short, the Judge must stretch it to the purpose.

The fault laid to his charge was for lending moneys to queen Margaret, wife to king Henry VI.; the proof was the confession of one Hawkins, who, being racked in the Tower, had confessed so much. The Counsel for the king, hanging as much weight on the smallest wire as it would hold, aggravated each particular, and, by their rhetorical flashes, blew the fault up to a great height. Sir Thomas Cook pleaded for himself, that Hawkins indeed, upon a season, came to him, and requested him to lend one thousand marks, upon good security. But he desired, first, to know for whom the money should be: and, understanding it was for queen Margaret, denied to lend any money, though at last the said Hawkins descended so low, as to require but one hundred pounds, and departed without any penny lent him.

Judge Markham, in a grave speech, did recapitulate, select, and collate the material points on either side; showing that the proof reached not the charge of high treason, and misprision of treason was the highest it could amount to: and intimated to the jury, to be tender in matter of life, and discharge good consciences.

The jury, being wise men, (whose apprehensions could make up a whole sentence of every nod of the Judge,) saw it behoved them to draw up treason into as narrow a compass as might be, lest it became their own case; for they lived in a troublesome world, wherein the cards were so shuffled that two kings were turned up trump at once, which amazed men how to play their games. Whereupon they acquitted the prisoner of high treason, and found him guilty as the Judge directed.

Yet it cost sir Thomas Cook, before he could get his liberty,

\* "A toll-gatherer, a collector of customs."—EDIT.

eight hundred pounds to the queen, and eight thousand pounds to the king: a sum, in that age, more sounding like the ransom of a prince, than the fine of a subject. Besides, the lord Rivers (the queen's father) had, during his imprisonment, despoiled his houses, one in the city, another in the country, of plate and furniture, for which he never received a penny recompense. Yet God righted him of the wrongs men did him, by blessing the remnant of his estate to him and his posterity, who still flourish at Giddy-Hall in Essex,

As for sir John Markham, the king's displeasure fell so heavy on him, that he was outed of his place, and sir Thomas Billing put in his room; though the one lost that office with more honour than the other got it, and gloried in this,—that though the king could make him *no Judge*, he could not make him *no upright Judge*. He lived privately the rest of his days, having (beside the estate got by his practice) fair lands, by Margaret his wife, daughter and co-heir to sir Simon Leak, of Cotham in Nottinghamshire, whose mother Joan was daughter and heir of sir John Talbot, of Swannington in Leicestershire.\*

\* BURTON'S "Leicestershire," p. 577.

## CHAPTER IX.

## THE GOOD BISHOP.

He is an overseer of a flock of shepherds, as a minister is of a flock of God's sheep. Divine Providence and his prince's bounty advanced him to the place, whereof he was no whit ambitious: only he counts it good manners to sit there where God hath placed him, though it be higher than he conceives himself to deserve, and hopes that He who called him to the office hath or will in some measure fit him for it.

## MAXIM I.

*His life is so spotless that malice is angry with him, because she cannot be angry with him.*—Because she can find no just cause to accuse him. And as Diogenes confuted him who denied there was any motion, by saying nothing, but walking before his eyes;\* so our bishop takes no notice of the false accusations of people disaffected against his order, but “walks on circumspectly” in his calling, really refelling their cavils in his conversation. A bishop's bare presence at a marriage in his own diocess, is, by the law, interpreted for a license; and what actions soever he graceth with his company, he is conceived to privilege them to be lawful: which makes him to be more wary in his behaviour.

## II.

*With his honour, his holiness and humility doth increase.*—His great place makes not his piety the less: far be it from him, that the glittering of the candlestick should dim the shining of his candle. The meanest minister of God's word may have free access unto him: whosoever brings a good cause brings his own welcome with him. The pious poor may enter in at his wide gates, when not so much as his wicket shall be open to wealthy unworthiness.

## III.

*He is diligent and faithful in preaching the Gospel.*—Either by his pen: *Evangelizo manu et scriptione,\** saith a strict divine; † or by his vocal sermons, (if age and other indispensable occasions hinder him not,) teaching the clergy to preach, and the laity to live, according to the ancient canons.‡ Object not, “that it is unfitting he should lie perdue,§ who is to walk the round; and that governing, as a higher employment, is to silence his preaching.” For preaching is a principal part of governing, and Christ himself ruleth his church by his word. Hereby bishops shall govern hearts, and make men yield unto them a true and willing obedience, reverencing God in them. Many in consumptions have recovered their healths by returning to their native air, wherein they were born. If episcopacy be in any declination or diminution of honour, the going back to the painfulness of the primitive Fathers in preaching, is the only way to repair it.

## IV.

*Painful, pious, and peaceable ministers are his principal favourites.*—If he meets them in his way, (yea, he will make it his way to meet them,) he bestoweth all grace and lustre upon them.

## V.

*He is careful that church-censures be justly and solemnly inflicted, namely,—*

1. *Admonition*: when the church only chideth, but with the rod in her hand.

2. *Excommunication*: the mittimus whereby the malefactor is sent to the gaoler of hell, and “delivered to Satan.”

3. *Aggravation*: whereby, for his greater contempt, he is removed out of the gaol into the dungeon.

4. *Penance*: which is or should be inward repentance, made visible by open confession, whereby the congregation is satisfied for the public offence given her.

5. *Absolution*: which fetcheth the penitent out of hell, and

\* “I am performing the duty of an evangelist with my hand while I am writing.”—*EDIT.* † *REINOLDUS, De Idol. Rom. Eccl. Epist. Dedicat.* ‡ *Concil. Toletan.* 2, cap. ii, tom. iv. p. 810; *Concil. Constant.* 6, can. xix. tom. v. p. 328; *Concil. Aurel.* can. xxxiii. p. 723; and lately, *Concil. Trident. Sess.* 24, can. iv. § According to *PHILLIPS* and *KERSEY*, “*To lie perdue, to lie flat upon one's belly.*” In this sense it is also used for *lying in ambush*.—*EDIT.*

opens the door of heaven for him, which *excommunication* had formerly locked, and *aggravation* bolted, against him.

As much as lies in his power, he either prevents or corrects those too frequent abuses, whereby offenders are not “pricked to the heart,” (Acts ii. 37,) but let blood in the purse; and when the court hath her costs, the church hath no damage given her, nor any reparation for the open scandal she received by the party’s offence. Let the memory of worthy bishop Lake ever survive, whose hand had the true seasoning of a sermon with law and Gospel, and who was most fatherly grave in inflicting church-censures. Such offenders as were unhappy in deserving—were happy in doing—penance in his presence.

## VI.

*He is careful and happy in suppressing of heresies and schisms.*

—He distinguisheth of schismatics, as physicians do of leprous people: some are infectious, others not; \* some are active to seduce others, others quietly enjoy their opinions in their own consciences. The latter by his mildness he easily reduceth to the truth; whereas the surgeon’s rigorously handling it often breaks that bone quite off which formerly was but out of joint. Towards the former he useth more severity, yet endeavouring first to inform him aright before he punisheth him. To use force first, before people are fairly taught the truth, is to knock a nail into a board, without wimbling a hole for it, which then either not enters, or turns crooked, or splits the wood it pierceth.

## VII.

*He is very merciful in punishing offenders.*—Both in matter of life and livelihood, seeing, in St. John’s language, the same word  $\beta\acute{\iota}\sigma$ , signifies both. (1 John iii. 17.) He had rather draw tears than blood. It was the honour of the Roman State, as yet being Pagan, † *In hoc gloriari licet, nulli gentium mitiores placuisse paenas*: ‡ yea, for the first seventy years, (till the reign of Ancus Martius,) they were without a prison. Clemency, therefore, in a Christian bishop is more proper. O let not the “stars of our church” be herein turned to comets; whose appearing in place of judicature presageth to some death or

\* The leprosy Elephantiasis [is] not infectious to the company. † **LIVIUS**, lib. i. p. 20. ‡ “In this she may be allowed to glory,—that no other nation ever imposed such easy terms, or inflicted such mild punishments, on the conquered.”—**EDIT.**

destruction. I confess, that even justice itself is a kind of mercy. But God grant, that my portion of mercy be not paid me in that coin ! And though the highest detestation of sin best agreeth with clergymen, yet ought they to cast a severe eye on the vice and example, and a merciful eye on the person.

## VIII.

*None more forward to forgive a wrong done to himself.—* Worthy archbishop Whitgift interceded to queen Elizabeth for remitting of heavy fines laid on some of his adversaries, (learning from Christ his Master to be a mediator for them,) till his importunity had angered the queen ; yea, and till his importunity had pleased her again ; and gave not over till he got them to be forgiven.\*

## IX.

*He is very careful on whom he layeth hands in ordination.—* Lest afterwards he hath just cause to beshrew his fingers, and, with Martianus, a bishop of Constantinople, (who made Sabba-tius, a Jew and a turbulent man, priest,) wish he had then rather laid his hands on the briars, than such a man's head.† For the sufficiency of scholarship, he goeth by his own eye ; but, for their honest life, he is guided by other men's hands, which would not so oft deceive him were testimonials a matter of less courtesy and more conscience. For, whosoever subscribes them enters into bond to God and the church, under a heavy forfeiture, to avouch the honesty of the party commended ; and, as Judah for Benjamin, they become “sureties for the young man unto his father.” Nor let them think to avoid the bond, and make it but a blank with that clause, “So far forth as we know,” or words to the like effect : for what saith the apostle ? “God is not mocked.”

## X.

*He meddleth as little as may be with temporal matters.—* Having little skill in them, and less will to them. Not that he is unworthy to manage them, but they unworthy to be managed by him. Yea, generally, the most dexterous in spiritual matters are left-handed in temporal businesses, and go but untowardly about them. Wherefore, our bishop, with reverend Andrews, “meddleth little in civil affairs, being out of his profession and element.” † Heaven is his *vocation*, and therefore he counts

\* CAMDEN'S “Elizabeth,” in anno 1588, p. 538  
Hist., lib. v. cap. 20.

† SOCRATES, *Eccles.*  
“Funeral Sermon” on him, p. 19.

earthly employments *avocations*; except in such cases which lie, as I may say, in the Marches of Divinity, and have connexion with his calling; or else, when temporal matters meddle with him, so that he must rid them out of his way. Yet, he rather admireth than condemneth such of his brethren, who are strengthened with that which would distract him, making the concurrence of spiritual and temporal power in them support one another, and using worldly business as their recreation to heavenly employment.

## xi.

*If called to the court, he there doth all good offices.*—Betwixt prince and people, striving to remove all misprisions and disaffections, and advancing unity and concord. They that think the church may flourish when the commonwealth doth wither, may as well conceive that the brains may be sound when *pia mater* is perished. When, in the way of the confessor, he privately tells his prince of his faults, he knows, by Nathan's parable, to go the nearest way home by going far about.

## xii.

*He improves his power with his prince for the church's good.*—In maintaining both true religion and the maintenance thereof; lest some pretending, with pious Hezekiah, to beat down the brasen serpent, the occasion of idolatry, do, indeed, with sacrilegious Ahaz, take away the brasen bulls from the laver, and set it on a pavement of stone. He jointly advanceth the pains and gains, the work and wages, of ministers, which going together make a flourishing clergy, with God's blessing, and without man's envy.

## xiii.

*His mortified mind is no whit moved with the magnificent vanities of the court.*—No more than a dead corpse is affected with a velvet hearse-cloth over it. He is so far from wondering at their pomps, that, though he looks daily on them, he scarce sees them, having his eyes taken up with higher objects; and only admires at such as can admire such low matters. He is loved and feared of all; and his presence frights the swearer either out of his oaths or into silence, and he stains all other men's eyes with the clearness of his own.

## xiv.

*Yet he daily prayeth God to keep him in so slippery a place.*—Elisha prayed, that a double portion of Elijah's spirit might

rest upon him. A Father descanteth hereon, “that a double portion of grace was necessary for Elisha, who was gracious at court, lived in a plentiful way, and favoured of the kings of Israel; whereas Elijah lived poorly and privately: and more wisdom is requisite to manage prosperity than affliction.”

## XV.

*In his grave writings, he aims at God's glory, and the church's peace.*—With that worthy prelate, the second JEWEL\* of Salisbury, whose comments and controversies will transmit his memory to all posterity:—

“ Whose dying pen did write of Christian union,  
How church with church might safely keep communion.  
Commend his care, although the cure do miss :  
The woe is ours, the happiness is his !  
Who, finding discords daily to increase,  
Because he could not live, would die, in peace.”

## XVI.

*He ever makes honourable mention of foreign Protestant churches.*—Even when he differs and dissents from them. The worst he wisheth the French church, is a Protestant king; not giving the left hand of fellowship to them, and reserving his right for some other. Cannot Christ's coat be of different colours, but also it must be of several seams? railing one on another, till these sisters, by bastardizing one another, make the Popish church the sole heir to all truth! How often did reverend Whitgift (knowing he had the far better cheer) send a mess of meat from his own table to the ministers of Geneva? relieving many of them by bountiful contributions.† Indeed, English charity to foreign Protestant churches, in some respect, is payment of a debt: *their* children deserve to be our welcome guests whose grandfathers were our loving hosts in the days of queen Mary.

## XVII.

*He is thankful to that College whence he had his education.*—He conceived himself to hear his mother-College always speaking to him in the language of Joseph to Pharaoh's butler: “ But think on me, I pray thee, when it shall be well with thee.”

\* Fuller here refers to his maternal uncle, the famous Dr. John Davenant, who was advanced to the see of Salisbury in 1621, and may be justly styled the second gem of that bishopric in which Jewel had been his (not immediate) predecessor.—EDIT.

† SIR GEORGE PAUL, in his Life, pp. 63, 64.

(Gen. xi. 14.) If he himself hath but little, the less from him is the more acceptable: a drop from a sponge is as much as a tun of water from a marsh. He bestows on it books, or plate, or lands, or building; and the houses of the prophets rather lack watering than planting, there being enough of them, if they had enough.

## XVIII.

*He is hospitable in his house-keeping according to his estate.*—His bounty is with discretion to those that deserve it. Charity mistaken, which relieves idle people, like a dead corpse, only feeds the vermin it breeds. The rankness of his house-keeping produceth no riot in his family. St. Paul calls a Christian family well ordered, “a church in their house.” (Rom. vi. 5.)\* If a private man’s house be a parochial—a bishop’s may seem a cathedral—church, as much better as bigger, so decently all things therein are disposed.

We come now to give a double example of a godly bishop: the first out of the primitive times, the second out of the English church since the Reformation, both excellent in their several ways.

• *THEOPHYLACT, in locum.*

## CHAPTER X.

## THE LIFE OF ST. AUGUSTINE.

AUGUSTINE was born in the city of Tagasta in Africa, of genteel parentage, Patricius and Monica, though their means bore not proportion to their birth; so that the breeding of their son at learning much weakened their estate, in so much as Romanian, a noble gentleman, (all the world is bound to be thankful to St. Augustine's benefactor!) bountifully advanced his education.

It will be needless to speak of his youth, vicious in manners and erroneous in doctrine, especially seeing he hath so largely accused himself in his "Confessions." It is tyranny to trample on him that prostrates himself; and whose sins God hath graciously forgotten, let no man despitefully remember.

Being made a presbyter in the church of Hippo, this great favour was allowed him,—to preach constantly, though in the presence of Valerius the bishop; \* whereas in that age to hear a priest preach when that a bishop was in the church, was a great wonder, as the moon shining at mid-day. Yea, godly Valerius, one that could *do* better than he could *speak*, and had a better heart than tongue, (being a Grecian, and therefore not well understood of the Africans,) procured Augustine in his life-time to be designed bishop of Hippo, and to be joined fellow-bishop with himself, though it was flatly against the canons.†

For, a co-adjutor commonly proves a hinderer, and, by his envious clashing, doth often dig his partner's grave with whom he is joined; beside that such a super-installation seems an unlawful bigamy, marrying two husbands at the same time to the same church. Yea, St. Augustine himself, afterwards understanding that this was against the constitutions of the church, was sorry thereat, (though others thought his eminency above canons, and his deserts his dispensation,) and, desiring that his ignorance herein should not misguide others, obtained that the canons (then not so hard to be kept as known, because obscure and scattered) were compiled together and published, that the clergy might know what they were bound to observe.

\* POSSIDONIUS, *in Vitâ Augustini*, cap. v.

† *Idem*, cap. viii.

Being afterwards sole bishop, he was diligent in continual preaching and beating down of heretics; especially the Manicheans, in whose fence-school he was formerly brought up, and therefore knew best how to hit them, and guard himself; also the Pelagians, the duellists against grace, and for free-will, which till St. Augustine's time was never thoroughly sifted, points in divinity being slenderly fenced till they are assaulted by heretics. He was also the hammer of the Donatists,—heretics who did scatter more than they did devour, and their schism was more dangerous than their doctrine.\*

He went not so willingly to a feast as to a conference, to reduce any erroneous persons. Once he disputed with Pascentius the Arian, who requested that what passed betwixt them might not be written; and afterwards gave out his brags, that he worsted Augustine in the dispute, which report was believed of all who desired it.†

In other battles, if the conquered side should be so impudent as to boast of the victory, it will ere long be confuted by the number of their men slain, ensigns and wagons taken, with their flight out of the field. It is not thus in the tongue-combats of disputes, wherein no visible wounds are given, and wherein bold men, though inwardly convinced with force of reason, count not themselves conquered till they confess it; so that, in effect, none can be overcome except they will themselves. For, some are so shameless that they count not their cause wrecked as long as any thing alive comes to the land; so long as they have breath to talk, though not to answer, and employ their hands not to untie their adversaries' arguments, but only obstinately to lay hold on their own opinions; yea, after the conference ended, they cry *Victoria!* in all companies wherein they come, whilst their auditors, generally as engaged as the disputants, will succour their champion with partial relations, as the Arians did in this case of Pascentius.

But their false cavils have done the church this true courtesy, that, ever after, St. Augustine set down his disputation in writing, that so the eye of the reader might more steadily behold his arguments presented fixed in black and white, than when they were only *in fluxu*, as “passing in his words.”

His clothes were neither brave nor base, but comely.‡ As for the black cowl of the Augustinians, which they pretend

\* See their tenets at large in our fifth book, (“The Profane State,” chap. xi.)  
† AUGUSTINI *Opera*, tom. ii. epist. 174. ‡ *Vestis nec nitida nimisum,*  
*neq; abjecta plurimum*.—POSSIDONIUS, cap. 22.

from his practice, it seemeth rather (if so ancient) to be cut with the sheers, or by the pattern, of Augustine the Monk. He would not receive gifts to the church, from those who had poor kindred of their own. Divinity saith, that mercy is better than sacrifice; and the law provides, that debts are to be paid before legacies.

In case of great want, he would sell the very ornaments of the church, and bestow the money on the poor; contrary to the opinion of many, (the thorn of superstition began very soon to prick!) who would not have such things in any case to be alienated.\* Sure, a communion-table will not catch cold with wanting a rich carpet, nor stumble for lack of the candles thereon in silver candlesticks. Besides, the church might afterwards be seasonably replenished with new furniture; whereas, if the poor were once starved, they could not be revived again. But let not sacrilege in the disguise of charity make advantage hereof, and covetousness, which is ever hungry till it surfeits, make a constant ordinary on church-bread, because David in necessity fed one meal thereon.

His diet was very cleanly and sparing; yet [he was] hospitable in the entertaining of others, and had this distich wrote on his table:—

*Quisquis amat dictis absentum rodere famam,  
Hanc mensam indignam noverit esse sibi.*

“He that doth love on absent friends to jeer,  
May hence depart; no room is for him here.”

His family was excellently well-ordered; and ten of those scholars who were brought up under him, came afterwards to be bishops.

To come to his death: It happened that the northern countries, called by some *vagina gentium*,† “the sheath of people,” (though more properly they may be termed, *ensis Dei*, “the sword of God,”) sent forth the Vandals, Albans, and Goths, into the southern parts; God suffering the pride of the Roman empire to be confounded by barbarous enemies. Out of Spain they came into Africa, and massacred all before them. The neighbouring villages, like little children, did fly to Hippo, the mother-city, for succour. Thirteen months was Hippo

\* *De vasis Dominicis, propter captivos quamplurimos indigentes, frangi et conflari jubebat, et indigentibus dispensari: quod non commemorasset, nisi contra carnalem sensum quorundam fieri pviderem.*—POSSIDONIUS, in *Vita Augustini*, cap. xxiv.      † *METHODIUS MARTYR, et PAULUS DIACONUS.*

besieged by the Goths; and St. Augustine, being therein, prayed to God either to remove the siege, or to give the Christians therein patience to suffer, or to take him out of this miserable world; which he obtained, and died in the third month of the siege.

Falling very sick, (beside the disease of age and grief,) he lay languishing a pretty time, and took order that none should come to him, save when his meat was brought, or physicians visited him, that so he might have elbow-room the more freely to put off the clothes of his mortality.

The motion of piety in him (by custom now made natural) was *velocior in fine*,\* daily breathing out most pious ejaculations. He died intestate, not for lack of time to make a will, but means to bestow; having formerly passed his soul to God, whilst his body of course bequeathed itself to the earth. As for the books of his own making, a treasure beyond estimation, he carefully consigned them to several libraries. He died in the seventy-sixth year of his age, having lived a bishop almost forty years. Thus a saint of God, like an oak, may be cut down in a moment: but how many years was he a growing? Not long after his death, the city of Hippo was sacked by the Goths; it being no wonder if Troy was taken, when the Palladium was first fetched away from it.

\* "Was the more rapid towards the close of life."—EDIT.

## CHAPTER XI.

## THE LIFE OF BISHOP RIDLEY.

NICHOLAS RIDLEY, born in the bishopric of Durham, but descended from the ancient and worshipful family of the Ridleys of Willimotes-wike in Northumberland. He was brought up in Pembroke-Hall in Cambridge, where he so profited in general learning, that he was chosen Fellow of the College, and, *anno* 1533, was Proctor of the University.

At which time two Oxford-men, George Throgmorton and John Ashwell, came to Cambridge, and, in the public schools, challenged any to dispute with him on these questions:—*An jus civile sit medicinā præstantius?* *An mulier condemnata, bis ruptis laqueis, sit tertio suspendendā?* \*

It seems they were men of more brow than brain, being so ambitious to be known, that they had rather be hissed down, than not come upon the stage. Sure, Oxford afforded as many more able disputants, as Civil Law yielded more profound and needful questions. Throgmorton had the fortune of daring men,—to be worsted; being so pressed by John Redman and Nicholas Ridley, the opponents, that his second refused at all to dispute.†

Indeed, an University is an only fit match for an University; and any private man who, in this nature, undertakes a whole body, being of necessity put to the worst, deserves not Phaeton's epitaph, MAGNIS, but STULTIS *tamen excidit ausis.*‡ And though one § objects, *Neminem Cantabrigiensem constat Oxonienses unquam ad certamen provocasse;* || yet less learning cannot be inferred from more modesty. The best is, the two sisters so well agree together, that they only contend to surpass each other in mutual kindness; and, forbidding all duels betwixt

\* “Whether is the Civil Law or Medicine the superior and more genteel profession?—When a woman, condemned as a malefactor, has been twice hung by the neck, and the rope has twice broken, ought she to be a third time suspended?”—*EDIT.* + *CAIUS, De Antiquit. Cantabrig. Acad.*, pp. 19, 20. ‡ “He failed in his foolish daring, and fell from his giddy elevation.”—*EDIT.* § *BRIAN TWYNE, p. 336.* || “It is acknowledged, that no member of the University of Cambridge ever challenged any of the Oxonians to a public scholastic contest.”—*EDIT.*

their children, make up their joint forces against the common foe of them and true religion.

He was after chosen Master of Pembroke-Hall, and kept the same whilst bishop of Rochester and London, till outed in the first of queen Mary. Not that he was covetous to hold his place in the College, but the College ambitious to hold him ; as who would willingly part with a jewel ? He was in good esteem with Henry VIII. ; and in better with pious king Edward VI., and was generally beloved of all the court, being one of a handsome person, comely presence, affable speech, and courteous behaviour.

But before I go further, reader, pardon a digression ; and yet is it none, for it is necessary. I have, within the narrow scantling of my experimental remembrance, observed strange alteration in the world's valuing of those learned men who lived in that age ; and take it plainly, without welt or guard ; for he that smarts for speaking truth, hath a plaster in his own conscience.

When I was a child, I was possessed with a reverend esteem of them, as most holy and pious men, dying Martyrs, in the days of queen Mary, for the profession of the truth ; which opinion having, from my parents, taken quiet possession of my soul, they must be very forcible reasons which eject it.

Since that time, they have been much cried down in the mouths of many, who, making a coroner's inquest upon their death, hath \* found them little better than felons *de se*, dying in their own blood, for a mere formality, *de modo*, " of the manner " of the presence, and a sacrifice in the sacrament ; who might easily, with one small distinction, have knocked off their fetters, and saved their lives. By such the coronet of martyrdom is plucked off from their memories ; and others, more moderate, equally part their death betwixt their enemies' cruelty, and their own over-forwardness.

Since that, one might have expected that these worthy men should have been re-estated in their former honour ; whereas the contrary hath come to pass. For some who have an excellent faculty in uncharitable synecdoches, to condemn a life for an action, and taking advantage of some faults in them, do much condemn them. And one lately hath traduced them with such language, as neither beseemed his parts (whosoever he was) that spake it, nor their piety of whom it was spoken. If pious

\* *Hath*, in their corporate capacity, as " a coroner's inquest." —EDIT.

Latimer, whose bluntness was incapable of flattery, had his simplicity abused with false informations, he is called “another Dr. Shaw, to divulge in his sermon forged accusations.” Cranmer and Ridley, for some failings, styled, “the common stales\* to countenance, with their prostituted gravities, every politic fetch which was then on foot, as often as the potent statists pleased to employ them.” And, as it follows not far after: “Bishop Cranmer, one of king Henry’s executors, and the other bishops, none refusing, (lest they should resist the duke of Northumberland,) could find in their consciences to set their hands to the disenabling and defeating of the princess Mary,” &c.† Where Christian ingenuity ‡ might have prompted unto him to have made an intimation, that Cranmer (with pious Justice Hales in Kent) was last and least guilty, much refusing to subscribe; and his long resisting deserved as well to be mentioned, as his yielding at last. Yea, that very verse, which Dr. Smith, at the burning of Ridley, used against him, is, by the foresaid author, (though not with so full a blow,) with a slanting stroke, applied to those Martyrs: “A man may give his body to be burnt, and yet have not charity.”

Thus the prices of Martyrs’ ashes rise and fall in Smithfield-market. However, their real worth floats not with people’s fancies, no more than a rock in the sea rises and falls with the tide. St. Paul is still St. Paul, though the Lycaonians now would sacrifice to him, and presently after would sacrifice him. These bishops, ministers, and lay-people, who were put to death in queen Mary’s days, were worthy saints of God, holy and godly men, but had their faults, failings, and imperfections. Had they not been men, they had not burnt; yea, had they not been more than men, (by God’s assistance,) they had not burnt. Every true Christian should, but none but strong Christians will, die at the stake.

But, to return to Ridley: One of the greatest things objected against him was, his counsel to king Edward, (which the good prince washed away with his tears,) about tolerating the mass for princess Mary, at the intercession of Charles V., emperor; which how great it was, let the indifferent party give judgment, when the historian hath given his evidence: “The bishops of Canterbury, London, Rochester, gave their opinion, that to give license to sin, was sin; but to connive at sin, might be allowed,

\* Decoys.—EDIT.      † Author of the book lately printed, of “Causes hindering Reformation in England,” lib. i. pp. 10, 11.      ‡ “Ingenuousness.”—EDIT.

in case it were neither too long, nor without hope of reformation.”\*

Another fault, wherewith he was charged, was that woful and unhappy discord betwixt him and reverend bishop Hooper, about the wearing of some episcopal garments at his consecration, then in use; which Ridley pressed, and Hooper refused, with equal violence, as being too many, rather loading than gracing him; and so affectedly grave, that they were light again. All we will say is this: that when worthy men fall out, only one of them may be faulty at the first; but, if such strifes continue long, commonly both become guilty. But thus God’s diamonds often cut one another, and good men cause afflictions to good men.

It was the policy of the Lacedemonians, always to send two ambassadors together, who disagreed amongst themselves, that so mutually they might have an eye on the actions each of other.† Sure I am, that in those ambassadors, the ministers whom God sendeth to men, God suffereth great discords betwixt them, (Paul with Barnabas, Jerome with Ruffin and Augustine, and the like,) perchance because each may be more cautious and wary of his behaviour in the view of the other. We may well behold men’s weakness in such dissensions, but better admire God’s strength and wisdom in ordering them to his glory, and his children’s good. Sure it is, Ridley and Hooper were afterwards cordially reconciled; and let not their discords pierce farther than their reconciliation. The worst is, men’s eyes are never made sound with the clearness—but often are made sore with the blearness—of other men’s eyes in their company. The virtues of saints are not so attractive of our imitation, as their vices and infirmities are prone to infect.

Ridley was very gracious with king Edward VI.;‡ and, by a sermon he preached before him, so wrought upon his pious disposition, whose princely charity rather wanted a director than a persuader, that the king at his motion gave to the city of London,

1. Grey-Friars, now called Christ-Church, for impotent, fatherless, decrepid people by age or nature, to be educated or maintained.
2. St. Bartholomew’s, near Smithfield, for poor by faculty, as

\* HAYWARD’s “Edward VI.,” p. 291.  
lib. ii. cap. 7.

† ARISTOTELIS *Polit.*,  
‡ HAYWARD’s “Edward VI.,” p. 407, *et sequentibus.*

wounded soldiers, diseased and sick persons to be cured and relieved.

3. Bridewell, the ancient mansion of the English kings, for the poor by idleness or unthriftiness, as riotous spenders, vagabonds, loiterers, strumpets, to be corrected and reduced to good order.

I like that emblem of charity, which one hath expressed in “a naked child, giving honey to a bee without wings;” \* only I would have one thing added, namely, “holding a whip in the other hand to drive away the drones:” so that king Edward’s bounty was herein perfect and complete.

To return to Ridley: His whole life was a letter written full of learning and religion, whereof his death was the seal. Brought he was with Cranmer and Latimer to Oxford, to dispute in the days of queen Mary, though, before a syllogism was formed, their deaths were concluded on, and as afterwards came to pass; being burnt the sixteenth of October, *anno* 1555, in the ditch over against Balliol College.

He came to the stake in a fair black gown furred and faced with foins; † a tippet of velvet, furred likewise about his neck; a velvet night-cap upon his head, and a cornered cap upon the same.‡

Dr. Smith preached a sermon at their burning; a sermon which had nothing good in it but the text, (though misapplied,) and the shortness, being not above a quarter of an hour long. Old Hugh Latimer was Ridley’s partner at the stake, some time bishop of Worcester, who crawled thither after him; one who had lost more learning than many ever had, who flout at his plain sermons; though his down-right style was as necessary in that ignorant age, as it would be ridiculous in ours. Indeed, he condescended to people’s capacity; and many men unjustly count those low in learning, who indeed do but stoop to their auditors. Let me see any of our sharp wits do that with the edge—which his bluntness did with the back—of the knife, and persuade so many to restitution of ill-gotten goods. Though he came after Ridley to the stake, he got before him to heaven: his body, made tinder by age, was no sooner touched by the fire, but instantly this old Simeon had his *Nunc dimittis*,§ and

\* FRANCIS QUARLES’s “Enchiridion,” p. 1. † According to PHILLIPS and KERSEY: “*Foins*, a kind of fur, black at the top on a whitish ground, and taken from a little ferret or weasel of the same name.”—EDIT. ‡ Fox’s “Acts and Monuments,” *anno* 1555, *Octob.* § “Lord, now lettest thou thy servant depart in peace.” (Luke ii. 29.)—EDIT.

brought the news to heaven that his brother was following after. But Ridley suffered with far more pain, the fire about him being not well-made: and yet one would think that age should be skilful in making such bone-fires, as being much practised in them. The gunpowder that was given him, did him little service; and his brother-in-law, out of desire to rid him out of pain, increased it, (great grief will not give men leave to be wise with it!) heaping fuel upon him to no purpose; so that neither the faggots which his enemies' anger, nor his brother's good-will, cast upon him, made the fire to burn kindly.

In like manner, not much before, his dear friend Master Hooper suffered with great torment; the wind (which too often is the bellows of great fires) blowing it away from him once or twice.\* Of all the Martyrs in those days, these two endured most pain; it being true that each of them,

*Quarebat in ignibus ignes:*

"And still he did desire  
For fire in midst of fire:"

both desiring to burn, and yet both their upper parts were but Confessors, when their lower parts were Martyrs, and burnt to ashes. Thus God, where he hath given the stronger faith, he layeth on the stronger pain. And so we leave them going up to heaven, like Elijah, in a chariot of fire.

\* See Mr. Fox's "Acts and Monuments," on Hooper's death.

## CHAPTER XII.

## THE TRUE NOBLEMAN.

HE is a gentleman in a text-letter,\* because bred and living in a higher and larger way. Conceive him, when young, brought up at school, *in ludo literario*, where he did not take *ludus* to himself, and leave *literarius*† to others, but seriously applied himself to learning; and, afterwards coming to his estate, thus behaves himself:—

## MAXIM I.

*Goodness sanctifies his greatness, and greatness supports his goodness.*—He improves the upper ground whereon he stands, thereby to do God the more glory.

## II.

*He counts not care for his country's good to be beneath his state.*—Because he is a great pillar, shall he therefore bear the less weight, never meddling with matters of justice? Can this be counted too low for a lord, which is high enough for a king? Our nobleman freely serves his country, counting his very work a sufficient reward; as by our laws no duke, earl, baron, or baronet, though Justices of Peace, may take any wages at the sessions.‡ Yea, he detesteth all gainful ways, which have the least blush of dishonour. For the merchant-nobility of Florence and Venice, how highly soever valued by themselves, pass in other countries with loss and abatement of repute; as if the scarlet robes of their honour had a stain of the stammel § dye in them.

\* What is now usually called “a capital letter,” the large letter with which a sentence or paragraph commences.—EDIT. † The literal translation of *ludus literarius* is “a literary play-place.” According to Festus, the old Latin grammarian, the rather ominous word *schola* was purposely changed into *ludus literarius*, in order that young boys might not be deterred, through the lugubrious sound of the name, from engaging heartily in scholastic duties. According to other authorities, a place for general education obtained this name, because the common duties of a school appear only as a kind of by-play to a youth of real genius. The English reader will, after this explanation, at once appreciate the wit of Fuller’s subsequent allusion to the youthful nobleman, who “did not take the *sportive* part to himself, and leave the *literary* part to others.”—EDIT. ‡ Statute 14 of Richard II., cap. xi. § *Stammel*, a dingy red colour. The antithesis

## III.

*He is careful in the thrifty managing of his estate.*—Gold, though the most solid and heavy of metals, yet may be beaten out so thin as to be the lightest and slightest of all things. Thus nobility, though in itself most honourable, may be so attenuated through the smallness of means, as thereby to grow neglected: which makes our nobleman to practise Solomon's precept: “Be diligent to know the state of thy flocks, and look well to thine herds; for the crown doth not endure to every generation.” (Prov. xxvii. 23.) If not *the crown*, much less *the coronet*; and good husbandry may as well stand with great honour, as breadth may consist with height.

## IV.

*If a weak estate be left him by his ancestors, he seeks to repair it.*—By thrifty ways, yet noble: as by travelling, sparing abroad, till his state at home may outgrow debts and pensions. Hereby he gains experience, and saves expense; sometimes living private, sometimes showing himself at a half-light, and sometimes appearing like himself, as occasion requires:—or else by betaking himself to the wars; war cannot but in thankfulness grace him with an office, who graceth her with his person:—or else by warlike sea-adventures, wisely undertaken, and providently managed; otherwise, this course hath emptied more full, than filled empty, purses, and many thereby have brought a galleon to a galley:—or, lastly, by match with wealthy heirs, wherein he is never so attentive to his profit, but he listens also to his honour.

## V.

*In proportion to his means, he keeps a liberal house.*—This much takes the affections of country people, whose love is much warmed in a good kitchen, and turneth much on the hinges of a buttery-door often open. Francis Russel, second earl of Bedford of that surname, was so bountiful to the poor, that queen Elizabeth would merrily complain of him, that he made all the beggars. Sure, it is more honourable for noblemen to

here instituted by Fuller between splendid *scarlet* robes, and those which had only a stain of the *stammel* dye, has been well preserved by Ben Jonson in the subjoined couplet:—

“ Redhood, the first that doth appear  
In *stammel*: *scarlet* is too dear.”

EDIT.

make beggars by their liberality, than by their oppression. But our nobleman is especially careful to see all things discharged which he taketh up. When the corpse of Thomas Howard, second duke of Norfolk, was carried to be interred in the abbey of Thetford, *anno* 1524, no person could demand of him one groat for debt, or restitution for any injury done by him.\*

## VI.

*His servants are best known by the coat and cognizance of their civil behaviour.*—He will not entertain such ruffian-like men, who know so well who is their master, that they know not who they are themselves, and think their lord's reference is their innocence, to bear them out in all unlawful actions. But our lord's house is the College wherein the children of the neighbouring gentry and yeomanry are bred, and there taught, by serving of him, to rule themselves.

## VII.

*He hateth all oppression of his tenants and neighbours.*—Distraining to crush a mean gentleman for a meaner offence; and counts it no conquest, but an execution, from him who on his side hath the odds of height of place, strength of arm, and length of weapon. But, as the proverb saith, “No grass grows where the grand seignior's horse sets his feet;” so, too often, nothing but grass grows where some great men set their footing, no towns or tillage, for all must be turned into depopulating pastures, and commons into enclosures. Nigh the city of Lunenburg in Germany, flowed a plentiful salt-spring, till such time as the rich men, engrossing all the profit to themselves, would not suffer the poor to make any salt thereof: whereupon, God and nature being offended at their covetousness, the spring ceased, and ran no more for a time.† Thus hath God's punishment overtaken many great men, and stopped his blessing towards them, which formerly flowed plentifully unto them, for that they have wronged poor people of their commonage, which of right belonged unto them.

\* WEAVER's “Funeral Monuments,” p. 83.  
part. i. chap. i. p. 5. Yet afterwards, upon re-admission of the poor to it, it ran again.

† MORYSON's “Travels,”

## VIII.

*In his own pleasures he is careful of his neighbour's profit.—* Though his horses cannot have wings, like his hawks, to spoil no grass or grain as he passeth, yet he is very careful to make as little waste as possible may be. His horses shall not trample on loaves of bread as he hunteth; so that, whilst he seeks to gather a twig for himself, he breaks the staff of the commonwealth.

## IX.

*All the country are his retainers in love and observance.—* When they come to wait on him, they leave not their hearts at home behind them, but come willingly to tender their respects. The holding-up of his hand is as good as the displaying of a banner; thousands will flock to him, but it must be for the king's and country's service. For he knows, that he that is more than a lord, if his cause be loyal, is less than a private man, if it be otherwise. With St. Paul, "he can do nothing against the truth, but for the truth." (2 Cor. xiii. 8.) Thus queen Elizabeth christened the youngest daughter of Gilbert Talbot, earl of Shrewsbury, (now countess of Arundel,) *Aletheia*, "Truth," out of true consideration and judgment, that the house of the Talbots was ever loyal to the crown.\*

## X.

*Some privileges of noblemen he endeavours to deserve.—* Namely, such privileges as are completely noble; that so his merits, as well as the law, should allow them unto him. He conceives this word, "On mine honour," wraps up a great deal in it; which, unfolded and then measured, will be found to be a large attestation, and no less than an ecliptical oath, calling God to witness, who hath bestowed that honour upon him. And seeing the State is so tender of him, that he shall not be forced to swear in matters of moment in courts of justice, he is careful not to swear of his own accord in his sports and pleasures. Other privileges of noblemen he labours not to have need of; namely, such as presuppose a fault, are but honourable penalties, and excuse from shameful punishments. Thus, he is not to be "bound to the peace."† And what needs he, who hath the peace always bound to him? being, of his own accord,

\* VINCENT's "Discovery of Brooks's Errors," p. 470.  
"Office of the Justices of Peace," p. 83.

† LAMBARDE's

always careful to preserve it, and of so noble a disposition, he will never be engaged in any brawls or contentions.

To give an instance of such a nobleman seems to be needless ; hoping that, at this time, in one city of this realm, and in one room of that city, many such noblemen are to be found together.

---

## CHAPTER XIII.

### THE COURT-LADY.

To describe a “Holy State” without a virtuous lady therein, were to paint out a year without a Spring : we come, therefore, to her character.

#### MAXIM I.

*She sets not her face so often by her glass, as she compositeth her soul by God’s word.*—Which hath all the excellent qualities of a glass indeed :—

1. It is clear.—In all points necessary to salvation, except to such whose eyes are blinded.
2. It is true.—Not like those false glasses some ladies dress themselves by. And how common is flattery at court, when even glasses have learnt to be parasites !
3. It is large.—Presenting all spots cap-à-piè, “behind and before, within and without.”
4. It is durable.—Though, in one sense, it is broken too often, (when God’s laws are neglected,) yet it will last to break them that break it, and “one tittle thereof shall not fall to the ground.”
5. This glass hath power to smooth the wrinkles, cleanse the spots, and mend the faults it discovers.

#### II.

*She walks humbly before God in all religious duties.*—“Humbly :” for she well knows, that the strongest Christian is like the city of Rome, which was never besieged but it was taken ; and the best saint, without God’s assistance, would be as often foiled as tempted. She is most constant and diligent at her hours of private prayer. Queen Catherine dowager never

kneeled on a cushion when she was at her devotions.\* This matters not at all: our lady is more careful of her heart, than of her knees, that her soul be settled aright.

## III.

*She is careful and most tender of her credit and reputation.*—There is a tree in Mexicana which is so exceedingly tender, that a man cannot touch any of his branches, but it withers presently.† A lady's credit is of equal niceness: a small touch may wound and kill it; which makes her very cautious what company she keeps. The Latin tongue seems somewhat injurious to the feminine sex; for whereas therein *amicus* is “a friend,” *amica* always signifies “a sweetheart;” as if their sex, in reference to men, were not capable of any other kind of familiar friendship, but in way to marriage: which makes our lady avoid all privacy with suspicious company.

## IV.

*Yet is she not more careful of her own credit, than of God's glory.*—And stands up valiantly in the defence thereof. She hath read how, at the coronation of king Richard II., dame Margaret Dimock, wife to sir John Dimock, came into the court, and claimed the place to be the king's champion, by the virtue of the tenure of her manor of Scrivelsby in Lincolnshire, to challenge and defy all such as opposed the king's right to the crown.‡ But if our lady hears any speaking disgracefully of God or religion, she counts herself bound by her tenure, (whereby she holds possession of grace here, and reversion of glory hereafter,) to assert and vindicate the honour of the King of heaven, whose champion she professeth to be. One may be a lamb in private wrongs; but in hearing general affronts to goodness, they are asses who are not lions.

## V.

*She is pitiful and bountiful to people in distress.*—We read how a daughter of the duke of Exeter invented a brake, or cruel rack, to torment people withal; to which purpose it was long reserved, and often used, in the Tower of London, and commonly called (was it not fit so pretty a babe should bear her

\* SANDERS, *De Schismate Anglicano*, lib. i. p. 5.  
“Microcosm,” p. 783. † DR. HEYLIN'S  
“She claimed the place, but her husband performed  
the office.”—LELAND'S “Collection,” tit. i. p. 299.

mother's name ?) "the duke of Exeter's daughter."\* Methinks the finding-out of a salve, to ease poor people in pain, had borne better proportion to her ladyship, than to have been the inventor of instruments of cruelty.

## VI.

*She is a good scholar, and well-learned in useful authors.*—Indeed, as, in purchases, a house is valued at nothing, because it returneth no profit, and requires great charges to maintain it ; so, for the same reasons, learning in a woman is but little to be prized. But, as for great ladies, who ought to be a confluence of all rarities and perfections, some learning in them is not only useful but necessary.

## VII.

*In discourse, her words are rather fit than fine, very choice, and yet not chosen.*—Though her language be not gaudy, yet the plainness thereof pleaseth, it is so proper, and handsomely put on. Some, having a set of fine phrases, will hazard an impertinency to use them all, as thinking they give full satisfaction for dragging in the matter by head and shoulders, if they dress it in quaint expressions. Others often repeat the same things ; the Platonic year of their discourses being not above three days long, in which term all the same matter returns over again, threadbare talk ill-suiting with the variety of their clothes.

## VIII.

*She affects not the vanity of foolish fashions.*—But is decently apparelled according to her state and condition. He that should have guessed the bigness of Alexander's soldiers, by their shields left in India, would much over-proportion their true greatness. But what a vast overgrown creature would some guess a woman to be, taking his aim by the multitude and variety of clothes and ornaments, which some of them use ! insomuch as the ancient Latins called a woman's wardrobe, *mundus*, "a world ;" wherein, notwithstanding, was much *terra incognita* then undiscovered, but since found out by the curiosity of modern fashion-mongers. We find a map of this "world" drawn by God's Spirit, (Isaiah iii. 18—24,) wherein one-and-twenty women's ornaments, all superfluous, are reckoned up ;

\* *Vide Stow's "Chronicle," in the reign of king Edward IV.*

which at this day are much increased. The “moons,” there mentioned, which they wore on their heads, may seem since grown to the full in the luxury of after-ages.

## IX.

*She is contented with that beauty which God hath given her.*—If very handsome, no whit the more proud, but far the more thankful: if unhandsome, she labours to better it in the virtues of her mind; that what is but plain cloth without, may be rich plush within. Indeed, such natural defects as hinder her comfortable serving of God in her calling may be amended by art; and any member of the body, ~~be it~~, defective, may thereby be lawfully supplied. Thus, glass-eyes may be used, though not for seeing, for sightlessness. But our lady detesteth all adulterate complexions, finding no precedent thereof in the Bible, save one,—and her so bad that ladies would blush, through their paint, to make her the pattern of their imitation. Yet are there many that think the grossest fault in painting is to paint grossly, (making their faces, with thick daubing, not only new pictures, but new statues,) and that the greatest sin therein is—to be discovered.

## X.

*In her marriage, she principally respects virtue and religion.*—And, next that, other accommodations, as we have formerly discoursed of.\* And she is careful in match not to bestow herself unworthily beneath her own degree to an ignoble person, except in case of necessity. Thus, the gentlewomen in Champaigne in France, some three hundred years since, were enforced to marry yeomen and farmers, because all the nobility in that country were slain in the wars, in the two voyages of king Lewis to Palestine:† and, thereupon, ever since, by custom and privilege, the gentlewomen of Champaigne and Brye ennable their husbands, and give them honour in marrying them, how mean soever before.

## XI.

*Though pleasantly affected, she is not transported, with court-delights.*—As in their stately masks and pageants. Seeing princes’ cares are deeper than the cares of private men, it is fit their recreations also should be greater, that so their mirth may

\* *Vide* book iii. chap. 22. “Of Marriage,” pp. 203—205.  
FAVIN, in his “Theatre of Honour,” book i. chap. 6.

† ANDREW

reach the bottom of their sadness: yea, God allows to princes a greater latitude of pleasure. He is no friend to the tree, that strips it of the bark; neither do they mean well to majesty, who would deprive it of outward shows and state-solemnities, which the servants of princes may in loyalty and respect present to their sovereign; however, our lady by degrees is brought from delighting in such masks, only to be contented to see them, and at last, perchance, could desire to be excused from that also.

## XII.

*Yet, in her reduced thoughts, she makes all the sport she hath seen earnest to herself.*—It must be a dry flower indeed, out of which this bee sucks no honey. They are the best Origens,\* who do allegorize all earthly vanities into heavenly truths. When she remembereth how suddenly the scene in the mask was altered, (almost before moment itself could take notice of it,) she considereth, how quickly mutable all things are in this world; God “ringing the changes” on all accidents, and making them tunable to his glory. The lively representing of things so curiously, that Nature herself might grow jealous of Art in outdoing her, minds our lady to make sure work with her own soul, seeing hypocrisy may be so like to sincerity. But, O! what a wealthy exchequer of beauties did she there behold, several faces most different, most excellent! (so great is the variety even in beasts!) what a rich mine of jewels above-ground, all so brave, so costly! To give court-masks their due, of all the bubbles in this world, they have the greatest variety of fine colours. But all is quickly ended. This is the spite of the world: if ever she affordeth fine ware, she always pincheth it in the measure, and it lasts not long. “But, O!” thinks our lady, “how glorious a place is heaven, ‘where there are joys for evermore!’” If a herd of kine should meet together to fancy and define happiness, they would place it to consist in fine pastures, sweet grass, clear water, shadowy groves, constant Summer; but if any Winter, then warm shelter, and dainty hay, with company after their kind; counting these low things the highest happiness, because their conceit can reach no higher. Little better do the Heathen poets describe heaven, paving it with pearl, and roofing it with stars, filling it with

\* An allusion to Origen, one of the earliest and most famous of the allegorizers on the facts, as well as on the doctrines, of the holy Scriptures.—EDIT.

+ Those ladies who are accounted “the best.”—EDIT.

gods and goddesses, and allowing them to drink (as if *without it* no poet's paradise !) nectar and ambrosia ; heaven, indeed, being *poetarum dedecus*, "the shame of poets," and the disgrace of all their hyperboles, falling as far short of truth herein, as they go beyond it in other fables. However, the sight of such glorious earthly spectacles advantageth our lady's conceit, by infinite multiplication thereof, to consider of heaven.

## XIII.

*She reads constant lectures to herself of her own mortality.*— To smell to a turf of fresh earth is wholesome for the body ; no less are thoughts of mortality cordial to the soul. "Earth thou art, to earth thou shalt return." The sight of death, when it cometh, will neither be so terrible to *her*, nor so strange, *who* hath formerly often beheld it in her serious meditations. With Job she saith to the worm, "Thou art my sister." (Job xvii. 14.) If fair ladies scorn to own the worms their kindred in this life, their kindred will be bold to challenge them when dead in their graves. For, when the soul (the best perfume of the body) is departed from it, it becomes so noisome a carcass, that should I make a description of the loathsomeness thereof, some dainty dames would hold their noses in reading it.

To conclude : We read how Henry, a German prince, was admonished by revelation to search for a writing in an old wall, which should nearly concern him, wherein he found only these two words written : *Post sex*, "after six."\* Whereupon Henry conceived, that his death was foretold, which after six days should ensue ; which made him pass those days in constant preparation for the same. But finding the six days passed without the effect he expected, he successively persevered in his godly resolutions six weeks, six months, six years, and on the first day of the seventh year the prophecy was fulfilled, though otherwise than he interpreted it ; for thereupon he was chosen emperor of Germany, having before gotten such a habit of piety that he persisted in his religious course for ever after. Thus our lady hath so inured herself, "all the days of her appointed time, to wait till her change cometh," that, expecting it every hour, she is always provided for that than which nothing is more certain or uncertain.

\* *SURIUS in Vitâ Sancti Henrici, Julii 14; et BARONIUS in anno 1007.*

## CHAPTER XIV.

## THE LIFE OF LADY JANE GREY.

JANE GREY, eldest daughter of Henry Grey, marquess of Dorset, and duke of Suffolk, by Frances Brandon, eldest daughter of Charles Brandon, duke of Suffolk, and Mary his wife, youngest daughter to king Henry VII., was by her parents bred, according to her high birth, in religion and learning. They were no whit indulgent to her in her childhood, but extremely severe, more than needed to so sweet a temper; for what need iron instruments to bow wax?

But as the sharpest Winters, correcting the rankness of the earth, cause the more healthful and fruitful Summers; so the harshness of her breeding compacted her soul to the greater patience and piety: so that afterwards she proved the mirror of her age, and attained to be an excellent scholar, through the teaching of Mr. Aylmer her master.

Once Mr. Roger Ascham, coming to wait on her at Broadgates in Leicestershire, found her in her chamber, reading *Phaedon-PLATONIS* in Greek, with as much delight as some gentleman would have read a merry tale in Boccace, whilst the duke her father, with the duchess, and all their household, were hunting in the park. He asked of her, how she could lose such pastime; who, smiling, answered: "I wish all the sport in the park is but the shadow of what pleasure I find in this book!"\* adding, moreover, that one of the greatest blessings God ever gave her, was in sending her sharp parents, and a gentle schoolmaster, which made her take delight in nothing so much as in her studies.

About this time John Dudley, duke of Northumberland, projected for the English crown. But being too low to reach it in his own person, (having no advantage of royal birth,) a match was made betwixt Guildford, his fourth son, and this lady Jane; the duke hoping so to reign in his daughter-in-law, on whom king Edward VI., by will, (passing by his own sisters,) had entailed the crown; and, not long after, that godly king, who had some

\* ASCHAM'S "Schoolmaster," lib. i. fol. 10. Fuller does not always quote with accuracy. In the "Schoolmaster" the sentence reads thus: "I wist, all their sport in the park is but a shadow to that pleasure that I find in Plato."—EDIT.

defects, but few faults, (and those rather in his age than person,) came to his grave ; it being uncertain whether he went, or was sent, thither. If the latter be true, “the crying of this saint under the altar,” beneath which he was buried in king Henry’s chapel, (without any other monument than that of his own virtues,) hath been heard long since, for avenging his blood.

Presently after, (1553,) lady Jane was proclaimed queen of England. She lifted not up her least finger to put the diadem on herself; but was only contented to sit still, whilst others endeavoured to crown her; or, rather, was so far from biting at the bait of sovereignty, that unwillingly she opened her mouth to receive it.

Then was the duke of Northumberland made general of an army, and sent into Suffolk to suppress the lady Mary, who there gathered men to claim the crown. This duke was appointed, out of the policy of his friend-seeming enemies, for that employment. For those who before could not endure the scorching heat of his displeasure at the council-table, durst afterwards oppose him, having gotten the screen of London-walls betwixt him and them. They also stinted his journeys every day, (thereby appointing the steps by which he was to go down to his own grave,) that he should march on very slowly, which caused his confusion. For, lingering doth tire out treacherous designs, which are to be done all on a sudden, and gives breath to loyalty to recover itself.

His army, like a sheep, left part of his fleece on every bush it came by; at every stage and corner some conveying themselves from him, till his soldiers were washed away, before any storm of war fell upon them. Only some few, who were chained to the duke by their particular engagements, and some great persons, hopeless to conceal themselves, as being too big for a cover, stuck fast unto him. Thus those enterprises need a strong hand, which are thrown against the bias of people’s hearts and consciences. And, not long after, the Norfolk and Suffolk Protestant gentry (loyalty always lodgeth in the same breast with true religion !) proclaimed and set up queen Mary, who got the crown by “Our Father,” and held it by *Pater noster.*\*

Then was the late queen, now lady Jane Grey, brought from a queen to a prisoner, and committed to the Tower. She made

\* Obtained the crown by the Protestants, and held it by the Papists.—EDIT.

misery itself amiable by her pious and patient behaviour; adversity, her night-clothes, becoming her as well as her day-dressing, by reason of her pious deportment.

During her imprisonment, many moved her to alter her religion, and especially Mr. Feckenham, sent unto her by queen Mary. But how wisely and religiously she answered him, I refer the reader to Mr. Fox, where it is largely recorded.\*

And because I have mentioned that book, wherein this lady's virtues are so highly commended, I am not ignorant that, of late, great disgrace hath been thrown on that author and his worthy work, as being guilty of much falsehood; chiefly, because sometimes he makes Popish doctors, well known to be rich in learning, to reason very poorly; and the best fencers of their schools, worsted and put out of their play by some country poor Protestants. But let the cavillers hereat know, that it is a great matter to have the odds of the weapon (God's word) on their side;—not to say any thing of supernatural assistance given them. Sure, for the main, his book is a worthy work, (wherein the reader may rather leave than lack,) and seems to me, like *Ætna*, always burning, whilst the smoke hath almost put out the eyes of the adverse party; and these Fox's "fire-brands" have brought much annoyance to the Romish "Philistines." But it were a miracle, if, in so voluminous a work, there were nothing to be justly reproved; so great a pomegranate, not having any rotten kernel, must only grow in Paradise. And though, perchance, he held the beam at the best advantage for the Protestant party to weigh down, yet, generally, he is a true writer, and never wilfully deceiveth, though he may sometimes be unwillingly deceived.

To return to the lady Jane: Though queen Mary, of her own disposition, was inclined finally to pardon her, yet necessity of State was such, as she must be put to death. Some report her to have been with child when she was beheaded, (cruelty to cut down the tree with blossoms on it!) and that that which hath saved the life of many women hastened her death; but God only knows the truth hereof. On Tower-Hill (Feb. 12th, 1553) she most patiently, Christianly, and constantly yielded to God her soul, which, by a bad way, went to the best end. On whom theforesaid author (whence the rest of her life may be supplied) bestows these verses:—

\* "Acts and Monuments," p. 1419, *et deinceps.*

*Nescio tu quibus es, lector, lecturus ocellis :  
Hoc scio, quod siccis scribere non potui.*

“What eyes thou read’st with, reader, know I not :  
Mine were not dry, when I this story wrote.”

She had the innocence of childhood, the beauty of youth, the solidity of middle—the gravity of old—age, and all at eighteen ; the birth of a princess, the learning of a clerk, the life of a saint, yet the death of a malefactor, for her parents’ offences. I confess, I never read of any canonized saint of her name,—a thing whereof some Papists are so scrupulous, that they count it an unclean and unhallowed thing to be of a name whereof never any saint was : which made that great Jesuit, Arthur Faunt, as his kinsman tells us,\* change his Christian name to Laurence. But let this worthy lady pass for a saint ; and let all great ladies, who bear her name, imitate her virtues ; to whom I wish her inward holiness, but far more outward happiness.

Yet, lest goodness should be discouraged by this lady’s infelicity, we will produce another example, which shall be of a fortunate virtue.

\* BURTON’s “History of Leicestershire,” p. 105.

## CHAPTER XV.

## THE LIFE OF QUEEN ELIZABETH.

WE intermeddle not with her description as she was a sovereign prince, too high for our pen, and performed by others already, though not by any done so fully but that still room is left for the endeavours of posterity to add thereunto. We consider her only as she was a worthy lady, her private virtues rendering her to the imitation, and her public to the admiration, of all.

Her royal birth by her father's side doth comparatively make her mother-descent seem low, which otherwise, considered in itself, was very noble and honourable. As for the bundle of scandalous aspersions by some cast on her birth, they are best to be buried without once opening of them.\* For as the basest rascal will presume to miscall the best lord, when far enough out of his hearing ; so slanderous tongues think they may run riot in railing on any, when once got out of the distance of time, and reach of confutation.

But majesty, which dieth not, will not suffer itself to be so abused, seeing the best assurance which living princes have that their memories shall be honourably continued, is founded (next to their own deserts) in the maintaining of the unstained reputation of their predecessors. Yea, Divine Justice seems herein to be a compurgator of the parents of queen Elizabeth ; in that Nicholas Sanders, a Popish priest, the first raiser of these wicked reports, was accidentally famished as he roved up and down in Ireland ; either because it was just he should be starved, that formerly surfeited with lying ; or because that island, out of a natural antipathy against poisonous creatures, would not lend life to so venomous a slanderer.

Under the reign of her father, and brother king Edward VI., (who commonly called her his "sister Temperance,") she lived in a princely fashion. But the case was altered with her, when her sister Mary came to the crown, who ever looked upon her with a jealous eye and frowning face ; chiefly, because of the

\* See these slanders plainly confuted in *Anti-Sanders, Dialog.* ii. p. 125, *et deinceps.*

difference between them in religion. For though queen Mary is said of herself not so much as to have barked, yet she had under her those who did more than bite ; and rather her religion, than disposition, was guilty in countenancing their cruelty by her authority.

This antipathy against her sister Elizabeth was increased, with the remembrance how Catherine dowager, queen Mary's mother, was justled out of the bed of Henry VIII. by Anna Boleyn, mother to queen Elizabeth ; so that these two sisters were born, as I may say, not only in several, but opposite, horizons ; so that the elevation and bright appearing of the one inferred the necessary obscurity and depression of the other ; and still queen Mary was troubled with this *fit of the mother*, which incensed her against this her half-sister.

To which two grand causes of opposition, this third may also be added, because not so generally known, though in itself of lesser consequence : Queen Mary had released Edward Courtenay, earl of Devonshire, out of the Tower, where long he had been detained prisoner ; a gentleman of a beautiful body, sweet nature, and royal descent ; intending him, as it was generally conceived, to be a husband for herself. For when the said earl petitioned the queen for leave to travel, she advised him rather to marry, insuring him that no lady in the land, how high soever, would refuse him for a husband ; and, urging him to make his choice where he pleased, she pointed herself out unto him as plainly as might stand with the modesty of a maid, and majesty of a queen. Hereupon the young earl—whether because that his long durance had some influence on his brain, or that naturally his face was better than his head, or out of some private fancy and affection to the lady Elizabeth, or out of loyal bashfulness, not presuming to climb higher, but expecting to be called up—is said to have requested the queen for leave to marry her sister the lady Elizabeth, unhappy that his choice either went so high or no higher. For who could have spoken worse treason against Mary, (though not against the queen,) than to prefer her sister before her ? And she, innocent lady, did afterwards dearly pay the score of this earl's indiscretion.

For these reasons, lady Elizabeth was closely kept, and narrowly sifted, all her sister's reign, sir [Henry] Bedingfield, her keeper, using more severity towards her than his place required, yea, more than a good man should—or a wise man would—have done. No doubt, the least tripping of her foot

should have cost her the losing of her head, if they could have caught her to be privy to any conspiracies.

This lady as well deserved the title of “Elizabeth the Confessor,” as ever Edward her ancient predecessor did. Mr. Ascham was a good schoolmaster to her, but affliction was a better; so that it is hard to say, whether she was more happy in having a crown so soon, or in having it no sooner, till affliction had first laid in her a low—and therefore sure—foundation of humility, for highness to be afterwards built thereupon.

We bring her now from the cross to the crown; and come we now to describe the rare endowments of her mind: when, behold, her virtues almost stifle my pen, they crowd in so fast upon it.

She was an excellent scholar, understanding the Greek, and perfectly speaking the Latin: witness her extempore speech, in answer to the Polish ambassador, and another at Cambridge, *Et si faeminalis iste meus pudor*, (for so it began,) elegantly making the word *faeminalis*: \* and well might she mint one new word, who did refine so much new gold and silver.† Good skill she had in the French and Italian, using interpreters not for need, but state. She was a good poet in English, and fluently made verses. In her time of persecution, when a Popish priest pressed her very hardly to declare her opinion concerning the presence of Christ in the sacrament, she truly and warily presented her judgment in these verses:—

“ ‘T was God the Word that spake it,  
He took the bread and brake it;  
And what the Word did make it,  
That I believe, and take it.’ ”

And though, perchance, some may say, “This was but the best of shifts, and the worst of answers, because the distinct manner of the presence must be believed;” yet none can deny it to have been a wise return to an adversary, who lay at wait for all advantages. Nor was her poetic vein less happy in Latin. When, a little before the Spanish invasion in eighty-eight, [1588,] the Spanish ambassador, after a larger represen-

\* See her oration at large in HOLLINSHED, p. 1026.  
valorem reducta, is part of the epitaph on her tomb.

† *Moneta ad suum*

“The coin of the realm was [during her reign] restored to its real value.”—  
EDIT.

tation of his master's demands, had summed up the effect thereof in a tetrasstich, she instantly in one verse rejoined her answer. We will presume to English both, though confessing the Latin loseth lustre by the translation.

*Te voto ne pergas bello defendere Belgas :  
Qua Dracus eripuit nunc restituantur oportet :  
Quas pater everit jubeo te condere cellas :  
Rellgio Papæ fac restituatur ad unguem.*

“These to you are our commands :  
Send no help to th' Netherlands :  
Of the treasure took by Drake,  
Restitution you must make :  
And those abbeys build anew,  
Which your father overthrew :  
If for any peace you hope,  
In all points restore the Pope.”

#### THE QUEEN'S EXTEMPORE RETURN :—

*Ad Graecas, bone rex, fient mandata, Calendas.*

“Worthy king, know, this your will  
At latter Lammas we'll fulfil.”

Her piety to God was exemplary; none more constant or devout in private prayers; very attentive also at sermons, wherein she was better affected with soundness of matter, than quaintness of expression. She could not well digest the affected over-elegancy of such as prayed for her by the title of “Defendress of the Faith,” and not the “Defender;” it being no false construction, to apply a masculine word to so heroic a spirit.

She was very devout in returning thanks to God for her constant and continual preservations; for one traitor's stab was scarce put by, before another took aim at her. But as if the poisons of treason, by custom, were turned natural unto her, by God's protection they did her no harm. In any design of consequence, she loved to be long and well advised; but where her resolutions once seized, she would never let go her hold, according to her motto, *Semper eadem.*\*

By her temperance she improved that stock of health which nature bestowed on her, using little wine and less physic. Her

\* “Always and equally the same.”—EDIT.

continence from pleasures was admirable ; and she the paragon of spotless chastity, whatever some Popish priests (who count all virginity hid under a nun's veil) have feigned to the contrary. The best is, *their* words are no slander *whose* words are all slander ; so given to railing that they must be dumb if they do not blaspheme magistrates. One Jesuit\* made this false anagram on her name, *Elizabeth, JESABEL* ; † false both in matter and manner. For, allow it the abatement of H, (as all anagrams must sue in chancery for moderate favour,) yet was it both unequal and ominous that T, a solid letter, should be omitted,—the presage of the gallows whereon this anagrammatist was afterwards justly executed.

Yea, let the testimony of Pope Sixtus V. himself be believed, who professed, that, amongst all the princes in Christendom, he found but two who were worthy to bear command, had they not been stained with heresy ; namely, Henry IV., king of France, and Elizabeth queen of England.‡ And we may presume that the Pope, if commanding his enemy, is therein infallible.

We come to her death, the discourse whereof was more welcome to her from the mouth of her private confessor than from a public preacher ; and she loved rather to tell herself, than to be told, of her mortality ; because the open mention thereof made (as she conceived) her subjects divide their loyalty betwixt the present and the future prince. We need look into no other cause of her sickness, than old age, being seventy years old, (David's age,) to which no king of England since the Conquest did attain. Her weakness was increased by her removal from London to Richmond in a cold winter day, sharp enough to pierce through those who were armed with health and youth. Also melancholy (the worst natural parasite, whosoever feeds him shall never be rid of his company !) much afflicted her, being given over to sadness and silence.

Then prepared she herself for another world, being more constant in prayer and pious exercises than ever before. Yet spake she very little to any, sighing out more than she said, and making still music to God in her heart. And as the red rose, though outwardly not so fragrant, is inwardly far more cordial than the damask, being more thrifty of its sweetness, and reserving it in itself ; so the religion of this dying queen

\* Edmond Campian.  
*Historia, lib. lxxxii.*

† Our English Bibles call her Jezabel.

‡ THUANI

was most turned inward, in soliloquies betwixt God and her own soul, though she wanted not outward expressions thereof. When her speech failed her, she spake with her heart, tears, eyes, hands, and other signs, so commanding herself to God, the best Interpreter, who understands what his saints desire to say. Thus died queen Elizabeth ; whilst living, the first maid on earth ; and, when dead, the second in heaven.

Surely, the kingdom had died with their queen, had not the fainting spirits thereof been refreshed by the coming-in of gracious king James.

She was of person, tall ; of hair and complexion, fair, well-favoured, but high-nosed ; of limbs and feature, neat ; of a stately and majestic deportment. She had a piercing eye, wherewith she used to touch what metal [mettle] strangers were made of, who came into her presence. But as she counted it a pleasant conquest, with her majestic look to dash strangers out of countenance ; so she was merciful in pursuing those whom she overcame ; and afterwards would cherish and comfort them with her smiles, if perceiving towardliness and an ingenuous modesty in them. She much affected rich and costly apparel ; and if ever jewels had just cause to be proud, it was with her wearing them.

## CHAPTER XVI.

## THE AMBASSADOR.

HE is one that represents his king in a foreign country, (as a deputy doth, in his own dominions,) under the assurance of the public faith, authorized by the law of nations. He is either *extraordinary*, for some one affair, with time limited ; or *ordinary*, for general matters, during his prince's pleasure, commonly called "a lieger."

## MAXIM I.

*He is born, made, or, at leastwise, qualified, honourably.*—Both for the honour of the sender, and him to whom he is sent ; especially if the solemnity of the action wherein he is employed, consisteth in ceremony and magnificence. Lewis XI., king of France, is sufficiently condemned by posterity, for sending Oliver, his barber, in an embassage to a princess ; who so trimly dispatched his business, that he left it in the suds, and had been well washed in the river at Ghent for his pains, if his feet had not been the more nimble.\*

## II.

*He is of a proper, at least passable, person.*—Otherwise, if he be of a contemptible presence, he is absent whilst he is present ; especially if employed in love-businesses, to advance a marriage. Ladies will dislike the body for a deformed shadow. The jest is well known : When the State of Rome sent two ambassadors, the one having scars on his head, the other lame in his feet : † *Mittit populus Romanus legationem, quæ nec caput habet, nec pedes* ; "The people of Rome send an embassy without head or feet."

## III.

*He hath a competent estate whereby to maintain his port.*—For a great poverty is ever suspected ; and he that hath a breach in his estate, lies open to be assaulted with bribes.

\* COMINES, lib. v. cap. 14.

† Some say they sent three, and one of them a fool ; and that Cato should say, they sent an embassy without head, heart, or feet. See PLUTARCH's "Lives."

Wherefore, his means ought at least to be sufficient, both to defray set and constant charges, as also to make sallies and excursions of expenses on extraordinary occasions, which we may call "super-erogations of state." Otherwise, if he be indigent, and succeed a bountiful predecessor, he will seem a fallow field after a plentiful crop.

## IV.

*He is a passable scholar, well travelled in countries and histories.*—Well studied in the pleas of the crown ; I mean, not such as are at home, betwixt his sovereign and his subjects, but abroad, betwixt his and foreign princes ; to this end, he is well skilled in the imperial laws. Common-Law itself is out-lawed beyond the seas ; which though a most true—is too short a—measure of right, and reacheth not foreign kingdoms.

## V.

*He well understandeth the language of that country to which he is sent.*—And yet he desires rather to seem ignorant of it, (if such a simulation, which stands neuter betwixt a truth and a lie, be lawful,) and that for these reasons : First, because, though he can speak it never so exactly, his eloquence therein will be but stammering, compared to the ordinary talk of the natives. Secondly, hereby he shall, in a manner, stand invisible, and view others ; and as Joseph's deafness heard all the dialogues betwixt his brethren, so his not owning to understand the language shall expose their talk the more open unto him. Thirdly, he shall have the more advantage to speak and negotiate in his own language ; at the leastwise, if he cannot make them come over to him, he may meet them in the midway, in the Latin,—a speech common to all learned nations.

## VI.

*He gets his commission and instructions well ratified and confirmed before he sets forth.*—Otherwise, it is the worst prison to be commission-bound. And seeing he must not jet out the least pent-house beyond his foundation, he had best well survey the extent of his authority.

## VII.

*He furnisheth himself with fit officers in his family.*—Especially he is careful in choosing,—

1. A secretary, honest and able, careful to conceal counsels ; and not such a one as will let drop out of his mouth whatsoever is poured in at his ear. Yea, the head of every ambassador sleeps on the breast of his secretary.

2. A steward, wise and provident ; such as can temper magnificence with moderation, judiciously fashioning his ordinary expenses with his master's estate, reserving a spare for all events and accidental occasions, and making all things to pass with decency, without any rudeness, noise, or disorder.

## VIII.

*He seasonably presents his embassage, and demands audience.*—Such is the *fresh* nature of some embassages, if not spent presently, they scent ill. Thus, it is ridiculous to condole griefs almost forgotten ; for, besides that with a cruel courtesy it makes their sorrows bleed afresh, it foolishly seems to teach one to take that which he hath formerly digested. When some Trojan ambassadors came to comfort Tiberius Cæsar for the loss of his son, dead well nigh a twelvemonth before : “ And I,” said the emperor, “ am very sorry for your grief for the death of your Hector, slain by Achilles a thousand years since.”\*

## IX.

*Coming to have audience, he applieth himself only to the prince to whom he is sent.*—When Chancellor Morvill, ambassador from the French king, delivering his message to Philip duke of Burgundy, was interrupted by Charles the duke's son : “ I am sent,” said he, “ not to treat with you, but with your father.” † And our Mr. Wade is highly commended, that, being sent by queen Elizabeth to Philip king of Spain, he would not be turned over to the Spanish Privy Council, whose greatest grandees were dwarfs in honour to his queen, but would either have audience from the king himself, or would return without it. ‡ And yet, afterwards, our ambassador knows (if desirous that his business should take effect) how and when to make his secret and underhand addresses to such potent favourites as strike the stroke in state ; it often happening in commonwealths, that the master's mate steers the ship thereof, more than the master himself.

\* Suetonius, in *Tiberio.* † Philip de Comines, lib. i. *Elizabeth,* in anno 1584, p. 380.

‡ Camden's

## X.

*In delivering his message, he complies with the garb and guise of the country.*—Either longer, briefer, more plain, or more flourishing, as it is most acceptable to such to whom he directs his speech. The Italians, whose country is called “the country of good words,” love the circuits of courtesy, that an ambassador should not, as a sparrow-hawk, fly outright to his prey, and meddle presently with the matter in hand; but, with the noble falcon, mount in language, soar high, fetch compasses of compliment, and then, in due time, stoop to game, and seize on the business propounded. Clean contrary, the Switzers—who sent word to the king of France, not to send them an ambassador with store of words, but a treasurer with plenty of money—count all words quite out, which are not straight on, have an antipathy against eloquent language; the flowers of rhetoric being as offensive to them, as sweet perfumes to such as are troubled with “the mother.” Yea, generally great soldiers have their stomachs sharp-set to feed on the matter, loathing long speeches, as wherein they conceive themselves to lose time, in which they could conquer half a country; and, counting bluntness their best eloquence, love to be accosted in their own kind.

## XI.

*He commands himself not to admire any thing presented unto him.*—He looks, but not gazeth, on foreign magnificence, (as country clowns on a city,) beholding them with a familiar eye, as challenging old acquaintance, having known them long before. If he be surprised with a sudden wonder, he so orders it that, though his soul within feels admiration, none can perceive it without in his countenance. For,

1. It is inconsistent with the steadiness of his gravity, to be startled with a wonder.
2. Admiratio is the daughter of ignorance: whereas he ought to be so read in the world as to be posed with no rarity.
3. It is a tacit confession, (if he wonders at state, strength, or wealth,) that herein his own master’s kingdom is far surpassed. And yet he will not slight and neglect such worthy sights as he beholds, which would savour too much of sullenness and self-addiction,—things ill-beseeming his noble spirit.

## XII.

*He is zealous of the least punctilio of his master's honour.*—Herein it is most true, the law of honour *servanda in apicibus*.\* Yea, a toy may be real, and a point may be essential in the sense of some sentences, and worse to be spared than some whole letter. Great kings wrestle together, by the strength and nimbleness of their ambassadors; wherefore, ambassadors are careful to afford no advantage to the adverse party; and, mutually, no more hold is given than what is gotten, lest the fault of the ambassador be drawn into precedent, to the prejudice of his master. He that abroad will lose a hair of his king's honour, deserves to lose his own head when he comes home.

## XIII.

*He appears not violent in desiring any thing he would effect.*—But, with a seeming carelessness, most carefully advanceth his master's business. If employed to conclude a peace, he represents his master as indifferent therein for his own part, but that the desire to spare Christian blood preponderates him for peace, whose conscience, not purse or arms, are weary of the war. He entreats not, but treats, for an accord, for their mutual good. But if the ambassador declareth himself zealous for it, perchance he may be forced to buy those conditions which otherwise would be given him.

## XIV.

*He is constantly and certainly informed of all passages in his own country.*—What a shame is it for him to be a stranger to his native affairs! Besides, if gulls and rumours from his country be raised, on purpose to amuse our ambassador, he rather smiles than starts at these false vizards, who, by private instructions from home, knows the true face of his country-estate. And lest his master's secretary should fail him herein, he counts it thrift to cast away some pounds yearly, to some private friend in the court, to send him true information of all home-remarkables.

## XV.

*He carefully returns good intelligence to his master that employeth him:*—

\* The law of honour "ought to be observed even in matters the most minute, or in the nicest points."—EDIT.

1. *Speedy*.—Not being such a sluggard as to write for news at noon, that the sun is risen.

2. *True*.—So far forth as may be; else he stamps it with a mark of uncertainty or suspicion.

3. *Full*.—Not filling the paper, but informing those to whom it is written.

4. *Material*.—Not grinding his advices too small, to frivolous particulars of love-toys, and private brawls, as one\* layeth it to the charge of Francis Guicciardine's "History:" *Minutissima quæque narrat, parùm ex lege aut dignitate Historiæ.*† And yet such particulars, which are too mean to be served up to the council-table, may make a feast for ladies, or other his friends; and, therefore, to such our ambassador relates them by his private letters.

5. *Methodical*.—Not running-on all in a continued strain, but stopping at the stages of different businesses, to breathe himself and the reader, and to take and begin a new sentence.

6. *Well-penned, clear, and plain*.—Not hunting after language, but teaching words their distance to wait on his matter, intermingling sententious speeches sparingly, lest seeming affected. And if constrained twice to write the same matter, still he varieth his words, lest he may seem to write, like notaries, by precedents.

#### XVI.

*He will not have his house serve as a retreating-place for people suspected and odious, in that State wherein he is employed.*—Much less shall his house be a sanctuary for offenders, seeing the very horns of God's altar did push away from them such notorious malefactors as did fly unto them for protection.

#### XVII.

*He is cautious not to practise any treacherous act against the prince under whom he lives.*—Lest the shield of his embassy prove too small to defend him from the sword of justice, seeing that for such an offence an ambassador is resolved into a private man, and may worthily be punished, as in the cases of Bernardinus Mendoza, and the bishop of Rosse.‡ Yea, he will not so much as break forth publicly into any discourse, which he

\* *LIPSIUS*, in the end of his "Politics," in his censure of historians. + "He fills his narrative with long stories and trivial circumstances, without regard either to the laws or the dignity of history."—EDIT. ‡ See his case largely discussed in *CAMDEN*'s "Elizabeth" by the best civilians, anno 1571.

knows will be distasteful in that country wherein he is employed. Learned Bodin, who, some seventy years since, waited on Monsieur into England, was here, though highly admired for his learning, condemned much for his indiscretion, if his cor-rival's\* pen may be credited. For, being feasted at an English lord's table, he fell into the odious discourse, that a princess, meaning Mary queen of Scots, was, after queen Elizabeth, the presumptive inheratrix of the English crown, notwithstanding an English law seemed to exclude those who are born out of the land. "And yet," said he, "I know not where this law is, for all the diligence that I have used to find it out." To whom it was suddenly replied by the lord that entertained him: "You shall find it written on the backside of your Salic law :" a judicious and biting rebound.

## XVIII.

*He is careful of suspicious complying with that prince to whom he is sent.*—As to receive from him any extraordinary gifts, much less pensions, which carry with them more than an appearance of evil. Sir Amias Paulet was so scrupulous herein, that, being ambassador in France in the days of queen Elizabeth, he would not at his departure receive from the French king the chain of gold, (which is given of course,) till he was half a league out of the city of Paris.†

## XIX.

*If he hath any LIBERA MANDATA, "unlimited instructions," herein his discretion is most admirable.*

But what go I about to do? Hereof enough already, if not too much: it better complying with my profession to practise St. Paul's precept to mine own parishioners: "Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech you by us: we pray you in Christ's stead, be reconciled to God." (2 Cor. v. 20.)

\* FRANCIS HOTTOMAN, in his treatise "Of an Ambassador," fol. 42.  
† *Idem*, fol. 23, 24.

## CHAPTER XVII.

## THE GOOD GENERAL.

THE soldier, whom we formerly described,\* hath since, by the stairs of his own deserts, climbed up to be a general ; and now we come to character him.

## MAXIM I.

*He is pious in the ordering of his own life.*—Some falsely conceive, that religion spoileth the spirit of a general, as bad as a rainy day doth his plume of feathers, making it droop and hang down ; whereas, indeed, piety only begets true prowess.

## II.

*He acknowledgeth God the Generalissimo of all armies.*—Who in all battles, though the number be never so unequal, reserves the casting-voice for himself. Yet can I scarce believe what one tells us, how Walter Pletemberg, Master of the Teutonic Order, with a small number, slew in a battle a hundred thousand Muscovite enemies, with loss of but one man on his side.†

## III.

*He hath gained skill in his place by long experience.*—Not beginning to lead others, before himself ever knew to follow ; having never before (except in cock-matches) beheld any battles. Surely, they leap best in their providence forward, who fetch their rise farthest backward in their experience.

## IV.

*He either is, or is presumed, valiant.*—Indeed, courage in him is necessary ; though some think that a general is above valour, who may command others to be so : as if it were all one, whether courage were his naturally or by adoption, who can make the valiant deeds of others seem his own ; and his reputation for personal manhood, once raised, will bear itself up : like a round

\* Book ii. chap. 20, p. 113—120.      † TILMAN BREDENBACH, *De Bello Livon.* ; and FITS-HERBERT, "Of Policy and Religion," part i. cap. xiv.

body, some force is required to set it—but a touch will keep it—a-going. Indeed, it is extreme indiscretion (except in extremities) for him to be prodigal of his person.

## V.

*He is cheerful and willing in undergoing of labour.*—Admirable are the miracles of an industrious army; witness the mighty ditch in Cambridgeshire, made by the East-Angles, commonly called “Devil’s-ditch,” as if the pioneers thereof came from hell. Thus the effeminate of our age, defaming what it should imitate, falsely traduces the monuments of their ancestors’ endeavours.

## VI.

*He loves, and is beloved of, his soldiers.*—Whose good-will he attaineth,—

1. By giving them good words in his speeches unto them. When wages have sometimes accidentally fallen short, soldiers have accepted the payment in the fair language and promises of their general.

2. By partaking with his soldiers in their painful employments. When the English, at the Spanish fleet’s approach in eighty-eight, [1588,] drew their ships out of Plymouth-haven, the Lord-Admiral Howard himself towed a cable;\* the least joint of whose exemplary hand drew more than twenty men besides.

3. By sharing with them in their wants. When victuals have grown scant, some generals have pinched themselves to the same fare with their soldiers; who could not complain that their mess was bad, whilst their general was Fellow-commoner with them.

4. By taking notice and rewarding of their deserts; never disinheriting a worthy soldier of his birth-right of the next office due to him. For a worthy man is wounded more deeply by his own general’s neglect, than by his enemy’s sword: the latter may kill him, but the former deads his courage, or, which is worse, mads him into discontent; who had rather others should make a ladder of his dead corpse to scale a city by it, than a bridge of him whilst alive for his punies† to give him the *go-by*

\* CAMDEN’s “Elizabeth,” anno 1588.      † The old method of writing *mis-nès*, “juniors or inferiors.” This sentence, and many others in Fuller, teach us, that it is no new thing under the sun for brave officers who have seen much service, and deserved well of their country, to complain in their old age, that raw

and pass over him to preferment. For this reason chiefly, beside some others, a great and valiant English general, in the days of queen Elizabeth, was hated of his soldiers, because he disposed offices by his own absolute will, without respect of orderly advancing such as deserved it; which made a great man once salute him with this letter:—

“SIR,—If you will be pleased to bestow a captain’s place on the bearer hereof, being a worthy gentleman, he shall do that for you which never as yet any soldier did; namely, pray to God for your health and happiness.”

#### VII.

*He is fortunate in what he undertakes.*—Such a one was Julius Cæsar, who in Britain, a country undiscovered, peopled with a valiant nation, began a war in Autumn, without apparent advantage, not having any intelligence there, being to pass over the sea into a colder climate,\* (“an enterprise,” saith one,† “well worthy the invincible courage of Cæsar, but not of his accustomed prudence,”) and yet returned victorious. Indeed, God is the sole Disposer of success. Other gifts He also scattereth amongst men, yet so that they themselves scramble to gather them up; whereas success God gives immediately into *their* hands on *whom* he pleaseth to bestow it.

#### VIII.

*He trieth the forces of a new enemy before he encounters him.*—Samson is half-conquered, when it is known where his strength lies; and skirmishes are scouts for the discovery of the strength of an army, before battle is given.

#### IX.

*He makes his flying enemy a bridge of gold, and disarms them of their best weapon.*—Which is, necessity to fight, whether they will or no. Men forced to a battle against their intention, often conquer beyond their expectation. Stop a flying coward, and he will turn his legs into arms, and lay about him manfully; whereas open him a passage to escape, and he will quickly shut up his courage.

striplings who had never drawn their swords against their enemies in war, were advanced above them in rank, merely through the more powerful influence of their immediate connexions.—**EDIT.**

\* *CÆSARIS Comment.*, lib. iv.  
† *complete Captain*, p. 19.

The DUKE OF ROHAN, in the “Com-

But I dare dwell no longer on this subject. When the Pope earnestly wrote to king Richard I., not to detain in prison "his dear son," the martial bishop of Beauvois, the king sent the Pope back the armour wherein the bishop was taken, with the words of Jacob's sons to their father: "See whether or no this be the coat of thy son." Surely, a corslet is no canonical coat for me, nor suits it with my clergy-profession to proceed any further in this warlike description; only we come to give an example thereof.

---

## CHAPTER XVIII.

### THE LIFE OF GUSTAVUS ADOLPHUS, KING OF SWEDEN.

GUSTAVUS ADOLPHUS, king of Sweden, born *anno Domini* 1594, had princely education both for arts and arms. In Italy he learnt the mathematics; and, in other places abroad, the French, Italian, and German tongues; and after he was king, he travelled under the name of Mr. GARS,\* being the four initial letters of his name and title.

He was but seventeen years old at his father's death, being left not only a young king, but also in a young kingdom; for his title to the crown of Sweden was but five years old; to wit, since the beginning of his father's reign. All his bordering princes (on the North, nothing but the North bounded on him) were his enemies; the duke-emperor of Muscovy on the East, the king of Denmark on the West, and of Poland on the South. The former two laid claim to parcels, the latter, to all his kingdom. Yet was he too great for them in his minority, both defending his own, and gaining on them. "Woe be to the kingdom whose king is a child:" yet blessed is that kingdom whose king, though a child in age, is a man in worth.

These his first actions had much of glory, and yet somewhat of possibility and credit, in them. But chronicle and belief must strain hard to make his German conquest probable with posterity; coming in with eleven thousand men, having no certain confederates, but some of his alliance whom the emperor

\* *Gustavus Adolphus, Rex Suecorum.*—DR. WATTS, in *charact. ad finem*, part iii., p. 183.

had outed of all their estates: and yet, in two years and four months, he left the emperor in as bad a case almost as he found those princes in.

God's providence herein is chiefly to be admired; who, to open him a free entrance into Germany, diverted the imperial and Spanish forces into Italy, there to scramble against the French for the dukedom of Mantua. For heaven only knows how much Protestant flesh the Imperialists had devoured, if that bone had not stuck in their teeth.

If we look on second causes, we may ascribe his victories to this king's piety, wisdom, valour, and other virtues. His piety to God was exemplary, being more addicted to prayer than to fight, as if he would rather conquer heaven than earth. He was himself exceeding temperate, stave only too much given to anger; but afterwards he would correct himself, and be choleric with his choler, showing himself a man in the one, and a saint in the other.

He was a strict observer of martial discipline, the life of war, without which an army is but a crowd (not to say "herd") of people. He would march all day in complete armour; which was, by custom, no more burden to him than his arms; and to carry his helmet, no more trouble than his head; whilst his example made the same easy to all his soldiers. He was a strict punisher of misdemeanours and wanton intemperance in his camp: and yet let me relate this story from one present therein:—

When he first entered Germany, he perceived how that many women followed his soldiers; some being their wives, and some wanting nothing to make them so but marriage; yet most passing for their laundresses, though commonly defiling more than they wash. The king, coming to a great river, after his men and the waggons were passed over, caused the bridge to be broken down, hoping so to be rid of these feminine impediments. But they, on a sudden, lift up a panic shriek, which pierced the skies and the soldiers' hearts on the other side of the river; who instantly vowed not to stir a foot farther, except with baggage, and that the women might be fetched over, which was done accordingly. For the king, finding this ill-humour so generally dispersed in his men, that it was dangerous to purge it all at once, smiled out his anger for the present, and permitted what he could not amend: yet this abuse was afterwards reformed by degrees.

He was very merciful to any that would submit. And as the

iron gate miraculously opened to St. Peter of its own accord, so his mercy wrought miracles, making many city-gates open to him of themselves, before he ever knocked at them to demand entrance ; the inhabitants desiring to shroud themselves under his protection. Yea, he was merciful to those places which he took by assault, ever detesting the bloodiness of Tilly at Magdeburgh ; under the ashes whereof he buried his honour, coming valiant thither, and departing cruel thence. In such cases, he was merciful to women ; not like those generals, who know the differences of sex in their lust, but not in their anger. Yea, the very Jesuits themselves tasted of his courtesy, though merrily he laid it to their charge, that they would neither *preach faith* to—nor *keep faith* with—others.

He had the true art (almost lost) of encamping ; where he would lie in his trenches in despite of all enemies, keeping the clock of his own time, and would fight for no man's pleasure but his own. No seeming flight or disorder of his enemies should cozen him into a battle, nor their daring bravadoes anger him into it, nor any violence force him to fight till he thought fitting himself ; counting it good manners in war to take all, but give no, advantages.

It was said of his armies, that they used to rise when the swallows went to bed, when winter began, his forces most consisting of northern nations, and a Swede fights best when he can see his own breath. He always kept a long vacation in the dog-days, being only a saver in the summer, and a gainer all the year besides. His best harvest was in the snow ; and his soldiers had most life in the dead of winter.

He made but a short cut in taking of cities, many of whose fortifications were a wonder to behold ; but what were they, then, to assault and conquer ? At scaling of walls, he was excellent for contriving, as his soldiers in executing ; it seeming a wonder that their bodies should be made of air, so light to climb, whose arms were of iron, so heavy to strike. Such cities as would not presently open unto him, he shut them up ; and, having business of more importance than to imprison himself about one strength, he would consign the besieging thereof to some other captain. And, indeed, he wanted not his Joabs, who, when they had reduced cities to terms of yielding, knew, with as much wisdom as loyalty, to entitle their David to the whole honour of the action.

He was highly beloved of his soldiers, of whose deserts he kept a faithful chronicle in his heart, and advanced them accord-

aliant men were Swedes to him ; and he dif-  
men in his esteem by their merits, not their

ne to his death : wherein his reputation suffers, in the  
ents of some, for too much hazarding of his own person in  
e. But, surely, some conceived necessity thereof urged  
reunto. For this his third grand set battle in Germany  
the third and last asking of his banns to the imperial  
; and had they not been forbidden by his death, his  
age, in all probability, had instantly followed. Besides,  
ever prince hath founded a great empire, but by making war  
rson ; nor hath lost an when he made war by  
neutenants : ”\* which made s king the more adven-  
us.

s death is still left in u mty, whether the valour of  
enemies, or treachery of friends, caused it. His side  
the day, and yet sun that made it ; and, as one  
l,

“ Upon this place the great Gustavus died,  
Whilst Victory lay bleeding by his side.”

Thus, the readiest way to lose a jewel, is to over-prize it : for, indeed, many men so doated on this worthy prince and his victories, (without any default of his, who gave God the glory,) that his death in some sort seemed necessary to vindicate God’s honour, who usually maketh that prop of flesh to break whereon men lay too great weight of their expectation.

After his death, how did men struggle to keep him alive in their reports ! partly out of good-will, which made them kindle new hopes of his life at every spark of probability ; partly out of infidelity, that his death could be true. First, they thought so valiant a prince could not live on earth ; and when they saw his life, then they thought so valiant a prince could never die, but that his death was rather a concealment for a time, daily expecting when the politickly dead should have a resurrection in some noble exploit.

I find a most learned pen † applying these Latin verses to this noble prince, and it is honour enough for us to translate them :—

\* DUKE OF ROHAN, in his “Complete Captain,” cap. 22.  
HAKEWILL, in his “Apology for Divine Providence,” lib. iv. cap. xi. p. 546.

† DR.

*In templo plus quam sacerdos.*  
*In republicā plus quam rex.*  
*In sententiā dicendā plus quam senator.*  
*In judicio plus quam jurisconsultus.*  
*In exercitu plus quam imperator.*  
*In acie plus quam miles.*  
*In adversis perferendis, injuriisque condonandis, plus quam vir.*  
*In publicā libertate tuendā plus quam civis.*  
*In amicitiā colendā plus quam amicus.*  
*In convictu plus quam familiaris.*  
*In venatione, ferisque domandis, plus quam leo.*  
*In totā reliquā vitā plus quam philosophus.*

“ More than a priest he in the church might pass ;  
 More than a prince in commonwealth he was ;  
 More than a counsellor in points of state,  
 More than a lawyer matters to debate ;  
 More than a general to command outright,  
 More than a soldier to perform a fight ;  
 More than a man to bear affliction strong,  
 More than a man good to forgive a wrong ;  
 More than a patriot country to defend ;  
 True friendship to maintain, more than a friend ;  
 More than familiar sweetly to converse ;  
 And though in sports more than a lion fierce  
 To hunt and kill the game ; yet he express'd  
 More than philosopher in all the rest.”

The Jesuits made him to be the Antichrist, and allowed him three years and a half of reign and conquest.\* But had he lived that full term out, the true Antichrist might have heard further from him, and Rome's tragedy might have had an end, whose fifth and last act is still behind. Yet one Jesuit, more ingenuous than the rest, gives him this testimony, that, “ save the badness of his cause and religion, he had nothing defective in him which belonged to an excellent king and a good captain.”†

Thus let this our poor description of this king serve like a flat grave-stone, or plain pavement, for the present, till the richer pen of some Grotius or Heinsius shall provide to erect some statelier monument on his memory.

\* *Descriptio Belli Suecici per autorem anonymum*, p. 186.  
 PETRA SANCTA in his book against Du Moulin.

† SILVESTER

## CHAPTER XIX.

## THE PRINCE OR HEIR-APPARENT TO THE CROWN.

HE is the best pawn of the future felicity of a kingdom. His father's subjects conceive, they take a further estate of happiness in the hopes of his succession.

## MAXIM I.

*In his infancy he gives presages of his future worth.*—First-fruits are dispatched before, to bring news to the world of the harvest of virtues which are ripening in him. His own royal spirit prompts him to some speeches and actions, wherein the standers-by will scarce believe their own ears and eyes, that such things can proceed from him. And yet no wonder if they have light the soonest, who live nearest the East, seeing princes have the advantage of the best birth and breeding. The Gregorian account goes ten days before the computation of the English Calendar; but the capacity of princes goes as many years before private men's of the same age:—

*Anteuenit sortem meritis, virtutibus annos.*

“ His worth above his wealth appears,  
And virtues go beyond his years.”

## II.

*He is neither kept too long from the knowledge, nor brought too soon to the acquaintance with his own greatness.*—To be kept too long in distance from himself, would breed in him a soul too narrow for his place: on the other side, he need not to be taught his greatness too soon, who will meet with it every where. The best of all is when his governors open him to himself by degrees, that his soul may spread according to his age.

## III.

*He playeth himself into learning before he is aware of it.*—Herein much is to be ascribed to the wisdom of his teachers, who always present learning unto him (as angels are painted) smiling, and candy over his sourest studies with pleasure and

delight, observing seasonable time and fit method; not like many country-schoolmasters, who, in their instructions, spill more than they fill, by their over-hasty pouring of it in.

## IV.

*He sympathizeth with him that by a proxy is corrected for his offence.*—Yea, sometimes goeth further, and, above his age, considereth, that it is but an emblem how hereafter his people may be punished for his own fault. He hath read how the Israelites were plagued for David's numbering of them. (2 Sam. xxiv. 17.) And yet, withal, he remembereth how, in the first verse of the same chapter, “the wrath of the Lord was kindled against Israel, and he” (by permitting of Satan the instrument, 1 Chron. xxi. 1) “moved David to number them.” And as the stomach and vital parts of a man are often corroded with a rheum falling from the head, yet so that the disaffection of the stomach first caused the breeding of the same offensive distillation; so our young prince takes notice of a reciprocation of faults and punishments betwixt king and kingdom, (both making up the same body,) yea, that sometimes the king is corrected for the people's offences, that so *e contra*: indeed, in relatives neither can be well, if both be not.

## V.

*He is most careful in reading, and attentive in hearing, God's word.*—King Edward VI. (who, though a sovereign, might still in age pass for a prince) accurately noted the days, texts, and names of ministers, that preached before him. Next to God's word, our prince studies *Basilicon Doron*, that “Royal Gift,” which only king James was able to give, and only king James's son worthy to receive.\*

## VI.

*He is careful in choosing and using his recreation.*—Refusing such which in their very posture and situation are too low for a prince. In all his exercises he affects comeliness, or rather a kind of carelessness in show, to make his activities seem the more natural, and avoids a toiling and laborious industry; especially, seeing each drop of a prince's sweat is a pearl, and not to be thrown away for no cause. And princes are not to

\* King James wrote his *Basilicon Doron* as a political text-book for his son Charles I.—EDIT.

reach, but trample on recreations, making them their footstool to heighten their souls for seriousness, taking them in passage thereunto.

## VII.

*His clothes are such as may beseem his greatness.*—Especially when he solemnly appears, or presents himself to foreign ambassadors. Yet he disdains not to be plain at ordinary times. The late Henry, prince of Wales, being taxed by some for his too long wearing of a plain suit of Welsh frieze; “Would,” said he, “my country cloth will last for ever !” \*

## VIII.

*He begins to study his own country, and the people therein.*—What places are, what may be, fortified; which can withstand a long siege, and which only can make head against a present insurrection. If his land accosteth the sea, he considereth what havens therein are barred, whose dangerous channels fence themselves, and their rocks are their block-houses; what keys [quays] are rusty with sands and shelves, and what are scoured with a free and open tide, with what serviceable ships belong thereunto. He takes notice also of the men in the land, and disdains his soul should be blurred with unjust prejudices; but fairly therein writes every one in order, as they are ranked by their own deserts.

## IX.

*Hence he looks abroad to see how his country stands in relation to foreign kingdoms.*—How it is friended with confederates, how opposed with enemies. His little eyes can cast a sour glance on the suspicious greatness of any near borderer; for he conceives others weakened by their own distance. He considers foreign kingdoms and states, whether they stand on their own strength, or lean on the favour of friends, or only hang by a political geometry, equally poising themselves betwixt their neighbours, like Lucca and Geneva, the multitude of enemies’ mouths keeping them from being swallowed up. He quickly perceives that kings, how nearly soever allied, are most of kin to their own interest; and though the same religion be the best bond of foreign affection, yet even this breaks too often; and states, when wounded, will cure themselves with a plaster made of the heart-blood of their best friends.

\* SIR FRANCIS NETHERSOLE, in the Funeral Oration of him, p. 16.

## X.

*He tunes his soul in concert to the disposition of his king-father.*—Whatsoever his desire be, the least word, countenance, or sign given of his father's disallowance, makes him instantly desist from further pursuit thereof with satisfaction, in regard he understands it disagreeing to his Majesty's pleasure, and with a resolution not to have the least semblance of being discontented. He hath read how such princes who were undutiful to their parents, either had no children, or children worse than none, who repaid their disobedience. He is also kind to his brothers and sisters; whose love and affection he counteth the bulwarks and redoubts for his own safety and security.

## XI.

*When grown to keep a court by himself, he is careful in well-ordering it.*—The foresaid prince Henry's court consisted of few less than five hundred persons; and yet his grave and princely aspect gave temper to them all, so that, in so numerous a family, not so much as any blows were given.\*

## XII.

*With a frowning countenance he brusheth off from his soul all court-moths of flattery.*—Especially he is deaf to such as would advise him, without any—or any just—grounds, when he comes to the crown, to run counter to the practice of his father; and who, knowing that muddy water makes the strongest beer, may conceive the troubling and embroiling of the State will be most advantageous for their active spirits. Indeed, seldom two successive kings tread in the same path. If the former be martial, though the war be just, honourable, and profitable, yet some will quarrel with the time present, not because *it is bad*, but because *it is,†* and put a prince forward to an alteration. If the former king were peaceable, yet happiness itself is unhappy in being too common; and many will desire war, (conceited sweet to every palate which never tasted it,) and urge a prince thereunto. But our prince knows to estimate things by their true worth and value, and will not take them upon the credit whereon others present them unto him.

\* SIR WILLIAM CORNWALLIS, in the "Life of Prince Henry."      + 'Ael τὸν προφύτευτον. By the discontented, "the present times are always considered evil and disastrous."—EDIT.

## XIII.

*He conceives they will be most loving to the branch who were most loyal to the root, and most honoured his father.*—We read how Henry V., as yet prince of Wales, intending to bear out one of his servants for a misdemeanour, reviled sir William Gascoigne, Lord Chief Justice of the King's Bench, to his face in open court. The aged Judge considered how this his action would beget an immortal example, and the echo of his words, if unpunished, would be resounded for ever to the disgrace of majesty, which is never more on its throne than when, either in person or in his substitutes, sitting on the bench of justice ; and thereupon commanded the prince to the prison, till he had given satisfaction to his father for the affront offered. Instantly down fell the heart of great prince Henry, which (though as hard as rock) the breath of justice did easily shake, being first undermined with an apprehension of his own guiltiness. And king Henry IV., his father, is reported greatly to rejoice, that he had a Judge who knew how to command by—and a son who knew how to submit to—his laws. And afterward this prince, when king, (first conquering himself, and afterwards the French,) reduced his court from being a forest of wild trees, to be an orchard of sweet fruit; banishing away his bad companions, and appointing and countenancing those to keep the key of his honour who had locked up his father's most faithfully.

## XIV.

*He shows himself to the people on fit occasions.*—It is hard to say whether he sees or is seen with more love and delight. Every one that brings an eye to gaze on him, brings also a heart to pray for him. But his subjects in reversion most rejoice to see him in his military exercises, wishing him as much skill to know them as little need to use them, seeing peace is as far to be preferred before victory itself, as the end is better than the means.

## XV.

*He values his future sovereignty, not by impunity in doing evil, but by power to do good.*—What now his desire is, then his ability shall be ; and he more joys, that he is a member of the true church, than the second in the land. Only he fears to have a crown too quickly, and therefore lengthens out his father's days with his prayers for him, and obedience to him. And thus we leave Solomon to delight in David, David in Solomon, their people in both.

## CHAPTER XX.

## THE LIFE OF EDWARD, THE BLACK PRINCE.

EDWARD the Black Prince (so called from his dreaded acts, and not from his complexion)\* was the eldest son to Edward III., by Philippa his queen. He was born *anno* 1329, on the fifteenth of June, being Friday, at Woodstock in Oxfordshire. His parents, perceiving in him more than ordinary natural perfections, were careful to bestow on him such education in piety and learning, agreeable to his birth. The prince met their care with his towardliness, being apt to take fire and blaze, at the least spark of instruction put into him.

We find him to be the first Prince of Wales ; whose charter at this day is extant,† with the particular rites of investiture, which were the coronet and ring of gold, with rod of silver, worthily bestowed upon him ; who may pass for a mirror of princes, whether we behold him in peace or in war. He, in the whole course of his life, manifested a singular observance to his parents, to comply with their will and desire ; nor less was the tenderness of his affection to his brothers and sisters, whereof he had many.

But as for the martial performances of this prince, they are so many and so great that they would fill whole volumes. We will only insist on three of his most memorable achievements, remitting the reader for the rest to our English historians. The first shall be his behaviour in the battle of Cressy, against the French, wherein prince Edward, not fully eighteen years old, led the fore-front of the English.‡

There was a causeless report (the beginning of a rumour is sometimes all the ground thereof !) spread through the French army, that the English were fled ; whereupon the French posted after them, not so much to overcome, (this they counted done,) but to overtake them, preparing themselves rather to pursue than to fight. But, coming to the town of Cressy, they found

\* For king Edward his father called him his " Fair Son."—SPEED, p. 579.

† See the copy thereof in MR. SELDEN's "Titles of Honour," p. 595.   ‡ 1346, in the twentieth year of Edward III.

the English fortified in a woody place, and attending in good array to give battle. Whereat the French, falling from their hopes, were extremely vexed, (a fool's Paradise is a wise man's hell!) finding their enemies' faces to stand where they looked for their backs. And now both armies prepared to fight; whilst, behold, flocks of ravens and vultures in the air flew thither; bold guests, to come without an invitation! But these smell-feast birds, when they saw the cloth laid, (the tents of two armies pitched,) knew there would be good cheer, and came to feed on their carcasses.

The English divided themselves into three parts. The foremost consisting most of archers, led by the Black Prince; the second, by the earl of Northampton; the third, commanded by king Edward in person. The French were treble in number to the English, and had in their army the three kings, of France, Bohemia, and Majorca. Charles duke of Alençon, with John the Bohemian king, led the vanguard; the French king Philip, the main battle; whilst Amie duke of Savoy brought up the rear.

The Genoan archers, in the French fore-front, wearied with marching, were accused for their slothfulness, and could neither get their wages nor good words; which made many of them cast down their bows, and refuse to fight: the rest had their bow-strings made useless, being wetted with a sudden shower which fell on their side. But Heaven's smiling offended more than her weeping; the sun suddenly shining out in the face of the French, gave them so much light they could not see.

However, duke Charles, breaking through the Genoans, furiously charged the fronts of the English, and joined at hand-strokes with the prince's battle, who, though fighting most courageously, was in great danger. Therefore, king Edward was sent unto, (who hitherto hovered on a hillock, judiciously beholding the fight,) to come and rescue his son. The king, apprehending his case dangerous, but not desperate, and him rather in need than extremity, told the messenger, "Is my son alive? Let him die or conquer, that he may have the honour of the day."

The English were vexed, not at his denial, but their own request; that they should seem to suspect their king's fatherly affection, or martial skill, as needing a remembrancer to tell him his time. To make amends, they laid about them manfully, the rather because they knew that the king looked on, to testify

their valour, who also had the best cards in his own hand, though he kept them for a revie.\*

The victory began to incline to the English, when, rather to settle than get the conquest, the king (hitherto a spectator) came in to act an epilogue. Many English, with short knives for the nonce,† stabbed the bellies of their enemies, cut the throats of more, letting out their souls wheresoever they could come at their bodies; and to all such as lay languishing, they gave a short acquittance, that they had paid their debt to nature. This makes French writers complain of the English cruelty, and that it had been more honour to the general, and profit to the soldiers, to have drawn less blood, and more money, in ransoming captives, especially seeing many French noblemen, who fought like lions, were killed like calves. Others plead, that in war all ways and weapons are lawful, where it is the greatest mistake not to take all advantages.

Night came on, and the king commanded no pursuit should be made, for preventing of confusion; for soldiers scarce follow any order, when they follow their flying enemy; and it was so late, that it might have proved too soon to make a pursuit.

The night proved exceeding dark, as mourning for the blood shed; nor was the next morning comforted with the rising of the sun, but remained sad and gloomy, so that in the mist many Frenchmen lost their way, and then their lives, falling into the hands of the English: so that next day's gleanings, for the number, though not for the quality, of persons slain, exceeded the harvest of the day before. And thus this victory, next to God's providence, was justly ascribed to the Black Prince's valour, who there won and wore away the ostrich feathers, then the arms of John king of Bohemia, there conquered and killed, and therefore since made the hereditary emblems of honour to the Princes of Wales.‡

The battle of Poictiers followed ten years after; which was fought, September 19th, 1356, betwixt the foresaid Black Prince, and John king of France. Before the battle began, the English were reduced to great straits, their enemies being six to one. The French conceived the victory, though not in hand,

\* An old term employed in a game of cards. *To vie* is "to challenge;" and to *re-vie* is "to accept the challenge;" in its substantive form, therefore, it may be considered as tantamount in meaning to "a retort, a rejoinder." He kept them in reserve for use till a favourable opportunity of attack presented itself.—*EDIT.*

† For the occasion, the particular purpose.—*EDIT.*      ‡ *Vide CAMDEN'S Remains*, p. 344.

yet within reach ; and their arm must be put out, not to get but take it. All articles with the English they accounted alms ; it being great charity, but no policy, to compound with them. But what shall we say ? War is a game wherein very often that side loseth which layeth the odds. In probability, they might have famished the English without fighting with them, had not they counted it a lean conquest so to bring their enemies to misery, without any honour to themselves.

The conclusion was, that the French would have the English lose their honour to save their lives, tendering them unworthy conditions ; which being refused, the battle was begun. The French king made choice of three hundred prime horsemen to make the first assault on the English ; the election of which three hundred made more than a thousand heart-burnings in his army ; every one counted his loyalty or manhood suspected, who was not chosen into this number ; and this took off the edge of their spirits against their enemies, and turned it into envy and disdain against their friends.\*

The French horse charged them very furiously, whom the English entertained with a feast of arrows ; first, second, third course, all alike. Their horses were galled with the bearded piles, being unused to feel spurs in their breasts and buttocks. The best horses were worst wounded, for their mettle made one wound many ; and that arrow which at first did but pierce, by their struggling did tear and rend. Then would they know no riders, and the riders could know no ranks ; and, in such a confusion, an army fights against itself. One rank fell foul with another, and the rear was ready to meet with the front : and the valiant lord Audley, charging them before they could repair themselves, overcame all the horse. *Quâ parte belli*, saith my author, *invicti Galli habebantur*.† The horse being put to flight, the infantry, consisting most of poor people, (whereof many came into the field with conquered hearts, grinded with oppression of their gentry,) counted it neither wit nor manners for them to stay, when their betters did fly, and made post-haste after them. Six thousand common soldiers were slain, fifty-two lords, and seventeen hundred knights and esquires ; one hundred ensigns taken, with John the French king, and two thousand prisoners of note.

\* PAULUS AEMILIUS, in the "Life of King John," p. 286.  
which part of warfare, [in their cavalry,] the French were accounted to be invincible."—EDIT.

† "In

The French had a great advantage of an after-game, if they had returned again, and made head ; but they had more mind to make heels, and run away. Prince Edward, whose prowess herein was conspicuous, overcame his own valour, both in his piety, devoutly giving to God the whole glory of the conquest ; and in his courtesy, with stately humility entertaining the French prisoner-king, whom he bountifully feasted that night, though the other could not be merry, albeit he was supped with great cheer, and knew himself to be very welcome.

The third performance of this valiant Prince, wherein we will instance, was acted in Spain, on this occasion :—Peter king of Castile was driven out of his kingdom by Henry his base brother, and the assistance of some French forces. Prince Edward, on this Peter's petition, and by his own father's permission, went with an army into Spain, to re-estate him in his kingdom. For though this Peter was a notorious tyrant, (if authors in painting his deeds do not overshadow them, to make them blacker than they were,) yet our Prince, not looking into his vices but his right, thought he was bound to assist him. For all sovereigns are like the strings of a bass-viol, equally tuned to the same height ; so that, by sympathy, he that toucheth the one moves the other. Besides, he thought it just enough to restore him, because the French helped to cast him out ; and though Spain was far off, yet our Prince never counted himself out of his own country, whilst in any part of the world ; valour naturalizing a brave spirit through the universe.

With much ado he effected the business through many difficulties, occasioned partly by the treachery of king Peter, who performed none of the conditions promised ; and partly through the barrenness of the country, so that the Prince was forced to sell all his own plate, (Spain more needing meat than dishes !) to make provision for his soldiers ; but especially through the distemper of the climate, the air (or *fire* shall I say ?) thereof being extreme hot, so that it is conceived to have caused this Prince's death, which happened soon after his return. What English heart can hold from inveighing against Spanish air, which deprived us of such a jewel ? were it not that it may seem since to have made us some amends, when lately “the breath of our nostrils” breathed in that climate ; and yet by God's providence was kept there, and returned thence in health and safety.\*

\* An allusion to prince Charles's then recently hazardous and quixotic visit to Spain.—EDIT.

Well may this Prince be taken for a paragon of his age and place, having the fewest vices, with so many virtues. Indeed, he was somewhat given to women,—our chronicles fathering two base children on him ; so hard is it to find a Samson without a Delilah ! And seeing never king, or king's eldest son, since the Conquest, before his time, married a subject, I must confess his match was much beneath himself, taking the double reversion of a subject's bed, marrying Joan countess of Salisbury, who had been twice a widow. But her surpassing beauty pleads for him herein ; and yet her beauty was the meanest thing about her, being surpassed by her virtues. And what a worthy woman must she needs be herself, whose very *garter* hath given so much honour to kings and princes !

He died at Canterbury, June 8th, 1376, in the forty-sixth year of his age : it being wittily observed of the short lives of many worthy men : \* *Fatuos a morte defendit ipsa insulsitas ; si cui plus cæteris aliquantulum salis insit, (quod miremini,) statim putrescit.*†

\* SIR FRANCIS NETHERSOLE, in his "Funeral Oration on Prince Henry," p. 26.      + "The very folly of the foolish seems long to defend them from the attacks of death ; but if any one possesses a greater portion of wit or genius than those around him, (however the fact may surprise us,) he soon droops and dies."—  
EDIT.

## CHAPTER XXI.

## THE KING.

HE is a mortal God. This world at the first had no other charter for its being, than God's fiat: kings have the same in the present tense, "I have said, Ye are gods." We will describe him, first as a good man, (so was Henry III.) then as a good king, (so was Richard III.) both which, meeting together, make a king complete. For he that is not a good man, or but a good man, can never be a good sovereign.

## MAXIM I.

*He is temperate in the ordering of his own life.*—O! the mandate of the king's example is able to do much! Especially he is,

1. Temperate in his diet.—When Æschines commended Philip king of Macedon for a jovial man that would drink freely, Demosthenes answered, that this was a good quality in a spunge, but not in a king.\*

2. Continent in his pleasures.—Yea, princes' lawful children are far easier provided for than the *rabida fames*† of a spurious offspring can be satisfied; whilst their paramours and concubines (counting it their best manners to carve for themselves all they can come by!) prove intolerably expensive to a State. Besides, many rebellions have risen out of the marriage-bed defiled.

## II.

*He holds his crown immediately from the God of heaven.*—“The Most High ruleth in the kingdoms of men, and giveth them to whomsoever he will.” (Dan. iv. 17.) *Cujus jussu nascuntur homines, ejus jussu constituuntur principes,*‡ saith a Father.§ *Inde illis potestas unde spiritus,*|| saith another.¶ And whosoever shall remount to the first original of kings, shall lose his eyes in discovering the top thereof, as past ken, and touching the heavens. We read of a place in Mount Olivet, (wherein the last footsteps, they say, of our Saviour, before he ascended into heaven, are to be seen,) that it will ever lie open to the

\* PLUTARCH, in the “Life of Demosthenes.”      † “The ravenous hunger.”  
—EDIT.      ‡ “He at whose command they were created *men*, has by his fiat constituted them *princes*.”—EDIT.      § IRENÆUS, lib. v.      || “From the same Great Source they derive not only their power as kings, but their existence as mortals.”—EDIT.      ¶ TERTULLIANI *Apologia*, pp. 5, 6.

skies, and will not admit of any close or covering to be made over it, how costly soever.\* Far more true is this of the condition of absolute kings, who in this respect are ever *sub dio*,† so that no superior power can be interposed betwixt them and heaven. Yea, the character of loyalty to kings, so deeply impressed in subjects' hearts, shows, that only God's finger wrote it there. Hence it is if one chance to conceive ill of his sovereign, though within the cabinet of his soul, presently his own heart grows jealous of his own heart, and he could wish the tongue cut out of his tell-tale thoughts, lest they should accuse themselves. And though sometimes rebels (atheists against the God on earth !) may labour to obliterate loyalty in them, yet even then their conscience, the king's Attorney, frames articles against them ; and they stand in daily fear lest Darius LONGIMANUS ‡ (such a one is every king !) should reach them, and revenge himself.

## III.

*He claimeth to be supreme head on earth over the church in his dominions.*—Which his power, over all persons and causes ecclesiastical,

1. Is given him by God, who alone hath the original propriety thereof.
2. Is derived unto him by a prescription, time out of mind, in the law of nature, declared more especially in the word of God.
3. Is cleared and averred by the private laws and statutes of that State wherein he lives. For, since the Pope (starting up from being the emperor's chaplain to be his patron) hath invaded the rights of many earthly princes, many wholesome laws have been made in several kingdoms to assert and notify their king's just power *in spiritualibus*.

Well therefore may our king look with a frowning face on such whose tails meet in this firebrand, (which way soever the prospect of their faces be,) to deny princes' power in church-matters. Two Jesuits give this far-fetched reason why Samuel, at the feast, caused the shoulder of the sacrifice to be reserved and kept on purpose for Saul to feed on : " Because," say they, " kings, of all men, have most need of strong shoulders, patiently to endure those many troubles and molestations they shall meet with !" § especially, I may well add, if all their

\* *Nullo modo contegi aut concamerari potest, sed transitus ejus a terrâ ad cælum usque patet apertum.*—ADRICHOMIUS, *De Terrâ Sanctâ ex Hieronymo et aliis autoribus.*

† "In open day-light."—EDIT.

‡ "Darius, the long-handed."—EDIT. § ZANCHEZ and VELASQUEZ, in their Comments on the text, 1 Sam. ix. 24.

subjects were as troublesome and as disloyal as the Jesuits. The best is, as God hath given kings shoulders to bear, he hath also given them arms to strike, such as deprive them of their lawful authority in ecclesiastical affairs.

## IV.

*He improves his power to defend true religion.*—Sacerdotal offices though he will not do, he will cause them to be done. He will not offer to burn incense, with Uzziah ; yet he will burn idolaters' bones, with Josiah : I mean, advance piety by punishing profaneness. God saith to his church, “Kings shall be thy nursing-fathers, and their queens thy nursing-mothers.” (Isaiah xlix. 23.) And O ! let not princes, out of state, refuse to be so themselves, and only hire others ! it belonging to subjects to *suck*, but to princes to *suckle*, religion by their authority. They ought to command God's word to be read and practised ; wherein the blessed memory of king James shall never be forgotten. His predecessor in England restored the Scripture to her subjects ; but he, in a manner, restored the Scripture to itself, in causing the new translation thereof, whereby the meanest that can read English, in effect, understands the Greek and Hebrew : a princely act, which shall last even when the lease of time shall be expired. Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this translation shall be read in the whole realm, there shall also this that this king hath done be told in memorial of him.

## V.

*He useth mercy and justice in his proceedings against offenders.*—Solomon saith, “The throne is established by justice :” (Prov. xvi. 12 :) and Solomon saith, “The throne is upholden by mercy.” (Prov. xx. 28.) Which two proverbs speak no more contradiction, than he that saith that the two opposite side-walls of a house hold up the same roof. Yea, as some astronomers (though erroneously) conceived the crystalline sphere to be made of water, and therefore to be set next the *primum mobile*, to allay the heat thereof, which otherwise, by the swiftness of his motion, would set all the world on fire ; so mercy must ever be set near justice, for the cooling and tempering thereof. In his mercy, our king desires to resemble the God of heaven, who measureth his judgments by the ordinary cubit ; but his kindnesses, by the cubit of the sanctuary, twice as big : yea, all the world had been a hell without God's mercy.

## VI.

*He is rich in having a plentiful exchequer of his people's hearts.*—“Allow me,” said Archimedes, “to stand in the air, and I will move the earth.” But our king having a firm footing in his subjects' affections, what may he do? yea, what may he not do? making the coward valiant, the miser liberal! for love, the key of hearts, will open the closest coffers. Mean time, how poor is that prince, amidst all his wealth, whose subjects are only kept by a slavish fear, the jailor of the soul! An iron arm, fastened with screws, may be stronger, but never so useful, because not so natural, as an arm of flesh, joined with muscles and sinews. Loving subjects are most serviceable, as being more kindly united to their sovereign than those who are only knocked on with fear and forcing. Besides, where subjects are envassaled with fear, prince and people mutually watch their own advantages; which being once offered them, it is wonderful if they do not, and woful if they do, make use thereof.

## VII.

*He willingly orders his actions by the laws of his realm.*—Indeed, some maintain that princes are too high to come under the roof of any laws, except they voluntarily, of their goodness, be pleased to bow themselves thereunto; and that it is *corban*, “a gift and courtesy,” in them to submit themselves to their laws. But, whatsoever the theories of absolute monarchy be, our king loves to be legal in all his practices, and thinks that his power is more safely locked up for him in his laws, than kept in his own will; because God alone makes things lawful by willing them, whilst the most calmest princes have sometimes gusts of passion, which, meeting with an unlimited authority in them, may prove dangerous to them and theirs. Yea, our king is so suspicious of an unbounded power in himself, that, though the wideness of his strides could make all the hedge stiles, yet he will not go over but where he may. He also hearkeneth to the advice of good counsellors, remembering the speech of Antoninus the emperor: *Æquius est ut ego tot taliumque amicorum consilium sequar, quam tot talesque amici meam unius voluntatem.*\* And yet, withal, our king is careful to maintain his just prerogative, that as it be not over-stretched, so it may not be over-shortened.

\* “It is more in accordance with propriety, that I should adopt the advice of so many judicious friends, than that such a number of excellent friends should submit to follow my sole judgment and pleasure.”—EDIT.

Such a gracious sovereign God hath vouchsafed to this land. How pious is he towards his God, attentive in hearing the word, preaching religion with his silence, as the minister doth with his speech ! How loving to his spouse, tender to his children, faithful to his servants whilst they are faithful to their own innocence ; otherwise, leaving them to justice under marks of his displeasure ! How doth he, with David, walk “in the midst of his house” without partiality to any ! How just is he in punishing wilful murder ! so that it is as easy to restore the murdered to life, as to keep the murderer from death. How merciful is he to such who, not out of legier malice,\* but sudden passion, may chance to shed blood ! to whom his pardon hath allowed leisure to drop out their own souls in tears, by constant repentance all the days of their lives. How many wholesome laws hath he enacted for the good of his subjects ! How great is his humility in so great height ! which maketh his own praises painful for himself to hear, though pleasant for others to report. His royal virtues are too great to be told, and too great to be concealed. All cannot, some must, break forth from the full hearts of such as be his thankful subjects.

But I must either stay or fall. My sight fails me, dazzled with the lustre of majesty : all I can do is, pray :—

Give the king thy judgments, O Lord, and thy righteousness to the king’s son ! Smite through the loins of those that rise up against his majesty ; but upon him and his let the crown flourish ! O cause his subjects to meet his princely care for their good, with a proportionable cheerfulness and alacrity in his service ! that so thereby the happiness of church and state may be continued. Grant this, O Lord, for Christ Jesus’s sake, our only Mediator and Advocate ! Amen.

\* Malice prepense, fixed, or settled.—EDIT.

---

#### ADDITIONAL NOTE.

THE preceding paragraphs, containing a noble testimony to the royal virtues of king Charles I., were published in 1642, when that monarch’s cause was on the decline ; and were retained in every subsequent edition during the Inter-regnum, much to the injury of Fuller’s secular interest. They remind one of the following disinterested character of him, by that excellent Whig bishop, Dr. William Fleetwood, in a sermon preached on the 30th of January, 1710 :—

“ As for the praises that are bestowed upon king Charles, I know not who should envy them ; nor how a church-of-England minister can honestly decline them. He must know nothing of that prince’s history ; he must have little sense of justice, gratitude, or honour, by whom his memory is not held most precious. It were a small thing to say, no prince, (although his father was a very learned one,) but I will say, no private gentleman, did ever understand the constitution of our church

better, defend it with stronger arguments, adhere to it with more judgment, adorn it with better manners, live up to its good principles with more virtue, nor, in performance of its offices, show more devout and exemplary good behaviour, than did king Charles I. I will not, in these things, except the queen [Anne] upon the throne, nor that blessed saint in heaven, her sister. No prince did ever show more personal favour to its ministers, nor give more countenance and credit to its discipline and orders. And must I say, 'No prince but he did ever die in its defence,' to justify the high esteem we have him in? I may, because it is so true, that they who envy him the glory of that title, upon all accounts besides, will yet allow he fell a martyr for the church of England. Would not that church be, most deservedly, the hatred and reproach of all the world, that should be sparing of her praises and best incense (but let it ever be *unhallowed* incense) to his memory? Let them take heed, lest some degree of guilt be thought to make those people over-tender, who are soon offended with the praises of king Charles I. And let even us ourselves take heed, that such our praises may appear so well designed, and be managed with that good temper, sobriety, and modest truth, that they provoke those men to nothing but compunction, and relentings, and repentance, where these things are wanting; and both ourselves and them to the imitation of all those excellent good qualities, those civil virtues, and those religious, Christian graces, that made him appear so highly exemplary, both in life and death."

To afford the reader an opportunity of duly appreciating some other parts of the character of king Charles I, it may not be deemed improper in me to quote the following paragraph, from the recorded opinions of one for whose intentional impartiality I can personally vouch, and who has been blamed for his too strong bias in favour of that unhappy prince:—

"Flattered as the great pacifier of nations by those who needed his aid, and boasting in private of his successful cunning and policy, which he was pleased to call *king-craft*, his majesty king James I. imbibed very false ideas both of his own capabilities, and of his royal power and prerogatives, and infused, into the minds of his children, the same unmanageable notions, which seemed to descend, as if by generation, to the last of his unfortunate race. In forming a judgment concerning his successor, we are too apt to contemplate Charles as an insulated personage: but if we consider the high veneration in which he held his royal father's published sentiments both on religion and politics, instead of viewing him as the self-tutored despot, we shall rather pity him as an obedient son, who, from mistaken yet conscientious motives, endeavoured to carry into practical effect those tyrannical principles about the truth of which neither his royal parent, nor any of those around his person, would ever suffer him to hesitate.—Highly as I venerate the memory of that virtuous and unfortunate monarch, I am compelled to express my fears, that if his Majesty's arms had been finally successful against the Parliamentary forces, he would have been induced, by some of the most artful of his counsellors, to adopt the maxim which was defended by Amyraut, that, 'with regard to subjects, so eminent is the authority of supreme rulers, that it cannot be diminished even by the just solemnity of an oath.' His Majesty's sense of justice might, for a season, have prevented its adoption; but the powerful influence of the queen in the management of public affairs, and the decided predilection of many of the courtiers for French principles and manners, might have ultimately overpowered the dictates of his more upright judgment.—This character which I have sketched of Mary de Medicis was equally applicable to her daughter, queen Henrietta Maria; and the baneful effect of her interference in the government of England may be truly said to be distinctly perceptible in every subsequent act of the two kings, her immediate descendants, till the last of them was compelled to abdicate the throne of these realms, and to find an asylum in a foreign land. May this Protestant kingdom never again be cursed with Popish queen!"

EDIT.

# THE HOLY STATE.

## BOOK V.

CONTAINING

# THE PROFANE STATE.

### EXPLANATORY NOTE.

“THE Profane State,” according to Fuller’s own arrangement, constitutes, somewhat ominously, the fifth book of his “Holy State;” from which anomalous sequel, one might be induced to infer a wish on his part to warn the reader against “beginning in the Spirit, and ending in the flesh.” There are allusions, however, in the characters here portrayed which cannot be mistaken by those who have perused the history of the eventful period, (1642,) in which this book was published. Some of the female personages are described in terms of grossness certainly not greater than was the general tone of that age, but obviously with the intention that their portraits should produce a deterring effect and a repulsive abhorrence. Fuller’s observant eye perceived “the signs of the times,” and he contributed his share towards preventing or abating the evils which threatened to involve in one common ruin all the organized elements of civil and ecclesiastical government. Of the demoralizing tendency of such a violent and sweeping disruption of society, we who live in halcyon days can form no adequate conception. The Diaries of Evelyn and Pepys have afforded us a more complete and faithful detail of the bitter fruits of civil discord, than was furnished by any of the contemporary historians. But, as a truly graphic sketch, none can compete with the subjoined extract from the instructive auto-biography of the great lord Clarendon, which he wrote, for the information of his own family, some years after the Restoration; though, in ascribing the enormous mass of evil almost exclusively to Cromwell and the Parliamentarians, he must be regarded as personating the partisan rather than the philosopher.

Speaking of his youthful sovereign, Charles II., at the commencement of his reign, the noble historian says: “By degrees he unbent his mind from the knotty and ungrateful part of his business, grew more remiss in his application to it, and indulged to his youth and appetite that license and satisfaction that it desired, and for which he had opportunity enough, and could not be without ministers abundant for any such negotiations;—the young people thereof of either sex having been educated in all the liberty of vice without reprehension or restraint. All relations were confounded by the several sects in religion, which discountenanced all forms of reverence and respect, as relics and marks of superstition. Children asked not blessing of their parents; nor did they concern themselves in the education of their children, but were well content that they should take any course to maintain themselves, that they might be free from that expense. The young women conversed without any circumspection or modesty, and frequently met at taverns and common eating-houses; and they who were stricter and more severe in their comportment, became the wives of the seditious preachers or of officers of the army. The daughters of noble and illustrious families bestowed themselves upon the divines of the time, or other low and unequal matches. Parents had no manner of authority over their children, nor children any obedience or submission to their parents; but ‘every one did that which was good in his own eyes.’ This unnatural antipathy had its first rise from the beginning of the Rebellion, when the fathers and sons

engaged themselves in the contrary parties, the one choosing to serve the king, and the other the Parliament; which division and contradiction of affections was afterwards improved to mutual animosities and direct malice, by the help of the preachers and the several factions in religion, or by the absence of all religion: so that there were never such examples of impiety between such relations in any age of the world, Christian or Heathen, as that wicked time from the beginning of the Rebellion to the king's return; of which the families of Hotham and Vane are sufficient instances, though other more illustrious houses may be named, where the same accused fruit was too plentifully gathered, and too notorious to the world. The relation between masters and servants had been long since dissolved by the Parliament, that their army might be increased by the 'prentices against their masters' consent, and that they might have intelligence of the secret meetings and transactions in those houses and families which were not devoted to them; from whence issued the foulest treacheries and perfidiousness that were ever practised: and the blood of the master was frequently the price of the servant's villany.

"Cromwell had been most strict and severe in the forming the manners of his army, and in chastising all irregularities; insomuch that sure there was never any such body of men, so without rapine, swearing, drinking, or any other debauchery, but the wickedness of their hearts: and all persons cherished by him were of the same leaven, and to common appearance without the practice of any of those vices, which were most infamous to the people, and which drew the public hatred upon those who were notoriously guilty of them. But then he was well pleased with the most scandalous lives of those who pretended to be for the king, and wished that all his were such, and took all the pains he could that they might be generally thought to be such; whereas in truth the greatest part of those who were guilty of those disorders, were young men, who had never seen the king, and had been born and bred in those corrupt times 'when there was no king in Israel.' He was equally delighted with the luxury and voluptuousness of the Presbyterians, who, in contempt of the thrift, sordidness, and affected ill-breeding of the Independents, thought it became them to live more generously, and were not strict in restraining or mortifying the unruly and inordinate appetite of flesh and blood, but indulged it with too much and too open scandal, from which he reaped no small advantage; and wished all those who were not his friends should not only be infected, but given over to the practice of the most odious vices and wickedness.

"In a word, the nation was corrupted from that integrity, good-nature, and generosity that had been peculiar to it, and for which it had been signal and celebrated throughout the world; in the room whereof the vilest craft and dissembling had succeeded. The tenderness of the bowels which is the quintessence of justice and compassion, the very mention of good nature, was laughed at and looked upon as the mark and character of a fool; and a roughness of manners, or hardheartedness and cruelty, was affected. In the place of generosity, a vile and sordid love of money was entertained as the truest wisdom, and any thing lawful that would contribute towards being rich. There was a total decay, or rather a final expiration, of all friendship; and to dissuade a man from any thing he affected, or to reprove him for any thing he had done amiss, or to advise him to do any thing he had no mind to do, was thought an impertinence unworthy a wise man, and received with reproach and contempt. These dilapidations and ruins of the ancient candour and discipline were not taken enough to heart, and repaired with that early care and severity that they might have been; for they were not then incorrigible; but by the remissness of applying remedies to some, and the unwariness in giving a kind of countenance to others, too much of that poison insinuated itself into minds not well fortified against such infection; so that much of the malignity was transplanted, instead of being extinguished, to the corruption of many wholesome bodies, which, being corrupted, spread the diseases more powerfully and more mischievously."

EDIT.

# THE PROFANE STATE.

BY THOMAS FULLER, D.D.,

PREBENDARY OF SARUM.

“THE vile person shall no more be called liberal, nor the churl said to be bountiful.”  
(Isaiah xxxii. 5.)

“AND they shall teach my people the difference betwixt the holy and the profane.”  
(Ezekiel xliv. 23.)

THE COUNCIL OF THE STATE

# THE PROFANE STATE.

---

## THE FIFTH BOOK.

---

### CHAPTER I.

#### THE HARLOT.

THE harlot is one that herself is both merchant and merchandise, which she selleth for profit, and hath pleasure given her into the bargain, and yet remains a great loser. To describe her is very difficult ; it being hard to draw those to the life, who never sit still : she is so various in her humours and mutable, it is almost impossible to character her in a fixed posture ; yea, indeed, some cunning harlots are not discernible from honest women. Solomon saith, “ She wipeth her mouth ; ” and who can distinguish betwixt that which was never foul, and that which is cleanly wiped ?

#### MAXIM I.

*Her love is a blank, wherein she writeth the next man that tendereth his affection.*—Impudently the harlot lied : “ Therefore came I forth to meet thee, diligently to seek thy face, and I have found thee.” (Prov. vii. 15.) Else understand her, that she came forth to meet him, not *qua talis*, but *qua primus*, “ because he came first ; ” for any other youngster in his place would have served her turn. Yet see how she makes his chance her courtesy ; she affecting him as much above others, as the common road loves the next passenger best.

#### II.

*As she sees, so herself is seen by her own eyes.*—Sometimes she stares on men with full, fixed eyes ; otherwhiles she squints

forth glances, and contracts the beams in her burning-glasses, to make them the hotter to inflame her objects. Sometimes she dejects her eyes, in a seeming civility; and many mistake in her a cunning, for a modest, look. But as those bullets which graze on the ground do most mischief to an army; so she hurts most with those glances which are shot from a down-cast eye.

## III.

*She writes characters of wantonness with her feet as she walks.*—And what Potiphar's wife said with her tongue, she saith unto the passengers with her gesture and gait: “Come, lie with me;” and nothing angereth her so much, as when modest men affect a deafness and will not hear, or a dulness and will not understand, the language of her behaviour. She counts her house a prison, and is never well till gadding abroad. Sure, it is true of women what is observed of elm,—if lying within doors, dry, no timber will last sound longer; but if without doors, exposed to weather, no wood sooner rots and corrupts.

## IV.

*Yet some harlots continue a kind of strange coyness even to the very last.*—Which coyness differs from modesty, as much as hemlock from parsley. They will deny common favours, because they are too small to be granted. They will part with all or none; refuse to be courteous, and reserve themselves to be dishonest; whereas women truly modest will willingly go to the bounds of free and harmless mirth, but will not be dragged any farther.

## V.

*She is commonly known by her whorish attire.*—As crisping and curling, (making her hair as winding and intricate as her heart,) painting, wearing naked breasts. The face indeed ought to be bare, and the haft should lie out of the sheath; but where the back and edge of the knife are shown, it is to be feared they mean to cut the fingers of others. I must confess, some honest women may go thus, but no whit the honester for going thus. The ship may have Castor and Pollux for the badge, and notwithstanding have St. Paul for the lading. Yet the modesty and dispositions of honest matrons were more to be commended, if they kept greater distance from the attire of harlots.

## VI.

*Sometimes she ties herself in marriage to one, that she may the more freely stray to many.*—And cares not though her husband comes not within her bed, so be it he goeth not out beyond the four seas. She useth her husband as a hood; whom she casts off in the fair weather of prosperity, but puts him on for a cover in adversity, if it chance she prove with child.

## VII.

*Yet commonly she is as barren as lustful.*—Yea, who can expect that malt should grow to bring new increase? Besides, by many wicked devices she seeks on purpose to make herself barren, (a retrograde act to set nature back!) making many issues, that she may have no issue; and a hundred more damnable devices,

“ Which wicked projects first from hell did flow;  
And thither let the same in silence go,—  
Best known of them who did them never know ! ”

And yet, for all her cunning, God sometimes meets with her, who varieth his ways of dealing with wantons, that they may be at a loss in tracing him; and sometimes, against her will, she proves with child, which, though unable to speak, yet tells at the birth a plain story, to the mother’s shame.

## VIII.

*At last, when her deeds grow most shameful, she grows most shameless.*—So impudent, that she herself sometimes proves both the poison and the antidote, the temptation and the preservative; young men distasting and abhorring her boldness. And those wantons who, perchance, would willingly have gathered the fruit from the tree, will not feed on such fallings.

## IX.

*Generally she dies very poor.*—The wealth she gets is like the houses some build in Gothland, made of snow,\* no lasting fabric; the rather, because she who took money of those who tasted the top of her wantonness, is fain to give it to such who will drink out the dregs of her lust.

\* OLAUS MAGNUS, *De Rit.* Sept., lib. i. cap. 23.

## x.

*She dieth commonly of a loathsome disease.*—I mean that disease, unknown to antiquity, created within some hundreds of years, which took the name from Naples. When hell invented new degrees in sins, it was time for Heaven to invent new punishments. Yet is this new disease now grown so common and ordinary, as if they meant to put Divine justice to a second task to find out a newer. And now it is high time for our harlot, being grown loathsome to herself, to run out of herself by repentance.

Some conceive that when king Henry VIII. destroyed the public stews in this land, (which till his time stood on the Bank's Side on Southwark, next the Bear-garden, beasts and beastly women being very fit neighbours !) he rather scattered than quenched the fire of lust in this kingdom ; and, by turning the flame out of the chimney where it had a vent, more endangered the burning of the commonwealth. But they are deceived ; for, whilst the laws of the land tolerated open uncleanness, God might justly have made the whole State do penance for whoredom : whereas now that sin, though committed, yet is not permitted ; and though (God knows !) it be too general, it is still but personal.

## CHAPTER II.

## THE LIFE OF JOAN, QUEEN OF NAPLES.

JOAN, grandchild to Robert king of Naples, by Charles his son, succeeded her grandfather in the kingdom of Naples and Sicily, *anno* 1343; a woman of a beautiful body, and rare endowments of nature, had not the heat of her lust soured all the rest of her perfections, whose wicked life and woful death we now come to relate: \* and I hope none can justly lay it to my charge, if the foulness of her actions stain through the cleanest language I can wrap them in.

She was first married unto her cousin Andrew, a prince of royal extraction, and of a sweet and loving disposition. But he being not able to satisfy her wantonness, she kept company with lewd persons, at first privately; but afterwards she presented her badness visible to every eye, so that none need look through the chinks where the doors were open.

Now, Elizabeth queen of Hungary, her husband Andrew's mother, was much offended at the badness of her daughter-in-law, whose deeds were so foul she could not look on them, and so common she could not look beside them; wherefore, in a matronly way, she fairly advised her to reform her courses. For the lives of princes are more read than their laws, and generally more practised. Yea, their example passeth as current as their coin, and what they do they seem to command to be done. Cracks in glass, though past mending, are no great matter; but the least flaw in a diamond is considerable. Yea, her personal fault was a national injury, which might derive, and put the sceptre into a wrong hand.

These her mild instructions she sharpened with severe threatenings: but no razor will cut a stony heart. Queen Joan imputed it to age's envy; old people persuading youth to leave those pleasures which have left themselves. Besides, a mother-in-law's sermon seldom takes well with an audience of daughter-in-laws. Wherefore the old queen, finding the other past grace, (that is, never likely to come to it,) resolved no longer to punish

\* Taken out of BROVIUS, *Annal. Eccles.*, anno 1344; PETRARCHÆ *Epist.* lib. v.; et SUMMONTIUS, *Hist. Neopol.*, lib. iii.

another's sin on herself, and vex her own righteous soul ; but, leaving Naples, returned into Hungary.

After her departure, queen Joan grew weary of her husband Andrew, complaining of his insufficiency ; though those who have *caninum appetitum* are not competent judges what is sufficient food. And she caused her husband, in the city of Aversa, to be hung upon a beam and strangled in the night-time, and then threw out his corpse into a garden, where it lay some days unburied.

There goes a story, that this Andrew, on a day, coming into the queen's chamber, and finding her twisting a thick string of silk and silver, demanded of her for what purpose she made it. She answered, "To hang you in it ! " \* which he then little believed, the rather because those who intend such mischief never speak of it before. But such blows in jest-earnest are most dangerous, which one can neither receive in love, nor refuse in anger.

Indeed, she sought in vain to colour the business, and to divert the suspicion of the murder from herself, because all the world saw that she inflicted no punishment on the actors of it, who were in her power. And in such a case, when a murder is generally known, the sword of the magistrate cannot stand neuter, but doth justify what it doth not punish.

Besides, his corpse was not cold before she was hot in a new love, and married Lewis prince of Tarentum, one of the most beautiful men in the world. But it was hard for her to please her love and her lust in the same person. This prince wasted the state of his body to pay her the conjugal debt, which she extorted beyond all modesty or reason, so unquenchable was the wild-fire of her wantonness.

After his death, she (hating widowhood as much as nature doth *vacuum*) married James king of Majorca, and commonly styled prince of Calabria. Some say he died of a natural death ; others, that she beheaded him for lying with another woman ; who would suffer none to be dishonest but herself ; others, that he was unjustly put to death, and forced to change worlds, that she might change husbands.

Her fourth husband was Otho of Brunswick ; who came a commander out of Germany, with a company of soldiers, and performed excellent service in Italy. A good soldier he was, and it was not the least part of his valour to adventure on so

\* *COLLENUSIUS, Regn. Neopol., lib. v.*

skittish a beast : but he hoped to feast his hungry fortune on this reversion. By all four husbands she had no children ; either because the drought of her wantonness parched the fruit of her womb ; or else because provident nature prevented a generation of monsters from her.

By this time her sins were almost hoarse with crying to Heaven for revenge. They mistake who think Divine Justice sleepeth, when it winks for a while at offenders. Hitherto she had kept herself in a whole skin, by the rents which were in the church of Rome. For, there being a long time a schism betwixt two Popes, Urban and Clement, she so poised herself between them both, that she escaped unpunished. This is that queen Joan that gave Avignon in France (yet under a pretence of sale) to Pope Urban and his successors : the stomach of his Holiness not being so squeamish, but that he would take a good alms from dirty hands. It may make the chastity of Rome suspicioius with the world, that she hath had so good fortune to be a gainer by harlots.

But see now how Charles prince of Dyrrachium, being next of kin to prince Andrew that was murdered, comes out of Hungary with an army into Naples, to revenge his uncle's blood. He was received without resistance of any, his very name being a petard to make all the city-gates fly open where he came. Out issues Otho the queen's husband, with an army of men out of Naples, and most stoutly bids him battle, but is overthrown ; yet was he suffered fairly to depart the kingdom, dismissed with this commendation,—that never a more valiant knight fought in defence of a more vicious lady.

Queen Joan, finding it now in vain to bend her fist, fell to bowing of her knees ; and having an excellent command of all her passions, save her lust, fell down flat before Charles the Conqueror, and submitted herself. "Hitherto," said she, "I have esteemed thee in place of a son ; but, seeing God will have it so, hereafter I shall acknowledge thee for my lord." Charles knew well that necessity, her secretary, indited her speech for her, which came little from her heart ; yet, to show that he had as plentiful an exchequer of good language, promised her fairly for the present. But mercy itself would be ashamed to pity so notorious a malefactor. After some months' imprisonment, she was carried to the place where her husband was murdered, and there accordingly hanged, and cast out of the window into the garden, whose corpse at last was buried in the nunnery of St. Clare.

## CHAPTER III.

## THE WITCH.

BEFORE we come to describe her, we must premise and prove certain propositions, whose truth may otherwise be doubted of.

1. *Formerly there were witches.*—Otherwise God's law had fought against a shadow: “Thou shalt not suffer a witch to live.” (Exod. xxii. 18.) Yea, we read how king Saul, who had formerly scoured witches out of all Israel, afterwards drank a draught of that puddle himself.

2. *There are witches for the present, though those night-birds fly not so frequently in flocks, since the light of the Gospel.*—Some ancient arts and mysteries are said to be lost; but, sure, the devil will not wholly let down any of his gainful trades. There be many witches at this day in Lapland, who sell winds to mariners for money; (and must they not needs go whom the devil drives?) though we are not bound to believe the old story of Ericus king of Swedeland, who had a cap, and, as he turned it, the wind he wished for would blow on that side.\*

3. *It is very hard to prove a witch.*—Infernal contracts are made without witnesses. She that in presence of others will compact with the devil, deserves to be hanged for her folly, as well as impiety.

4. *Many are unjustly accused for witches.*—Sometimes out of ignorance of natural—and misapplying of supernatural—causes; sometimes out of their neighbours' mere malice; and the suspicion is increased if the party accused be notoriously ill-favoured: whereas deformity alone is no more argument to make her a witch, than handsomeness had been evidence to prove her a harlot; sometimes out of their own causeless confession, being brought before a magistrate, they acknowledge themselves to be witches, being themselves rather bewitched with fear, or deluded with fancy. But the self-accusing of some is as little to be credited, as the self-praising of others, if alone, without other evidence.

\* Therefore called *ventosus pileus*.—OLAUS MAGNUS, *De Gent. Septent.*, lib. iii. cap. 14.

5. *Witches are commonly of the feminine sex.*—Ever since Satan tempted our grandmother Eve, he knows that that sex is most liquorish to taste, and most careless to swallow, his baits. \* *Nescio quod habet muliebre nomen semper cum sacris.*† If they light well, they are inferior to few men in piety; if ill, superior to all in superstition.

6. *They are commonly distinguished into white and black witches.*—*White*, I dare not say “good,” witches (for “woe be to him that calleth evil good!”) heal those that are hurt, and help them to lost goods. But better it is to lap one’s pottage like a dog, than to eat it mannerly with a spoon of the devil’s giving. *Black* witches hurt and do mischief. But in deeds of darkness there is no difference of colours: the white and the black are both guilty alike in compounding with the devil. And now we come to see by what degrees people arrive at this height of profaneness.

#### MAXIM I.

*At the first she is only ignorant, and very malicious.*—She hath usually a bad face, and a worse tongue, given to railing and cursing, as if constantly bred on Mount Ebal; yet speaking, perchance, worse than she means, though meaning worse than she should. And as the harmless wapping ‡ of a cursed cur may stir up a fierce mastiff to the worrying of sheep; so, on her cursing, the devil may take occasion by God’s permission to do mischief, without her knowledge, and perchance against her will.

#### II.

*Some have been made witches by endeavouring to defend themselves against witchcraft.*§—For, fearing some suspected witch should hurt them, they fence themselves with the devil’s shield against the devil’s sword, put on his “whole armour,” beginning to use spells and charms to safeguard themselves. The art is quickly learnt to which nothing but credulity and practice is required; and they often fall from defending themselves to offending of others, especially the devil not being dainty of his company, where he finds welcome; and being invited once, he haunts ever after.

\* *FULGENTIUS, in Sermonibus.*

† “The name of *WOMAN* has always had a sort of undefinable connexion with sacred things.”—*EDIT.*

‡ *Wapping*, like our old word *whiffing*, seems to have been a provincial term for “the yelping” or “barking” of a cur.—*EDIT.*

§ *Multi dum vitare student quæ vitanda non sunt, fugâ vanâ superstitionis superstitioni flunt.*—*CARDANUS, De Subtil.*, lib. viii. p. 924.

## III.

*She begins at first with doing tricks, rather strange than hurtful.*—Yea, some of them are pretty and pleasing. But it is dangerous to gather flowers that grow on the banks of the pit of hell, for fear of falling in ; yea, they who play with the devil's rattles, will be brought by degrees to wield his sword, and from making of sport they come to doing of mischief.

## IV.

*At last she indents downright with the devil.*—He is to find her some toys for a time, and to have her soul in exchange. At the first, (to give the devil his due,) he observes the agreement to keep up his credit, else none would trade with him ; though at last he either deceives her with an equivocation, or at some other small hole this serpent winds out himself, and breaks the covenants. And where shall she, poor wretch, sue the forfeited bond ? In heaven she neither can nor dare appear ; on earth she is hanged, if the contract be proved ; in hell her adversary is judge, and it is woful to appeal from the devil to the devil. But, for a while, let us behold her in her supposed felicity.

## V.

*She taketh her free progress from one place to another.*—Sometimes the devil doth locally transport her : but he will not be her constant hackney, to carry such luggage about, but often-times, to save portage, deludes her brains in her sleep ; so that they brag of long journeys, whose heads never travelled from their bolsters. These, with Drake, sail about the world ; but it is on an ocean of their own fancies, and in a ship of the same. They boast of brave banquets they have been at, but they would be very lean should they eat no other meat. Others will persuade, if any list to believe, that by a witch-bridle they can make a fair of horses of an acre of besom-weed. O silly souls ! O subtle Satan, that deceived them !

## VI.

*With strange figures and words she summons the devils to attend her.*—Using a language which God never made at the confusion of tongues, and an interpreter must be fetched from hell to expound it. With these, or Scripture abused, the devil is ready at her service. Who would suppose that roaring lion could so finely act the spaniel ? One would think he were too old to suck, and yet he will do that also for advantage.

## VII.

*Sometimes she enjoins him to do more for her than he is able.*—As to wound those whom God's providence doth arm, or to break through the tents of blessed angels, to hurt one of God's saints. Here Satan is put to his shifts, and his wit must help him where his power fails: he either excuseth it, or seemingly performs it, lengthening his own arm by the dimness of her eye, and presenting the seeming bark of that tree which he cannot bring.

## VIII.

*She lives commonly but very poor.*—Methinks she should bewitch to herself a golden mine, at least good meat, and whole clothes. But it is as rare to see one of her profession, as a hangman, in a whole suit. Is the possession of the devil's favour here no better? Lord! what is the reversion of it hereafter?

## IX.

*When arraigned for her life, the devil leaves her to the law, to shift for herself.*—He hath worn out all his shoes in her former service, and will not now go barefoot to help her; and the circle of the halter is found to be too strong for all her spirits. Yea, Zoroastes himself, the first inventor of magic, (though he laughed at his birth,) led a miserable life, and died a woful death in banishment.\* We will give a double example of a witch: First, of a real one, out of the Scripture, because it shall be above all exception; and then of one deeply suspected, out of our chronicles.

\* *PLINIUS*, lib. iii. cap. 1.

## CHAPTER IV.

## THE WITCH OF ENDOR.\*

HER proper name we neither find, nor need curiously inquire: without it, she is described enough for our knowledge, too much for her shame.

King Saul had banished all witches and sorcerers out of Israel; but no besom can sweep so clean, as to leave no crum of dust behind it. This witch of Endor still keeps herself safe in the land. God hath "his remnant," where saints are cruelly persecuted; Satan also his remnant, where offenders are severely prosecuted, and (if there were no more) the whole species of witches is preserved in this *individuum*, till more be provided.

It happened now, that king Saul, being ready to fight with the Philistines, was in great distress, because God answered him not concerning the success of the battle. With the silent, he will be silent: Saul gave no real answer in his obedience to God's commands, God will give no vocal answer to Saul's requests.

Men's minds are naturally ambitious to know things to come: Saul is restless to know the issue of the fight. Alas! what needed he to set his teeth on edge with the sourness of that bad tidings, who soon after was to have his belly full thereof?

He said to his servants, "Seek me out" (no wonder she was such a jewel to be sought for!) "one with a familiar spirit." Which was accordingly performed, and Saul came to her in a disguise. Formerly Samuel told him, that his "disobedience was as witchcraft;" now Saul falls from the like to the same, and tradeth with witches indeed, (the receiver is as bad as the thief!) and at his request she raiseth up Samuel to come unto him.

"What! true Samuel?" It is above Satan's power to degrade a saint from glory, though for a moment: since his own fall thence, he could fetch none from heaven. "Or was it only the true body of Samuel?" No; the precious ashes of

\* 1 Sam. xxviii.

the saints (the pawn for the return of their souls !) are locked up safe in the cabinet of their graves, and the devil hath no key unto it. “Or, lastly, was it his seeming body?” He that could not counterfeit the least and worst of worms, (Exodus viii. 18,) could he dissemble the shape of one of the best and greatest of men?

Yet this is most probable, seeing Satan could change himself into an angel of light, and God gives him more power at some times than at other. However, we will not be too peremptory herein, and build standing structures of bold assertions on so uncertain a foundation: rather, with the Rechabites, we will live in tents of conjectures, which, on better reason, we may easily alter and remove.

The devil’s speech looks backward and forward, relates and foretells. The historical part thereof is easy, recounting God’s special favours to Saul, and his ingratitude to God, and the matter thereof very pious. “Not every one that saith, Lord, Lord!” (whether to him or of him !) “shall enter into the kingdom of heaven.” For Satan here useth the Lord’s name six times in four verses. The prophetical part of his speech is harder, how he could foretell, “To-morrow shalt thou and thy sons be with me.” “What! with me, true Samuel, in heaven?” That was too good a place (will some say) for Saul. “Or with me, true Satan, in hell?” That was too bad a place for Jonathan. “What then?” With me, pretended Samuel, in *ᾅδη* [hades] “in the state of the dead.”

But how came the witch or Satan by this knowledge? Surely, that ugly monster never looked his face in that beautiful glass of the Trinity, which (as some will have it) represents things to the blessed angels. No doubt, then, he gathered it by experimental collection, who, having kept an exact ephemerides of all actions for more than five thousand years together, can thereby make a more than probable guess of future contingents; the rather, because accidents in this world are not so much new as renewed. Besides, he saw it in the natural causes,—in the strength of the Philistines, and weakness of the Israelitish army, and in David’s ripeness to succeed Saul in the throne. Perchance, as vultures are said to smell the earthliness of a dying corpse; so this bird of prey resented\*

\* *To resent*, from the Latin *sentio*, “to feel,” and *re* intensive, in all its forms, was almost uniformly used by our old writers, down to the age of James II., in the signification of *feeling intensely* either in the mind or through any one of the bodily senses. Our modern usage of the word *resentment*, in the sense of “strong anger

a worse than earthly savour in the soul of Saul,—an evidence of his death at hand. Or else we may say, the devil knew it by particular revelation; for God, to use the devil for his own turn, might impart it unto him, to advance wicked men's repute of Satan's power, that they who would be deceived should be deceived to believe, that Satan knows more than he does.

The dismal news so frightened Saul, that he fell along on the earth; and yet at last is persuaded to arise and eat meat, she killing and dressing a fat calf for him.

Witches generally are so poor they can scarce feed themselves. See here one able to feast a king. “That which goeth into the mouth defileth not.” Better eat meat of her dressing, than take counsel of her giving; and her hands might be clean, whose soul meddled with unclean spirits. Saul must eat somewhat, that he might be strengthened to live to be killed, as afterwards it came to pass. And here the mention of this witch in Scripture vanisheth away, and we will follow her no farther. If afterwards she escaped the justice of man, God's judgment, without her repentance, hath long since overtaken her.

on account of some affront or injury received,” it will be perceived, is but confining what was formerly a general term to a more restricted meaning. *Resented*, in this sentence, has no reference whatever to the word *scent*, but retains the ancient meaning of *felt a strong and unearthly savour*.—**EDIT.**

## CHAPTER V.

## THE LIFE OF JOAN OF ARC.

JOAN OF ARC was born in a village called Domremy [Droimy] upon the Marches of Bar, near to Vaucouleurs. Her parents, James of Arc and Isabel, were very poor people, and brought her up to keep sheep: where for a while we will leave her, and come to behold the miserable estate of the kingdom of France wherein she lived.

In her time Charles VII. was the distressed French king, having only two entire provinces left him, Gascony and Languedoc; and his enemies were *about* them, and *in* all the rest, which were possessed by the English, under their young king Henry VI., and his aged generals, the duke of Bedford and the earls of Salisbury and Suffolk. Besides, they had besieged the city of Orleans, and brought it to that pass, that the highest hopes of those therein was, to yield on good terms.

Matters standing in this woful case, three French noblemen projected with themselves, to make a cordial for the consumption of the spirits of their king and countrymen.\* But this seemed a great difficulty to perform, the French people being so much dejected; and when men's hearts are once down, it is hard to fasten any pullies to them to draw them up. However, they resolved to pitch upon some project out of the ordinary road of accidents, to elevate the people's fancies thereby, knowing that men's fancies easily slip off from smooth and common things, but are quickly catched and longest kept in such plots as have odd angles, and strange unusual corners in them.

Hereupon, they resolved to set up the aforesaid Joan of Arc, to make her pretend that she had a revelation from heaven, to be the leader of an army, to drive all the English out of France: and she, being a handsome, witty, and bold maid, (about twenty years of age,) was both apprehensive of the plot, and very active to prosecute it. But other authors will not admit of any such complotting, but make her moved thereunto, either of her own, or by some spirit's, instigation.

By the mediation of a lord, she is brought to the presence of

\* GYRARD SEIGNEUR DU HAILIZAN, in "Charles VII."

king Charles, whom she instantly knew, though never seen before, and at that time of set purpose much disguised.\* This very thing some heighten to a miracle; though others make it fall much beneath a wonder,—as being no more than a scholar's ready-saying of that lesson, which he hath formerly learned, without book. To the king she boldly delivers her message, how that this was the time wherein the sins of the English, and the sufferings of the French, were come to the height, and she appointed by the God of heaven to be the French leader to conquer the English. If this opportunity were let slip, let them thank Heaven's bounty for the tender, and their own folly for the refusal; and who would pity their eternal slavery, who thrust their own liberty from themselves?

He must be deaf, indeed, who hears not that spoken which he desires. Charles triumphs at this news. Both his arms were too few to embrace the motion. The fame of her flies through France; and all talk of her, whom the divines esteem as Deborah, and the soldiers as Semiramis. People found out a nest of miracles in her education, that so lion-like a spirit should be bred amongst sheep, like David.

Ever after she went in man's clothes, being armed cap-à-piè, and mounted on a brave steed: and, which was a wonder, when she was on horseback, none was more bold and daring; when alighted, none more tame and meek; † so that one could scarce see her for herself, she was so changed and altered, as if her spirits dismounted with her body. No sword would please her, but one taken out of the church of St. Catherine in Fierebois in Tourain.‡ Her first service was in twice victualling of Orleans, whilst the English made no resistance, as if they had eyes only to gaze, and no arms to fight.

Hence she sent a menacing letter to the earl of Suffolk, the English general, commanding him, in God's and her own name, to yield up the keys of all good cities to her, the virgin sent by God to restore them to the French.§ The letter was received with scorn; and the trumpeter that brought it commanded to be burnt, against the law of nations, saith a French author,|| but erroneously: for his coming was not warranted by the authority of any lawful prince, but from a private maid, how

\* Though he had never been seen by her before, and was at that time, of set purpose, much disguised.—**EDIT.**

† GERSON, *lib. De mirabili Victoria* *eujsdam Pueræ, paulò post initium.*

‡ POLYDORE VIRGIL, in “Henry VI.” p. 471.

§ See the copy thereof in SPEED's “King Henry VI.,” p. 654.

|| DU SERRES in his “French History,” translated by Grimston, p. 326.

highly soever self-pretended, who had neither estate to keep—nor commission to send—a trumpeter.

Now the minds of the French were all afloat with this the conceit of their new general, which miraculously raised their spirits. Fancy is the castle commanding the city; and if once men's heads be possessed with strange imaginations, the whole body will follow, and be infinitely transported therewithal. Under her conduct, they first drive away the English from Orleans: nor was she a whit daunted, when shot through her arm with an arrow; but, taking the arrow in one hand, and her sword in another, "This is a favour," said she, "let us go on: they cannot escape the hand of God!"\* and she never left off, till she had beaten the English from the city. And hence this virago (call her now John or Joan!) marched on into other countries, which instantly revolted to the French crown. The example of the first place was the reason of all the rest to submit. The English in many skirmishes were worsted and defeated with few numbers. But what shall we say? When God intends a nation shall be beaten, he ties their hands behind them.

The French followed their blow, losing no time, lest the height of their spirits should be remitted: (men's imaginations, when once on foot, must ever be kept going, like those that go on stilts in fenny countries, lest, standing still, they be in danger of falling :) and so keeping the conceit of their soldiers at the height, in one twelve-month they recovered the greatest part of that the English did possess.

But success did afterwards fail this she-general: for, seeking to surprise St. Honorie's ditch near the city of St. Denis, she was not only wounded herself, but also lost a troop of her best and most resolute soldiers; and, not long after, nigh the city of Campiegne, being too far engaged in fight, was taken prisoner by the Bastard of Vendôme, who sold her to the duke of Bedford, and by him she was kept a prisoner a twelve-month in Rohan.

It was much disputed amongst the statists what should be done with her. Some held that no punishment was to be inflicted on her, because

*Nullum memorabile nomen  
Fæmineâ in paenâ.*

"Cruelty to a woman  
Brings honour unto no man."

Besides, putting her to death would render all Englishmen guilty, who should hereafter be taken prisoners by the French. Her former valour deserved praise, her present misery deserved pity; captivity being no ill action, but ill success. Let them rather allow her an honourable pension, and so make her valiant deeds their own by rewarding them. However, she ought not to be put to death; for if the English would punish her, they could not more disgrace her than with life; to let her live, though in a poor, mean way, and then she would be the best confutation of her own glorious prophecies. Let them make her the laundress to the English—who was the leader to the French—army.

Against these arguments necessity of State was urged,—a reason above all reason; it being in vain to dispute whether that *may* be done which *must* be done. For, the French superstition of her could not be reformed except the idol was destroyed; and it would spoil the French puppet-plays in this nature for ever after, by making her an example. Besides, she was no prisoner of war, but a prisoner of justice, deserving death for her witchcraft and whoredoms; whereupon she was burnt at Rohan, July 6th, 1461, not without the aspersion of cruelty on our nation.\*

Learned men are in a great doubt what to think of her.† Some make her a saint, and inspired by God's Spirit, whereby she discovered strange secrets, and foretold things to come. She had ever an old woman who went with her, and tutored her;‡ and it is suspicious, seeing this clock could not go without that rusty wheel, that these things might be done by confederacy; though some, more uncharitable, conceive them to be done by Satan himself.

Two customs she had which can by no way be defended. One was her constant going in man's clothes, flatly against Scripture. Yea, mark all the miracles in God's word, wherein though men's estates be often changed, (poor to rich, bond to free, sick to sound, yea, dead to living!) yet we read of no old Æson made young, no woman Iphis turned to a man, or man Tiresias to a woman; but, as for their age or sex, where nature places them, there they stand, and miracle itself will not remove them. Utterly unlawful therefore was this Joan's behaviour, as

\* *Sententia post homines natos durissima.*—POLYDORUS VIRGILIUS, p. 477.

† GERSON, in the book which he wrote of her, after long discussing the point, leaves it uncertain, but is rather charitably inclined. ‡ SERRES, p. 325.

an occasion to lust; and our English writers say, that when she was to be condemned, she confessed herself to be with child, to prolong her life; but, being reprieved seven months for the trial thereof, it was found false.\* But grant her honest: though she did not burn, herself, yet she might kindle others, and provoke them to wantonness.

Besides, she shaved her hair in the fashion of a friar,† against God's express word, it being also a solecism in nature,—all women being born votaries, and the veil of their long hair minds them of their obedience, [which] they naturally owe to man. Yea, without this comely ornament of hair, their most glorious beauty appears as deformed as the sun would be prodigious without beams. Herein she had a smack of monkery, which makes all the rest the more suspicious, as being sent to maintain as well the friars, as the French crown. And if we survey all the pretended miracles of that age, we shall find, what tune soever she sung, still they had something in the close in the favour of friars, though brought in as by-the-by, yet, perchance, chiefly intended; so that the whole sentence was made for the parenthesis.

We will close the different opinions which several authors had of her, with this epitaph:—

“ Here lies Joan of Arc, the which  
 Some count saint, and some count witch ;  
 Some count man, and something more ;  
 Some count maid, and some a whore :  
 Her life 's in question, wrong or right ;  
 Her death 's in doubt, by laws or might.  
 O innocence, take heed of it,  
 How thou too near to guilt dost sit.  
 (Meantime France a wonder saw,  
 A woman rule 'gainst Salic law.)  
 But, reader, be content to stay  
 Thy censure till the judgment-day :  
 Then shalt thou know, and not before,  
 Whether saint, witch, man, maid, or whore ! ”

Some conceive that the English conquests, being come to the vertical point, would have decayed of themselves, had this woman never been set up, who now reaps the honour hereof as her action; though, thus, a very child may seem to turn the waves of the sea with his breath, if casually blowing on them at that very instant when the tide is to turn of itself. Sure, after

\* POLYDORE VIRGIL, *ut prius.*

† GERSON.

her death, the French went on victoriously; and won all from the English, partly by their valour, but more by our dissensions; for then began the cruel wars betwixt the Houses of York and Lancaster, till the red rose might become white, by losing so much blood, and the white rose red by shedding it.

## CHAPTER VI.

### THE ATHEIST.

THE word "atheist" is of a very large extent: every polytheist is, in effect, an atheist; for he that multiplies a deity, annihilates it; and he that divides it, destroys it.

But, amongst the Heathen, we may observe, that whosoever sought to withdraw people from their idolatry was presently indicted and arraigned of atheism. If any philosopher saw God through their gods, this dust was cast in his eyes for being more quick-sighted than others, that presently he was condemned for an atheist; and thus Socrates, the Pagan martyr, was put to death *ως ἀθεος*.\* At this day three sorts of atheists are extant in the world:—

1. In life and conversation.—"God is not in all his thoughts;" (Psalm x. 4;) not that he thinks there is no God; but thinks not there is a God, never minding or heeding Him in the whole course of his life and actions.

2. In will and desire.—Such could wish there were no God or devil; as thieves would have no judge nor jailor. *Quod metuunt periisse expetunt.*†

3. In judgment and opinion.—Of the former two sorts of atheists, there are more in the world than are generally thought; of this latter, more are thought to be than there are; —a contemplative atheist being very rare, such as were Diagoras,‡ Protagoras, Lucian, and Theodorus, who, though carrying

\* JUSTINI MARTYRIS *Secunda Apologia pro Christianis*, p. 56.      † "They wish the destruction of that of which they are afraid."—EDIT.      ‡ *David cum dicit, Stultus dixit in corde, &c., videtur Diagoram prædixisse.*—AUGUSTINUS, *Contra Petilianum*, tom. 7, lib. iii. cap. 1.

"David's assertion, 'The fool hath said in his heart, *There is no God*,' seems to have been uttered as a prediction concerning Diagoras."—EDIT.

God in his name, was an atheist in his opinion. Come we to see by what degrees a man may climb up to this height of profaneness. And we will suppose him to be one living in wealth and prosperity, which more disposeth men to atheism than adversity. For, affliction mindeth men of a Deity, as those who are pinched will cry, "O Lord!" But much outward happiness, abused, occasioneth men, as wise Agur observeth, "to deny God, and say, 'Who is the Lord?'"

## MAXIM I.

*First, he quarrels at the diversities of religions in the world.*—Complaining how great clerks dissent in their judgments, which makes him sceptical in all opinions: whereas such differences should not make men careless to have any—but careful to have the best—religion.

## II.

*He loveth to maintain paradoxes, and to shut his eyes against the beams of a known truth.*—Not only for discourse, which might be permitted: for as no cloth can be woven except the woof and the warp be cast cross one to another, so discourse will not be maintained without some opposition for the time. But our inclining atheist goes further, engaging his affections in disputes, even in such matters where the supposing them wounds piety, but the positive maintaining them stabs it to the heart.

## III.

*He scoffs and makes sport at sacred things.*—This, by degrees, abates the reverence of religion, and ulcers men's hearts with profaneness. The Popish proverb, well understood, hath a truth in it: "Never dog barked against the crucifix, but he ran mad."

## IV.

*Hence he proceeds to take exception at God's word.*—He keeps a register of many difficult places of Scripture; not that he desires satisfaction therein, but delights to puzzle divines therewith; and counts it a great conquest when he hath posed them. Unnecessary questions out of the Bible are his most necessary study; and he is more curious to know where Lazarus's soul was, the four days he lay in the grave, than careful to provide for his own soul when he shall be dead. Thus is it just with God, that they who will not feed on the plain meat of his word, should be choked with the bones thereof.

But his principal delight is to sound the alarum, and to set several places of Scripture to fight one against another, betwixt which there is a seeming—and he would make a real—contradiction.

## V.

*Afterwards he grows so impudent as to deny the Scripture itself.*—As Samson, being fastened by a web to a pin, carried away both web and pin; so if any urge our atheist with arguments from Scripture, and tie him to the authority of God's word, he denies both reason, and God's word, to which the reason is fastened.

## VI.

*Hence he proceeds to deny God himself.*—First, in his administration; then, in his essence. What else could be expected but that he should bite at last, *who* had snarled so long? First, he denies God's ordering of sublunary matters. “Tush, doth the Lord see, or is there knowledge in the Most Highest?” making him a maimed Deity, without an eye of providence or an arm of power, and, at most, restraining him only to matters above the clouds. But he that dares to confine the King of heaven, will soon after endeavour to depose him, and fall at last flatly to deny him.

## VII.

*He furnisheth himself with an armory of arguments to fight against his own conscience.*—Some taken from

1. The impunity and outward happiness of wicked men.—As the Heathen poet, whose verses for me shall pass un-Englished:—

*Esse Deos credamne? fidem jurata fefellit,  
Et facies illi, qua<sup>ꝝ</sup> fuit ante, manet.\**

And no wonder if an atheist breaks his neck thereat, whereat the foot of David himself did almost slip, when he saw the prosperity of the wicked; (Psalm lxxiii. 2, 3;) whom God only reprieves for punishment hereafter.

2. From the afflictions of the godly.—Whilst, indeed, God only tries their faith by patience. As Absalom complained of his father David's government, that none were deputed to redress people's grievances; so he objects, that none righteth the wrongs of God's people, and thinks (proud dust!) the world would be better steered if he were the pilot thereof.

\* OVIDII *Amorum*, lib. iii. eleg. 3.

3. From the delaying of the day of judgment.—With those mockers, whose objections the apostle fully answereth. (2 Peter iii.) And in regard of his own particular, the atheist hath as little cause to rejoice at the deferring of the day of judgment, as the thief hath reason to be glad that the Assizes be put off, who is to be tried, and may be executed before, at the Quarter-Sessions: so death may take our atheist off, before the day of judgment come.

With these and other arguments he struggles with his own conscience, and long in vain seeks to conquer it, even fearing that Deity he flouts at, and dreading that God whom he denies. And as that famous Athenian soldier, Cynægirus,\* catching hold of one of the enemies' ships, held it first with his right hand, and, when that was cut off, with his left, and when both were cut off, yet still kept it with his teeth; so the conscience of our atheist—though he bruise it, and beat it, and maim it never so much—still keeps him by the teeth, still feeding and gnawing upon him, torturing and tormenting him with thoughts of a Deity, which the other desires to suppress.

#### VIII.

*At last he himself is utterly overthrown by conquering his own conscience.*—God in justice takes from him the light which he thrust from himself, and delivers him up to a seared conscience and a reprobate mind, whereby hell takes possession of him. The apostle saith, that a man may feel God in his works. (Acts xvii. 27.) But now our atheist hath a dead palsy, is past all sense, and cannot perceive God, who is every where presented unto him. It is most strange, yet most true, which is reported, that the arms of the duke of Rohan in France, which are *fusills* or *lozenges*, are to be seen in the wood or stones throughout all his country; so that break a stone in the middle, or lop a bough of a tree, and one shall behold the grain thereof (by some secret cause in nature) diamonded or streaked in the fashion of a lozenge.† Yea, the very same in effect is observed in England: for the resemblances of stars, the arms of the worshipful family of the Shugburies in Warwickshire, are found in the stones within their own manor of Shugbury.‡ But what shall we say? The arms of the God of heaven, namely, power, wisdom,

\* JUSTINUS, lib. ii.

† Because of these natural forms in wood and stone, it seems that from thence the dukes assumed their arms.

‡ CAMDEN'S

*Britannia*, in Warwickshire.

and goodness, are to be seen in every creature in the world, even from worms to men ; and yet our atheist will not acknowledge them, but ascribes them either to chance, (but could a blind painter limn such curious pictures?) or else to nature, which is a mere sleight of the devil to conceal God from men, by calling him after another name ; for what is *natura naturans* but God himself ?

## IX.

*His death commonly is most miserable.*—Either burnt, as Diagoras ; or eaten up with lice, as Pherecydes ;\* or devoured by dogs, as Lucian ; or thunder-shot and turned to ashes, as Olympius. However, descending impenitent into hell, there he is atheist no longer, but hath as much religion as the devil, to confess God and tremble :—

*Nullus in inferno est atheos, unde fuit :*

“ On earth were atheists many,  
In hell there is not any.”

All speak truth, when they are on the rack ; but it is a woful thing to be hell’s convert. And there we leave the atheist ; having dwelt the longer on his character, because that speech of worthy Mr. Greenham deserves to be heeded, that “ atheism in England is more to be feared than Popery.”†

To give an instance of a speculative atheist, is both hard and dangerous. *Hard* ; for we cannot see men’s speculations, otherwise than as they clothe themselves visible in their actions, some atheistical speeches being not sufficient evidence to convict the speaker an atheist. *Dangerous* ; for, what satisfaction can I make to their memories, if I challenge any of so foul a crime wrongfully ? We may more safely insist on an atheist in life and conversation ; and such a one was he whom we come to describe.

\* PAULUS DIACONUS, lib. xv.

† In his “ Grave Counsel,” p. 3.

## CHAPTER VII.

## THE LIFE OF CÆSAR BORGIA.

CÆSAR BORGIA was base son to Roderick Borgia, otherwise called Pope Alexander VI. This Alexander was the first of the Popes who openly owned his bastards;\* and whereas his predecessors, counting fig-leaves better than nothing to cover their nakedness, disguised them under the names of "nephews and god-sons," he was such a savage in his lust as nakedly to acknowledge his base children, and especially this Cæsar Borgia, being like his father in the swarthiness of the complexion of his soul.

His father first made him a cardinal, that thereby his shoulders might be enabled to bear as much church-preferment as he could load upon him. But Borgia's active spirit disliked the profession, and was "ashamed of the Gospel," which had more cause to be ashamed of him; wherefore he quickly got a dispensation to uncardinal himself.

The next hinderance that troubled his high designs was, that his eldest brother, the duke of Candia, stood betwixt him and preferment. It is reported also, that these two brothers justled together in their incest with their own sister Lucretia,† one as famous for her whoredoms, as her namesake had formerly been for her chastity.‡ The throne and the bed cannot severally abide partners, much less both meeting together as here they did. Wherefore Cæsar Borgia took order, that his brother was killed one night as he rode alone in the city of Rome, and his body cast into Tiber; and now he himself stood without competitor in his father's and sister's affection.

His father was infinitely ambitious to advance him, as intending not only to create him a duke, but also to create a dukedom for him, which seemed very difficult, if not impossible; for he could neither lengthen the land, nor lessen the sea, in Italy; and petty princes therein were already crowded so thick, there was not any room for any more. However, the Pope, by fomenting the discords betwixt the French and Spanish about

GUICCIARDINI's "History of Italy," lib. i. p. 10.  
p. 179.

‡ LIVIUS, lib. i.

+ *Idem*, lib. iii.

the kingdom of Naples, and by embroiling all the Italian states in civil dissensions, out of their breaches picked forth a large principality for his son, managed in this manner:—

There is a fair and fruitful province in Italy, called Romania, parcelled into several states, all holding as feodaries from the Pope, but by small pensions, and those seldom paid. They were bound also not to serve in arms against the church; which old tie they little regarded, and less observed, as conceiving time had fretted it asunder; soldiers generally more weighing his gold that entertaineth them, than the cause or enemy against whom they fight. Pope Alexander sent his son Borgia to reduce that country to the church's jurisdiction, but, indeed, to subject it to his own absolute hereditary dominion. This in short time he effected, partly by the assistance of the French king, whose pensioner he was, (and, by the French title, made duke Valentinois,) and partly by the effectual aid of the Ursines, a potent family in Italy.\*

But afterward the Ursines, too late, were sensible of their error herein, and grew suspicious of his greatness. For they, in helping him to conquer so many petty states, gathered the several twigs, bound them into a rod, and put it into his hands to beat them therewith. Whereupon they began by degrees to withdraw their help; which Borgia perceived, and, having by flattery and fair promises got the principal of their family into his hands, he put them all to the sword. For he was perfect in the devilish art of dealing an ill turn; doing it so suddenly, his enemies should not hear of him before; and so soundly, that he should never hear of them afterwards, either striking always surely or not at all.

And now he thought to cast away his crutches, and stand on his own legs, rendering himself absolute, without being beholden to the French king or any other. Having wholly conquered Romania, he cast his eyes on Hetruria, and therein either won to submission or compliance most of the cities, an earnest of his future final conquest, had not the unexpected death of his father, Pope Alexander, prevented him.

This Alexander, with his son Cæsar Borgia, intended to poison some rich cardinals; to which purpose a flagon of poisoned wine was prepared. But, through the error of a servant, not privy to the project, the Pope himself and Borgia

\* GUICCIARDINI, lib. iv. p. 237.  
cap. vii.

+ MACHIAVEL, in his "Prince,"

his son drank thereof, which cost the former his life, and the other a long languishing sickness.\*

This Cæsar Borgia once bragged to Machiavel, that he had so cunningly contrived his plots, as to warrant himself against all events. If his father should die first, he had made himself master of such a way, that, by the strength of his party in the city of Rome, and conclave of cardinals, he could choose what Pope he pleased, so from him to get assurance of this province of Romania to make it hereditary to himself. And if (which was improbable) nature should cross her hands, so that he should die before his father, yet even then he had chalked out such a course, as would insure his conquest to his posterity: so that, with this politic dilemma, he thought himself able to dispute against heaven itself.

But (what he afterwards complained of) he never expected, that, at the same time wherein his father should die, he himself should also lie desperately sick, disenabled to prosecute his designs, till one unexpected counterblast of fortune ruffled, yea, blew away, all his projects so curiously plaited. Thus three aces chance often not to rub; and politicians think themselves to have stopped every small cranny, when they have left a whole door open, for Divine Providence to undo all which they have done.

The cardinals proceed to the choice of a new Pope, whilst Borgia lay sick a-bed, much bemoaning himself; for all others, had they the command of all April showers, could not bestow one drop of pity upon him. Pius III. was first chosen Pope; answering his name, being a devout man: such black swans seldom swim in Tiber. But the chair of pestilence choked him within twenty-six days; and, in his room, Julius was chosen, or rather his greatness chose himself, a sworn enemy to Cæsar Borgia, who still lay under the physicians' hands, and had no power to oppose the election, or to strengthen his new-got dukedom of Romania. The state of his body was to be preferred before the body of his state; and he lay striving to keep life, not to make a Pope. Yea, the operation of this poison made him vomit up the dukedom of Romania, which he had swallowed before; and, whilst he lay sick, the states and cities therein recovered their own liberties formerly enjoyed.

Indeed, this disease made Borgia lose his nails, that he could never after scratch to do any mischief; and, being banished

Italy, he fled into Navarre, where he was obscurely killed in a tumultuous insurrection.

He was a man master in the art of dissembling, never looking the same way he rowed; extremely lustful, never sparing to tread hen and chickens. At the taking of Capua, where he assisted the French, he reserved forty of the fairest ladies to be abused by his own wantonness.\* And the prodigality of his lust had, long before his death, made him bankrupt of all the moisture in his body, if his physicians had not daily repaired the decays therein. He exactly knew the operations of all hot and cold poisons, which would surprise nature on a sudden, and which would weary it out with a long siege. He could contract a hundred toads into one drop, and cunningly infuse the same into any pleasant liquor, as the Italians have poisoning at their fingers' ends. By a fig, which restored Hezekiah's life, (2 Kings xx. 7,) he took away the lives of many. In a word, if he was not a practical atheist, I know not who was.

If any desire to know more of his badness, let them read Machiavel's "Prince," where Borgia is brought in as an instance of all villainy.† And though he deserves to be hissed out of Christendom, who will open his mouth in the defence of Machiavel's precepts, yet some have dared to defend his person; so, that he in his book shows not what princes should be, but what then they were; intending that work, not for a glass for future kings to dress themselves by, but only therein to present the monstrous face of the politicians of that age. Sure, he who is a devil in this book, is a saint in all the rest;‡ and those that knew him, witness him to be of honest life and manners:§ so that, that which hath sharpened the pens of many against him, is his giving so many cleanly wipes to the foul noses of the Pope and Italian prelacy.

\* GUICCIARDINI, lib. v. p. 260.  
Valentinum subjecere.—MACHIAVEL's "Prince," cap. xiii. p. 73.

† *Nunquam verebor in exemptionem*

"Notes on Livy," but especially his "Florentine History," savours of religion.  
§ BOISSARDUS, *Iconum Virorum illustrium* pars iii.

## CHAPTER VIII.

## THE HYPOCRITE.

By hypocrite we understand such a one as doth “practise hypocrisy,” (Isaiah xxxii. 6,) make a trade or work of dissembling: for otherwise, \* *Hypocriseorum macula carere, aut paucorum est, aut nullorum.*† The best of God’s children have a smack of hypocrisy.

## MAXIM I.

*A hypocrite is himself both the archer and the mark, in all actions shooting at his own praise or profit.*—And therefore he doth all things that they may be seen. What, with others, is held a principal point in law, is his main maxim in divinity,—to have good witness! Even fasting itself is meat and drink to him, whilst others behold it.

## II.

*In the outside of religion he outshines a sincere Christian.*—Gilt cups glitter more than those of massy gold, which are seldom burnished. Yea, well may the hypocrite afford gaudy facing, who cares not for any lining; brave it in the shop, that hath nothing in the warehouse. Nor is it a wonder if in outward service he outstrips God’s servants, who out-doeth God’s command by will-worship, giving God more than he requires; though not what he most requires, I mean, his heart.

## III.

*His vizard is commonly plucked off in this world.*—Sincerity is an entire thing in itself: hypocrisy consists of several pieces cunningly closed together; and sometimes the hypocrite is smote, as Ahab with an arrow, (1 Kings xxii. 34,) betwixt the joints of his armour, and so is mortally wounded in his reputation. Now by these shrewd signs a dissembler is often discovered: First, heavy censuring of others for light faults.

\* *HIERONYMUS, contra Pelag.*, lib. ii.; et *AUGUSTINUS, in eadem verba Sermo. 59, De Tempore.* † “It is the lot of very few, if of any at all, to be devoid of the blot of hypocrisy.”—*EDIT.*

Secondly, boasting of his own goodness. Thirdly, the unequal beating of his pulse in matters of piety; hard, strong, and quick, in public actions; weak, soft, and dull, in private matters. Fourthly, shrinking in persecution; for painted faces cannot abide to come nigh the fire.

## IV.

*Yet sometimes he goes to the grave neither detected nor suspected.*—If masters in their art, and living in peaceable times, wherein piety and prosperity do not fall out, but agree well together. Maud, mother to king Henry II., being besieged in Winchester Castle, counterfeited herself to be dead, and so was carried out in a coffin, whereby she escaped.\* Another time, being besieged at Oxford in a cold winter, with wearing white apparel she got away in the snow undiscovered.† Thus, some hypocrites, by dissembling mortification, that they are dead to the world, and by professing a snow-like purity in their conversations, escape all their life-time undiscerned by mortal eyes.

## V.

*By long dissembling piety, he deceives himself at last.*—Yea, he may grow so infatuated, as to conceive himself no dissembler, but a sincere saint. A scholar was so possessed with his lively personating of king Richard III., in a College-comedy, that ever after he was transported with a royal humour in his large expenses; which brought him to beggary, though he had great preferment. Thus the hypocrite, by long acting the part of piety, at last believes himself really to be such an one, whom at first he did but counterfeit.

## VI.

*God here knows, and hereafter will make hypocrites known to the whole world.*—Ottochar, king of Bohemia, refused to do homage to Rodolphus I., emperor, till at last, chastised with war, he was content to do him homage privately in a tent; which tent was so contrived by the emperor's servants, that, by drawing one cord, it was all taken away, and so Ottochar presented on his knees, doing his homage, to the view of three armies in presence.‡ Thus God, at last, shall uncase the closest

\* CAMDEN'S *Britannia*, in Hampshire.  
Domini 1141.

† MATTHEW PARIS, *n anno*

*PANTALEON, lib. de Illustribus Germanis in Vitâ Rodolphi Imperatoris*, part. ii. p. 285.

dissembler, to the sight of men, angels, and devils, having removed all veils and pretences of piety: no goat in a sheep-skin shall steal on his right hand at the last day of judgment.

---

## CHAPTER IX.

### THE LIFE OF JEHU.

JEHU, the son of Jehoshaphat, the son of Nimshi, was one of an active spirit, and therefore employed to confound the house of Ahab; for God, when he means to shave clear, chooses a razor with a sharp edge, and never sendeth a slug on a message that requireth haste.

A son of the prophets, sent by Elisha, privately anointed him king at Ramoth-Gilead; whereupon he was proclaimed king by the consent of the army. Surely, God sent also an invisible messenger to the souls of his fellow-captains, and anointed their hearts with the oil of subjection, as he did Jehu's head with the oil of sovereignty.

Secrecy and celerity are the two wheels of great actions. Jehu had both: he marched to Jezreel faster than fame could fly, whose wings he had clipped by stopping all intelligence, that so at once he might be seen and felt of his enemies. In the way, meeting with Jehoram and Ahaziah, he conjoined them in their deaths, who consorted together in idolatry. The corpse of Jehoram he orders to be cast into Naboth's vineyard, —a garden of herbs royally dunged, and watered with blood.

Next he revengeth God's prophets on cruel Jezebel, whose wicked carcass was devoured by dogs to a small reversion, as if a head that plotted, and hands that practised, so much mischief, and feet so swift to shed blood, were not meat good enough for dogs to eat. Then, by a letter, he commands the heads of Ahab's seventy sons, (their guardians turning their executioners,) whose heads, being laid on two heaps at the gate of Jezreel, served for two soft pillows for Jehu to sleep sweetly upon, having all these cor-rivals to the crown taken away.

The priests of Baal follow after. With a pretty wile, he fetches them all into the temple of their idol, where, having ended their sacrifice, they themselves were sacrificed. However,

I dare not acquit Jehu herein. In "holy fraud" I like the Christian- but not the sur-name thereof; and wonder how any can marry these two together in the same action, seeing, surely, the parties were never agreed. This I dare say, be it unjust in Jehu, it was just with God, that the worshippers of a false god should be deceived with a feigned worship.

Hitherto I like Jehu as well as Josiah; his zeal blazed as much. But, having now got the crown, he discovers himself as a dissembling hypocrite. It was an ill sign when he said to Jonadab the son of Rechab: "Come with me, and see my zeal for the Lord." Bad inviting guests to feed their eyes on our goodness! But hypocrites, rather than they will lose a drop of praise, will lick it up with their own tongue.

*Before he had dissembled with Baal; now he counterfeits with God. "He took no heed to walk in the way of the Lord God of Israel with all his heart."* Formerly his sword had two edges, one cut for God's glory, the other for his own preferment. He that before drove so furiously, whilst his private ends whipped-on his horses, now will not go a foot-pace in God's commandments. "He departed not from the golden calves in Dan and Bethel."

I know what flesh will object, that "this state-sin Jehu must commit to maintain his kingdom; for the lions of gold did support the throne of Solomon, but the calves of gold the throne of Jeroboam and his successors. Should he suffer his subjects to go up to Jerusalem thrice a year, (as the law of Moses commanded, Exodus xxxiv. 23,) this would un-king him in effect, as leaving him no able subjects to command. And as one in the Heathen poet complains:—

*Tres sumus imbellis numero,—sine viribus uxor,  
Laertesque senex, Telemachusque puer.*

‘Three weaklings we,—a wife for war too mild,  
Laertes old, Telemachus a child !’

so thrice a-year should Jehu only be king over such an impotent company of old men, women, and children. Besides, it was to be feared that the ten tribes going to Jerusalem to worship, where they fetched their God, would also have their king."

But faith will answer, that "God that built Jehu's throne without hands, could support it without buttresses, or being beholding to idolatry; and therefore herein Jehu, who would

needs piece out God's providence with his own carnal policy, was like a foolish, greedy gamester, who, having all the game in his own hand, steals a needless card to assure himself of winning the stake, and thereby loses all." For this deep diver was drowned in his own policy; and Hazael, king of Syria, was raised up by God to trouble and molest him. Yet God rewarded him with a lease of the kingdom of four successive lives; who, had he been sincere, would have assured him of a crown here and hereafter.

## CHAPTER X.

## THE HERETIC.

It is very difficult accurately to define him. Amongst the Heathen **ATHEIST** was, and amongst Christians **HERETIC** is, the disgraceful word-of-course, always cast upon those who dissent from the predominant current of the time. Thus those who in matters of opinion varied from the Pope's copy the least hair-stroke, are condemned for heretics.\* Yea, Virgilius, bishop of Saltzburgh, was branded with that censure, for maintaining that there were antipodes opposite to the then known world.† It may be, as Alexander, hearing the philosophers dispute of more worlds, wept, that he had conquered no part of them; so it grieved the Pope that these antipodes were not subject to his jurisdiction, which much incensed his Holiness against the strange opinion. We will branch the description of an heretic into these three parts:—

1. He is one that formerly hath been of the true church.—“They went out from us, but they were not of us.” (1 John ii. 19.) These afterwards prove more offensive to the church than very Pagans; as the English-Irish, descended anciently of English parentage, (be it spoken with the more shame to them, and sorrow to us!) turning wild, become worse enemies to our nation than the native Irish themselves.

\* *Hic videtur quod omnis qui non obedit statutis Romanæ sedis sit hereticus.* —  
GLOSSA, in C. nulli dist. 19, in verbo *Prostratus*. † JOH. AVENT.,  
lib. iii., *Annal. Boior.*

2. Maintaining a fundamental error.—Every scratch in the hand is not a stab to the heart; nor doth every false opinion make a heretic.

3. With obstinacy.—Which is the dead flesh, making the green wound of an error fester into the old sore of a heresy.

MAXIM I.

*It matters not much what manner of person he hath.*—If beautiful, perchance the more attractive of feminine followers: if deformed, so that his body is as odd as his opinions, he is the more properly entitled to the reputation of “crooked saint.”

II.

*His natural parts are quick and able.*—Yet he that shall ride on a winged horse to tell him thereof, shall but come too late, to bring him stale news of what he knew too well before.

III.

*Learning is necessary in him, if he trades in a critical error.*—But if he only broaches dregs, and deals in some dull, sottish opinion, a trowel will serve as well as a pencil to daub-on such thick coarse colours. Yea, in some heresies, deep studying is so useless, that the first thing they learn is, to inveigh against all learning.

IV.

*However, some smattering in the original tongues will do well.*—On occasion, he will let fly whole volleys of Greek and Hebrew words; whereby he not only amazeth his ignorant auditors, but also in conference daunteth many of his opposers, who, though in all other learning far his superiors, may perchance be conscious of want of skill in those languages, whilst the heretic hereby gains credit to his cause and person.

V.

*His behaviour is seemingly very pious and devout.*—How foul soever the postern and back-door be, the gate opening to the street is swept and garnished, and his outside adorned with pretended austerity.

VI.

*He is extremely proud, and discontented with the times.*—Quarrelling, that many beneath him in piety are above him in

place. This pride hath caused many men, who otherwise might have been “shining lights,” prove smoking firebrands in the church.

## VII.

*Having first hammered the heresy in himself, he then falls to seducing of others.*—So hard is it for one to have the itch, and not to scratch. Yea, Babylon herself will allege, that “for Sion’s sake she will not hold her peace.” The necessity of propagating the truth is error’s plea to divulge her falsehoods. Men, as naturally they desire to know, so they desire what they know should be known.

## VIII.

*If challenged to a private dispute, his impudence bears him out.*—He counts it the only error, to confess he hath erred. His face is of brass, which may be said either ever or never to blush. In disputing, his *modus* is *sine modo*;\* and, as if all figures (even in logic) were magical, he neglects all forms of reasoning, counting that the only syllogism which is his conclusion.

## IX.

*He slighteth any synod, if condemning his opinions.*—Esteeming the decisions thereof no more than the forfeits in a barber’s shop, where a gentleman’s pleasure is all the obligation to pay, and none are bound except they will bind themselves.

## X.

*Sometimes he comes to be put to death for his obstinacy.*—Indeed, some charitable divines have counted it inconsistent with the lenity of the Gospel, which is to expect and endeavour the amendment of all, to put any to death for their false opinions; and we read of St. Paul, (though the Papists paint him always with a sword,) that he only came “with a rod.” However, the mildest authors allow, that the magistrate may inflict capital punishments on heretics,† in cases of

1. Sedition against the state wherein he lives. And, indeed, such is the sympathy betwixt church and commonwealth, that there are few heresies, except they be purely speculative, (and

\* “His method is immethodical.”—EDIT.  
places,” *De Magistratu Polit.* p. 1047.

† GERARD’s “Common-

v, have heads without hands, or any practical influence at any time the violent maintainers of them may make impression in the State.

enmy against God, and those points of religion which ought to be believed.

of these, our heretic sometimes willingly undergoes and then, in the calendar of his own conceit, he canonizes for a saint, yea, a martyr.

## CHAP. XI.

### THE DONATISTS.

The Donatists were so called, because one planted the sect, (*anno 311*), the devil, by God's permission, the devil, by God's permission. Donatus, being one of the double Donatus, whereof the double parts and intolerable pride, raised a schism in Carthage against good Cecilian, the bishop there, whom he loaded unjustly with many crimes, which he was not able to prove; and, vexed with this disgrace, he thought to right his credit by wronging religion, and so began the heresy of Donatists.\*

His most dominative tenet was, that the church was perished from the face of the earth, the relics thereof only remaining in his party. I instance the rather on this heresy, because the reviving thereof is the new disease of our times. One Vibius in Rome was so like unto Pompey, *ut permutato statu Pompeius in illo, et ille in Pompeio, salutari possit*: † thus the Anabaptists of our days, and such as are Anabaptistically inclined, in all particulars resemble the old Donatists, abating only that difference which is necessarily required to make them alike.

The epithet of "rigid" I therefore do add, to separate the Donatists from themselves, who separated themselves from all other Christians. For there were two principal sides of them:

\* AUGUSTINUS, *ad Quod vult Deum.*

lib. ix. cap. 15. † "That if either of them at any time had assumed the attitude and position of the other, Vibius might have been easily mistaken for Pompey, and Pompey accosted as Vibius."—EDIT.

+ VALERIUS MAXIMUS,

First, the Rogatists, from Rogatus their teacher ; to whom St. Augustine beareth witness, that “they had zeal, but not according to knowledge.” These were pious people for their lives, hating bloody practices, though erroneous in their doctrine. The learned Fathers of that age count them part of the true church, and their brethren, though they themselves disclaimed any such brotherhood with other Christians.\* O ! the sacred violence of such worthy men’s charity, in plucking those to them which thrust themselves away ! But there was another sort of Jesuited Donatists, as I may say, whom they called Circumcellions, though as little reason can be given of their name as of their opinions, whom we principally intend at this time.†

Their number in short time grew not only to be considerable, but terrible. Their tenet was plausible and winning ; and that faith is easily wrought which teacheth men to believe well of themselves. From Numidia, where they began, they over-spread Africa, Spain, France, Italy, and Rome itself. We find not any in Britain, where Pelagianism mightily reigned ; ‡ either because God in his goodness would not have one country at the same time visited with a double plague ; or else because this infection was to come to this island in after-ages, furbished up under a new name.

Their greatest increase was under Julian the emperor. This apostate, next to no religion, loved the worst religion best, and was a professed friend to all foes of goodness. The Donatists, being punished under former Christian emperors, repaired to him for succour ; not caring whether it was an olive or a bramble they fled to, so be it afforded them shelter. They extolled him for such a godly man, (flattery and false doctrine go ever together !) “with whom alone justice did remain ;” § and he restored them their good churches again, and armed them with many privileges against Christians. Hereupon they raised a cruel persecution, killing many men in the very churches, mur-

\* *Ipsum fraternitatis nomen utinque Donatistis fastidiosum, est tamen orthodoxe erga ipsos Donatistas necessarium.*—OPTATUS, lib. iii. init.

“The name of BRETHREN, how scornfully soever rejected by the Donatists, is still necessarily employed towards them by the orthodox.”—EDIT.

† ST. AUGUSTINUS, in *Psalm cxxxii.*, *Quia circum cellas vagantur*, counts them so called ; which is rather his allusion than the true etymology.

“St. Augustine (on Psalm cxxxii.) counts them so called because they walk about their cells.”—EDIT.

‡ SIR HENRY SPELMAN’s “Councils,” p. 446. § *Quod apud eum solum justitia locum habet.*—AUGUSTINUS, *contra literas Petil.*, lib. ii. cap. 97.

dering women and infants, defiling virgins, or ravishing them rather,—for consent only defiles. God keep us from standing in the way where blind zeal is to pass ! for it will trample down all before it, and mercy shall as soon be found at the hands of prevailing cowards. What the Anabaptists did in Germany, we know ; what they would do here, had they power, God knows. The best security we have [that] they will do no harm, is because they cannot.

We come to set down some of their principal opinions. I say, “principal ;” for at last they did interfere with all heretics, Arians, Macedonians, &c. Ignorant zeal is too blind to go right, and too active to stand still : yea, all errors are of kin, at the farthest but cousins once removed ; and when men have once left the truth, their only quiet home, they will take up their lodging under any opinion which hath the least shadow of probability. We will also set down some of their reasons, and how they torture Scripture with violent interpretations, to wrest from it a confession on their side,—yet all in vain.

#### FIRST POSITION.

“That the true church was perished from the face of the earth, the remnants thereof being only *in parte Donati*, ‘in that part of Africa where Donatus and his followers were.’”\* The Anabaptists, in like manner, stifle God’s church by crowding it into their corner, confining the monarchy of Christ in the Gospel unto their own toparchy, and having a quarrel to the words in the Creed, “catholic church.”

THE DONATISTS’ REASONS.—It is said, “Tell me, O thou whom my soul loveth, where thou feedest, where thou makest thy flocks to rest in the South.” (Cant. i. 7.) By this the Donatists are meant : Africa, wherein they lived, was in the South.

CONFUTATION.—An argument drawn from an allegory is weak, except all the obscurities therein be first explained.† Besides, Africa Cæsariensis (where the Donatists were) was

\* AUGUSTINUS, *Contra Crescon.*, lib. ii. cap. 37.  
tissimè nitatur aliquid in allegoriâ positum, pro se interpretari, nisi habeat et mani-  
festâ testimonia quorum lumine illustrerentur obscura ?—AUGUSTINUS, *Epist.* 48,  
*ad Vincent.*, tom. ii.

† *Quis non impuden-*  
*tissimè nitatur aliquid in allegoriâ positum, pro se interpretari, nisi habeat et mani-*  
*festâ testimonia quorum lumine illustrerentur obscura ?—AUGUSTINUS, Epist.* 48,

“ Is it not a piece of the greatest impudence in any one, to attempt to give, to something contained in an allegory, an interpretation favourable to his own preconceptions, unless he can produce obvious testimonies, the clear light of which may illustrate the obscurities of the allegory ? ”—EDIT.

much more West than South from Judea. But God's church cannot be contracted to the chapel of Donatus, to which God himself (the truest Surveyor) alloweth larger bounds: "Ask of me, and I will give thee the Heathen for thine inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the earth for thy possession." (Psalm ii. 8.) Now, the restrainers of the church to a small place (as much as in them lies) falsify God's promise, and shorten Christ's portion. Many other places speak the large extent of the Gospel: Gen. xxii. 17; xxviii. 14; Psalm lxxii. 8, &c.\*

#### SECOND POSITION.

"That their church consisted of a holy company, pure and undefiled indeed." Thus also the Anabaptists brag of their holiness, as if nothing else were required to make men pure, but a conceit that they are so. Sure, had they no other fault but want of charity, their hands could not be clean who throw so much dirt on other men's faces.

**REASONS.**—It is said, "That Christ might present to himself a glorious church, without spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing, but that it should be holy, and without blemish:" (Eph. v. 27:) which the Donatists appropriate to themselves.

**CONFUTATION.**—This glorious presentation of the church is performed in the world to come.† Here it consisteth of sinners, who had rather confess their wrinkles than paint them, and had need to pray daily, "And forgive us our trespasses."

#### THIRD POSITION.

"That mixed communions were infectious; and the pious, promiscuously receiving with the profane, are polluted thereby." Hear the Anabaptizing sing the same note: "By profane and ignorant persons coming to the Lord's table, others also that communicate with them are guilty of the same profanation." ‡

**REASONS.**—Because several places of Scripture command, yea, command, a separation from them. "Take forth the precious from the vile." (Jer. xv. 19.) "Be ye separate, and touch no unclean thing." (2 Cor. vi. 17.) "Withdraw yourselves from every brother that walketh disorderly." (2 Thess. iii. 6.) "Purge out therefore the old leaven," &c. (1 Cor. v. 7.)

**CONFUTATION.**—In these and the like places, two things are

\* **OPTATUS MILEVITANUS**, lib. ii.; et **AUGUSTINUS**, *Contra Liter. Petil.*, cap. 6—8.      † **AUGUSTINUS**, *ut prius ad Vincentium, et epist. 50, ad Bonifacium.*      ‡ "Protestation protested," p. 14.

enjoined: First, a separation from intimate familiarity with profane persons: Secondly, a separation from their vices and wickedness, by detesting and disclaiming them. But neither civil state-society, nor public church-communion, is hereby prohibited. By "purging out the old leaven," church-censures are meant, to excommunicate the openly profane. But that mixed communions pollute not, appears, because St. Paul saith, "But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread," &c., (1 Cor. xi. 28,) but enjoins not men to examine others; which was necessary, if bad communicants do defile. It neither makes the cheer nor welcome the worse, to sit next to him at God's table, who wants a wedding-garment; for he that touches his person, but disclaims his practices, is as far from him, as the east from the west, yea, as heaven from hell. In bodily diseases, one may be infected without his knowledge, against his will: not so in spiritual contagions, where *\* acceditur ad vitium corruptionis vitio consensionis*; † and none can be infected *against their consent*.

#### FOURTH POSITION.

"That the godly were bound to sever from the society of the wicked, and not to keep any communion with them." Thus the most rigid of modern factors for the Independent congregations would draw their files out of the army of our national church, and set up a congregation wherein Christ shall reign in beauty and purity. But they may fly so far from mystical Babylon, as to run to literal Babel; I mean, bring all to confusion, and founder the commonwealth. For they that stride so wide at once, will go far with few paces.

REASON.—Because it is written: "What communion hath light with darkness?" (2 Cor. vi. 14:) and in other places, to the same effect.‡

CONFUTATION.—The answer is the same with the former. But the tares shall grow with the corn. And in the visible militant church and kingdom of grace, that wicked men shall be unseparably mingled with the godly, beside our Saviour's testimony, (Matt. xiii. 30,) these reasons do approve: First, because hypocrites can never be severed, but by Him that can search the heart. Secondly, because, if men should make the separation, weak Christians would be counted no Christians,

*\* AUGUSTINUS, Contra Don. post Coll. lib.*

*† In which a man adds*

*the sin of his full consent to the viciousness of his native corruption.*—*EDIT.*

*‡ AUGUSTINUS, Contra Petil., lib. ii. cap. 39.*

and those who have a grain of grace under a load of imperfections would be counted reprobates. Thirdly, because God's vessels of honour from all eternity, not as yet appearing, but wallowing in sin, would be made cast-aways. Fourthly, because God, by the mixture of the wicked with the godly, will try the watchfulness and patience of his servants. Fifthly, because thereby he will bestow many favours on the wicked, to clear his justice, and render them the more inexcusable. Lastly, because the mixture of the wicked, grieving the godly, will make them the more heartily pray for the day of judgment. The desire of future glory makes the godly to cry, "Come, Lord Jesus!" but the feeling of present pain (whereof they are most sensible) causeth the ingemination, "Come, Lord Jesus! come quickly!" In a word, as it is wholesome for a flock of sheep, for some goats to feed amongst them, their bad scent being good physic for the sheep to keep them from "the shakings;" so, much profit redounds to the godly by the necessary mixture of the wicked amongst them, making the pious to stick the faster to God and goodness.

## FIFTH POSITION.

"That the efficacy of the sacrament depends on the piety of the minister; \* so that, in effect, his piety washeth the water in baptism, and sanctifieth it; whereas the profaneness of a bad man administering it, doth unsacrament baptism itself, making a nullity thereof." Herein the Anabaptists join hands with them, as it is generally known by their re-baptizing: yea, some tending that way have maintained, that sacraments, received from ignorant and unpreaching ministers, are of no validity.†

REASON.—It is written: "A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a corrupt tree bring forth good fruit." (Matt. vii. 18.)

CONFUTATION.—This is true of men's personal, but not of their ministerial, acts: that minister that can add the word of institution to the element, makes a sufficient sacrament.‡ And sacraments, like to shell-meats, may be eaten after foul hands, without any harm. § *Cum obsint indignè tractantibus, prosint tamen dignè sumentibus.*|| Yet God make all ministers pious,

\* AUGUSTINUS, *Contra Liter. Petil.*, lib. i. cap. 1.  
pp. 46, 49.

‡ AUGUSTINUS, *Tract. 80 in Johannem.*

*Contra Parmen.*, lib. ii. cap. 10.

§ *Idem,*  
"While the sacraments are injurious to those who have unworthily administered them, they are, notwithstanding, profitable to humble and worthy receivers."—EDIT.

+ J. PENRY,

*§ Idem,*

painful, and able! We, if beholding the present age, may justly bemoan their want, who, remembering the former age, must as justly admire their plenty.

## SIXTH POSITION.

"That all learning and eloquence was to be condemned."\* Late sectarists go farther: Greenwood and Barrow moved queen Elizabeth to abolish both Universities:†

"Which we believe and wish may then be done,  
When all blear eyes have quite put out the sun."

REASON.—Because learning hath been the cause of many heresies and discords in the church.

CONFUTATION.—Not learning, but the conceit thereof in those that wanted it, and the abuse thereof in such as had it, caused heretics.

## SEVENTH POSITION.

"That magistrates have no power to compel people to serve God, by outward punishment;" which is also the distilled position of our Anabaptists. Thus blinding the ministers, and binding the magistrate, what work do they make!

REASON.—Because it is a breach of the liberty of the creature:‡ the King of heaven gave not men free-will for the kings of the earth to take it away from them.

CONFUTATION.—God gave men free-will to use it well; if they abuse it, God gave magistrates power to punish them, else they "bear the sword in vain." They may command people to serve God, who herein have no cause to complain; better "to be compelled to a feast," (Luke xiv. 23,) than to run to a fray. But these men who would not have magistrates compel them, —query, whether, if they had power, they would not compel magistrates?

The Donatists also did mightily boast of miracles and visions. They made nothing, to step into the third heaven, and have familiar dialogues with God himself.§ They used also to cite their revelations, as arguments for their opinions. We will trust the copy of such their visions to be true, when we see the

\* AUGUSTINUS, *contra Crescon.*, lib. i. cap. 30.  
writing against them, lib. ii. p. 4.

† DR. SOAME,

lib. iii. cap. 51.

‡ AUGUSTINUS, *contra Crescon.*,

§ *Donatus oravit, respondet ei Deus de cælo.*—AUGUS-

TINUS, in *Johann. tract. 3, prope finem.*

"*Donatus prayed: God replied to him from heaven.*"—EDIT.

original produced. Herein the Anabaptists come not behind them. Strange was the Donatists' ambition of martyrdom: they used to force such as they met to wound them mortally, or violently to stab and kill them; and on purpose to fall down from steep mountains,\* who one day may wish the mountains to fall on them. For martyrs are to die *willingly* but *not wilfully*; and though to die be a debt due to nature, yet he that pays it before the time may be called upon for repayment,—to die the second death.

Once many Donatists met a noble gentleman, and gave him a sword into his hand, commanding him to kill them, or threatening to kill him. Yet he refused to do it, unless first they would suffer him to bind them all: "For fear," said he, "that when I have killed one or two of you, the rest alter their minds and fall upon me." Having fast bound them all, he soundly whipped them, and so let them alone. Herein he showed more wit than they wanted, and more charity than wit,—denying them their desires, and giving them their deserts, seeking to make true saints by marring of false martyrs.†

These Donatists were opposed by the learned writings of private Fathers, Optatus Milevitanus, and St. Augustine, (no heresy could bud out, but presently his pruning-hook was at it!) and by whole councils, one at Carthage, another at Arles. But the Donatists, whilst blessing themselves, cared not for the church's anathemas, being so far from fearing her excommunications, that they prevented them in first excommunicating themselves by separation; and they count it a kindness to be shut out, who would willingly be gone.

Besides, they called at Carthage an anti-council of their own faction, consisting of two hundred and seventy bishops, to confirm their opinions.‡ Let truth never challenge error at the weapon of number alone, without other arguments; for some orthodox councils have had fewer suffrages in them, than this Donatistical conventicle; and we may see *small* pocket-Bibles, and a *great folio* Alcoran.

But that which put the period to this heresy, (for after the six hundredth year of Christ, the Donatist appears not, "I looked after his place, and he was not to be found!") was partly their own dissensions, for they crumbled into several divisions amongst themselves.§ Beside the honest Rogatists, (of whom

• *THEODORETUS, in fabulis Hæretic.*  
cap. v. p. 211, *ex Theodoreto.*  
§ *In minutula frustula.*—*Idem.*

† *CENTURIATORES, Cent. 4.*  
‡ *AUGUSTINUS, Epist. ad Vincentium.*

they had several sects, some more, some less strict, from their several masters, Cresconians, Petilians,\* Languans, Parmenians, Maximians, &c. which much differed amongst themselves. Thus is it given to all heresies to break into under-factions, still going further in their tenets; and as take themselves to be twice-refined, will count all others but dross, till there be as many heresies as heretics; like Ammonites, so scattered by Saul "that there remained not of them which were together." (1 Sam. xi. 11.)

chiefly they were suppressed by the civil magistrate. will do more with a frown, than Aaron with a blow; I , with church-censures! For Julian, the godly emperor, his arm above a thousand , easily reached them Europe, Asia, and Africa; and punishments mixed with the church's instructions, converted reclaimed very many.†

In such a case, teaching without punishment had done little good, and punishment without teaching would have done much harm; both mingled together, by God's blessing, caused the conversion of many, and final suppression of that heresy.

The same God of his goodness warrant, that, by the same means, such as revive this heresy -a-days, may have their eyes opened and their mouths sealed, their pride less and their knowledge more, that those may be stayed who are going, and those brought back who are gone into their dangerous opinion! For if the angels in heaven rejoice at the conversion of a sinner, none but devils and men devilishly-minded will be sorrowful thereat.

\* Petilian went not so far as the rest.—*AUGUSTINUS, De Correct. Donati, lib. iii. cap. 17, 19. Vide AUGUSTINUM, De Schism. Maxim. Brevis Collat. 3 diei,*

† He caused the patent of privilege which Julian granted the Donatists, *publicis locis affigendum in ludibrium*.—*Vide BARONIUM, in anno 362, num. 264.*

## CHAPTER XII.

## THE LIAR.

THE liar is one that makes a trade to tell falsehoods, with intent to deceive. He is either open or secret. A secret liar or equivocator is such a one, as, by mental reservations and other tricks, deceives him to whom he speaks, being lawfully called to deliver all the truth. And, sure, speech being but a copy of the heart, it cannot be avouched for a true copy that hath less in it than the original. Hence it often comes to pass,

“When Jesuits unto us answer, ‘Nay,’  
They do not English speak, ‘tis Greek they say.”

Such an equivocator we leave, more needing a book than character to describe him. The open liar is, first, either mischievous, condemned by all; secondly, officious, unlawful also, because doing ill for good to come of it; thirdly, jesting, when in sport and merriment. And though some count a jesting lie to be like the dirt of oysters, which (they say) never stains, yet is it a sin in earnest. What policy is it for one to wound himself to tickle others, and to stab his own soul to make the standers-by sport? We come to describe the liar.

## MAXIM I.

*At first he tells a lie with some shame and reluctance.*—For then, if he cuts off but a lap of truth’s garment, his heart smites him; but, in process of time, he conquers his conscience, and, from quenching it, there ariseth a smoke which soots and fouls his soul, so that afterwards he lies without any regret.

## II.

*Having made one lie, he is fain to make more to maintain it.*—For an untruth, wanting a firm foundation, needs many buttresses. The honour and happiness of the Israelites is the misery and mischief of lies: “Not one amongst them shall be barren,” (Deut. vii. 14,) but miraculously procreative to beget others.

## III.

*He hath a good memory which he badly abuseth.*—Memory in a liar is no more than needs. For, first, lies are hard to be remembered, because many, whereas truth is but one. Secondly, because a lie cursorily told, takes little footing and settled fastness in the teller's memory, but prints itself deeper in the hearers, who take the greater notice, because of the improbability and deformity thereof; and one will remember the sight of a monster longer than the sight of a handsome body. Hence comes it to pass, that when the liar hath forgotten himself, his auditors put him in mind of the lie, and take him therein.

## IV.

*Sometimes, though his memory cannot help him from being arrested for lying, his wit rescues him.*—Which needs a long reach to bring all ends presently and probably together, gluing the splinters of his tales so cunningly, that the cracks cannot be perceived. Thus a relic-monger bragged, he could show a feather of the dove at Christ's baptism; but being to show it to the people, a wag had stolen away the feather, and put a coal in the room of it. "Well," quoth he to the spectators, "I cannot be so good as my word for the present; but here is one of the coals that broiled St. Lawrence, and that is worth the seeing." \*

## V.

*Being challenged for telling a lie, no man is more furiously angry.*—Then he draws his sword and threatens, because he thinks that an offer of revenge, to show himself moved at the accusation, doth in some sort discharge him of the imputation; as if the condemning of the sin in appearance acquitted him in effect: or else, because he that is called "a liar" to his face, is also called a coward in the same breath, if he swallows it; and the party charged doth conceive, that, if he vindicates his valour, his truth will be given him into the bargain.

## VI.

*At last he believes his own lies to be true.*—He hath told them over and over so often, that prescription makes a right; and he

\* CHEMNITIUS, in Exam. Conc. Trident., part iv. p. 12.

verily believes, that at the first he gathered the story out of some authentical author, which only grew in his own brain.

## VII.

*No man else believes him when he speaks the truth.*—How much gold soever he hath in his chest, his word is but brass, and passeth for nothing: yea, he is dumb in effect; for it is all one whether one cannot speak, or cannot be believed.

To conclude: Some of the West Indians, to expiate their sin of lying, use to let themselves blood in their tongues, and to offer the blood to their idols: a good cure for the squinancy, [quincy,] but no satisfaction for lying. God's word hath taught us better: “What profit is there in my blood?” The true repentance of the party, washed in the blood of Christ, can only obtain pardon for this sin.

---

## CHAPTER XIII.

## THE COMMON BARRETOR.

A BARRETOR\* is a horseleech, that only sucks the corrupted blood of the law. He trades only in tricks and quirks. His highway is in by-paths, and he loveth a cavil better than an argument, an evasion than an answer. There be two kinds of them: either such as fight themselves, or are trumpeters in a battle to set-on others.

The former is a professed dueller in the law, that will challenge any, and in all suit-combats be either principal or second.

## MAXIM I.

*References and compositions he hates, as bad as a hangman hates a pardon.*—Had he been a scholar, he would have main-

\* *Barretor, barrator, or barratour*, according to PHILLIPS and KERSEY, is a law-term, signifying “a common wrangler that sets men at variance, and is never quiet but at brawl with one or another; a stirrer-up and maintainer of law-suits and quarrels.” On account of the similarity in the name and sound, it was sometimes employed ironically, to designate a barrister of a litigious disposition.—EDIT.

tained all paradoxes ; if a surgeon, he would never have cured a wound, but always kept it raw ; if a soldier, he would have been excellent at a siege, nothing but *ejectio firma* would out him.

## II.

*He is half-starved in a Lent of a long vacation, for want of employment.*—Save only that then he brews work to broach in term-time. I find one so much delighted in law-sport, that when Lewis the king of France offered to ease him of a number of suits, he earnestly besought his Highness to leave him some twenty or thirty behind, wherewith he might merrily pass away the time.\*

## III.

*He hath this property of an honest man, that his word is as good as his bond.*—For he will pick the lock of the strongest conveyance, or creep out at the lattice of a word. Wherefore, he counts to enter common with others, as good as his own several : for he will so vex his partners, that they had rather forego their right, than undergo a suit with him.

As for the trumpeter-barretor,—

## IV.

*He falls in with all his neighbours that fall out, and spurs them on to go to law.*—A gentleman, who in a duel was rather scratched than wounded, sent for a surgeon, who, having opened the wound, charged his man with all speed to fetch such a salve from such a place in his study. “Why,” said the gentleman, “is the hurt so dangerous?” “O yes!” answered the surgeon, “if he returns not in post-haste, the wound will cure itself, and so I shall lose my fee.” Thus the barretor posts to the houses of his neighbours, lest the sparks of their small discords should go out before he brings them fuel, and so he be broken by their making-up. Surely, he loves not to have the bells rung in a peal ; but he likes it rather when they are jangled backward,—himself having kindled the fire of dissension among his neighbours.

\* STEPHENS'S “Apology for Herodotus.”

## V.

*He lives till his clothes have as many rents as himself hath made dissensions.*—I wonder any should be of this trade, when none ever thrived on it, paying dear rates for their counsels: for, bringing many cracked titles, they are fain to fill up their gaping chinks with the more gold.

But I have done with this wrangling companion, half afraid to meddle with him any longer, lest he should commence a suit against me for describing him.

The reader may easily perceive, how this book of “the Profane State” would swell to a great proportion, should we therein character all the kinds of vicious persons who stand in opposition to those who are good. But this pains may well be spared, seeing that *rectum est index sui et obliqui*;\* and the lustre of the good formerly described, will sufficiently discover the enormity of those who are otherwise. We will therefore instance in three principal offenders,† and so conclude.

\* “Uprightness is an index not only of itself, but also of that which is crooked or unjust.”—EDIT.      † These three “principal offenders,” as the reader will perceive, are “the degenerous gentleman,” “the traitor,” and “the tyrant.”—EDIT.

## CHAPTER XIV.

## THE DEGENEROUS GENTLEMAN.

SOME will challenge this title of incongruity, as if those two words were so dissonant, that a whole sentence cannot hold them; for, sure, where *the gentleman* is the root, *degenerous* cannot be the fruit. But if any quarrel with my words, Valerius Maximus shall be my champion, who styleth such, \* *nobilia portenta*.† By GENTLEMAN we understand one whom the heralds (except they will deny their best records) must allow of ancient parentage. Such an one, when a child, being kept the devil's Nazarite, that no razor of correction must come upon his head in his father's family,—see what he proves in process of time, brought to extreme poverty! Herein we intend no invective glance on those pious gentlemen whose states are consumed through God's secret judgment, and none of the owners' visible default; only we meddle with such as by carelessness and riot cause their own ruin.

## MAXIM I.

*He goes to school to learn in jest, and play in earnest.*—Now this gentleman, now that gentlewoman, begs him a play-day; and now the book must be thrown away, that he may see the buck hunted. He comes to school late, departs soon, and the whole year with him (like the fortnight when Christmas-day falls on a Tuesday) is all holidays and half-holidays. And as the poets feign of Thetis, that she drenched Achilles her son in the Stygian waters, that he might not be wounded with any weapon; so cockering mothers enchant their sons, to make them rod-free; which they do, by making some golden circles in the hand of the schoolmaster. Thus these two, conjoining together, make the indentures to bind the youth to eternal ignorance; yet, perchance, he may get some alms of learning, here a snap, there a piece of knowledge, but nothing to purpose.

\* *VALERIUS MAXIMUS*, lib. iii. cap. 5.

† “Genteel monsters,” or noblemen horrible for their moral deformity and wickedness.—*EDIT.*

## II.

*His father's serving-men (which he counts no mean preferment !) admit him into their society.*—Going to a drinking-match, they carry him with them “to enter him,” and applaud his hopefulness, finding him vicious beyond his age. The butler makes him free (having first paid his fees accustomed) of his own father’s cellar ; and guesseth the profoundness of his young master’s capacity, by the depth of “the whole ones” he fetcheth off.

## III.

*Coming to the University, his chief study is to study nothing.*—What is learning but a cloak-bag of books, cumbersome for a gentleman to carry ? and the Muses?—fit to make wives for farmers’ sons ! Perchance, his own tutor, for the promise of the next living, (which, notwithstanding his promise, he afterwards sells to another,) contributes to his undoing, letting him live as he list. Yea, perhaps his own mother (whilst his father diets him for his health with a moderate allowance) makes him surfeit underhand, by sending him money. Thus whilst some complain that the University infected him, he infected the University, from which he sucked no milk, but poisoned her nipples.

## IV.

*At the Inns of Court, under pretence to learn law, he learns to be lawless.*—Not knowing by his study so much as what *an execution* means, till he learns it by his own dear experience. Here he grows acquainted with “the roaring boys,”—I am afraid so called by a woful prolepsis, *here for hereafter*. What formerly was counted the chief credit of an orator, these esteem the honour of a swearer,—PRONUNCIATION, to mouth an oath with a graceless grace. These, as David saith, “clothe themselves with curses as with a garment,” and therefore desire to be in the latest fashion both in their clothes and curses. These infuse all their skill into their young novice ; who shortly proves such a proficient, that he exceeds his masters in all kinds of vicious courses.

## V.

*Through the mediation of a scrivener, he grows acquainted with some great usurer.*—Nor is this youngster so ravenous, as the other is ready to feed him with money, sometimes with a courteous violence forcing on him more than he desires, provided the security be good, except the usurer be so valiant

as to hazard the losing of a small hook to catch a great fish, and will adventure to trust him, if his estate in hope be over-measure, though he himself be under age. Now the greater part of the money he takes up is not for his own spending, but to pay the shot of other men's riot.

## VI.

*After his father's death, he flies out more than ever before.*—Formerly he took care for means for his spending, now he takes care for spending for his means. His wealth is so deep a gulf, no riot can ever sound the bottom of it. To make his guests drunk, is the only seal of their welcome. His very meanest servant may be master of the cellar; and those who deserve no beer may command the best wine. Such dancing by day, such masking by night, such roaring, such revelling, able to awake the sleeping ashes of his great-great-grandfather, and to fright all blessing from his house.

## VII.

*Meantime the old sore of his London-debts corrupts and festers.*—He is careless to take out the dead flesh, or to discharge either principal or interest. Such small leaks are not worth the stopping, or searching-for, till they be greater; he should undervalue himself to pay a sum before it grew considerable for a man of his estate. Nor can he be more careless to pay, than the usurer is willing to continue, the debt; knowing that his bonds, like infants, battle\* best with sleeping.

## VIII.

*Vacation is his vocation, and he scorns to follow any profession.*—And will not be confined to any laudable employment. But they who count a calling a prison, shall at last make a prison their calling. He instils also his lazy principles into his children; being of the same opinion with the Neapolitan gentry, who stand so on the pointes† of their honour, that they prefer robbery before industry, and will rather suffer their daughter to make merchandise of her chastity, than marry the richest merchant.‡

\* To fatten.—EDIT.

† *Punto*, the Italian word for “point,” or “punc-

tillo.”—EDIT.

‡ SIR WILLIAM SEGAR, in his “Honours Military and

Civil.”

## IX.

*Drinking is one of the principal liberal sciences he professeth.*—A most ungenteel quality, fit to be banished to rogues and rags. It was anciently counted a Dutch vice, and swarmed most in that country. I remember a sad accident which happened to Fliolmus king of Gothland, who whilst a Lord of Misrule ruled in his court, and both he and his servants were drunk, in mere merriment, meaning no harm, they took the king, and put him in jest into a great vessel of beer, and drowned him in earnest.\* But one tells us, that this ancient and habited vice is amongst the Dutch of late years much decreased:† which if it be not, would it were! Sure, our mariners observe, that, as the sea grows daily shallower and shallower on the shore of Holland and Zealand, so the channel of late waxeth deeper on the coasts of Kent and Essex. I pray God, if drunkenness ebbs in Dutchland, it doth not flow in England, and gain not in the island what it loseth in the continent. Yea, some plead, when overwhelmed with liquor, that their thirst is but quenched: as well may they say, that in Noah's flood the dust was but sufficiently allayed.

## X.

*Gaming is another art he studies much.*—An enticing witch, that hath caused the ruin of many. Hannibal said of Marcellus, that *nec bonam nec malam fortunam ferre potest*;‡ “he could be quiet neither conqueror nor conquered;” thus, such is the itch of play that gamesters neither winning nor losing can rest contented. One propounded this question,—Whether men in ships on sea were to be accounted among the living or the dead, because there were but few inches betwixt them and drowning? The same scruple may be made of great gamesters, though their estates be never so great,—Whether they are to be esteemed poor or rich, there being but a few casts at dice betwixt a gentleman (in great game) and a beggar? Our gallant games deeply; and makes no doubt in conscience to adventure advowsons, patronages, and church-livings in gaming. He might call to mind Sir Miles Pateridge, who (as the soldiers cast lots for Christ's coat) played at dice for Jesus's bells with king Henry VIII., and won them of him.§ Thus he brought

\* OLAUS MAGNUS, *Hist. Septent.*, p. 531.      † VERSTEGAN, “Restitution of decayed Intelligence,” p. 53.      ‡ LIVIUS, lib. xxvii.      § These were four bells, the greatest in London, hanging in a fair tower, in Paul's church-yard.—STOW's “Survey of London,” p. 357.

the bells to ring in his pocket; but the ropes afterwards catched about his neck, and for some offences he was hanged in the days of king Edward VI.

## XI.

*Then first he sells the outworks of his state, some straggling manor.*—Nor is he sensible of this sale; which makes his means more entire, as counting the gathering of such scattering rents rather burdensome than profitable. This he sells at half the value; so that the feathers will buy the goose, and the wood will pay for the ground. With this money if he stops the hole to one creditor, by his prodigality he presently opens a wider gap to another.

## XII.

*By this time the long-dormant usurer ramps\* for the payment of his money.*—The principal, (the grandmother,) and the use, (the daughter,) and the use upon use, (the grandchild,) and, perchance, a generation farther, have swelled the debt to an incredible sum; for the satisfying whereof our gallant sells the moiety of his estate.

## XIII.

*Having sold half his land, he abates nothing of his expenses.*—But thinks five hundred pounds a-year will be enough to maintain that, for which a thousand pounds was too little. He will not stoop till he falls, nor lessen his kennel of dogs, till, with Acteon, he be eaten up with his own hounds.

## XIV.

*Being about to sink, he catcheth hold at every rush to save himself.*—Perchance, sometimes he snatcheth at the thistle of a project which first pricks his hands, and then breaks. Herein, it may be, he adventured on a matter wherein he had no skill himself; hoping, by letting the commonwealth blood, to fill up his own veins again; and therefore trades with his partner's brains, as his partner with his purse, till both miscarry together. Or else, it may be, he catcheth hold on the heel of another man, who is in as dangerous a case as himself; and they, embracing each other in mutual bonds, hasten their drowning together. His last manor he sells twice,—to a country-gentleman, and a London-usurer; though the last, as having the first title, prevails to possess it; usurers herein being like unto foxes,—they

\* Is exceedingly importunate and outrageous.—EDIT.

seldom take pains to dig any holes themselves, but earth in that which the foolish badger made for them, and dwell in the manors and fair houses which others have built and provided.

## XV.

*Having lost his own legs, he relies on the staff of his kindred.*—First visiting them as an *intermitting* ague, but afterwards turns a *quotidian*, wearing their thresholds as bare as his own coat. At last, he is as welcome as a storm ; he that is abroad shelters himself from it, and he that is at home shuts the door. If he intrudes himself yet, some with their jeering tongues give him many a gird, but his brasen impudence feels nothing ; and let him be armed, on free-cost, with the pot and the pipe, he will give them leave to shoot their flouts at him till they be weary. Sometimes he sadly paceth over the ground he sold, and is on fire with anger with himself for his folly, but presently quencheth it at the next ale-house.

## XVI.

*Having undone himself, he sets up the trade to undo others.*—If he can but screw himself into the acquaintance of a rich heir, he rejoiceth as much at the prize, as the Hollanders when they had intercepted the Plate-Fleet. He tutors this young gamester in vice, leading him a more compendious way to his ruin, than possibly he could find out of himself. And doth not the guide deserve good wages for his direction ?

## XVII.

*Perhaps he behaves himself so basely that he is degraded.*—The sad and solemn ceremonies whereof, we may meet with in old precedents : but of them all, in my apprehension, none should make deeper impression in an ingenuous soul than this one,—that, at the solemn degradation of a knight for high misdemeanour, the king and twelve knights more did put on mourning garments, as an emblem of sorrow for this injury to honour, that a man gentle by birth and blood, or honoured by a prince's favour, should so far forget not only himself but his order, as to deserve so severe punishment.\*

\* MARKHAM's "Decads of Honour," p. 76.

## XVIII.

*His death is as miserable as his life hath been vicious.*—A hospital is the height he hopes to be advanced to: but commonly he dies not in so charitable a prison, but sings his last note in a cage. Nor is it impossible, but that, wanting land of his own, he may encroach on the king's highway; and there, taking himself to be lord of the soil, seize on travellers as strays\* due unto him, and so the hangman give him a wreath more than he had in his arms before. If he dies at liberty, in his pilgrimage betwixt the houses of his acquaintance, perhaps some well-disposed gentleman may pay for his burial, and truly mourn at the funeral of an ancient family. His children, if any, must seek their fortunes the farther off, because their father found his too soon,—before he had wisdom to manage them. Within two generations, his name is quite forgotten, that ever any such was in the place; except some herald in his visitation pass by, and chance to spell his broken arms in a church-window. And then, how weak a thing is gentry, than which (if it wants virtue) brittle glass is the more lasting monument!

We forbear to give an instance of a degenerous † gentleman; would to God the world gave no examples of them! If any please to look into the forenamed Valerius Maximus, ‡ he shall there find the base son of Scipio Africanus, the conqueror of Hannibal and Africa, so ill-imitating his father, that, for his viciousness, he received many disgraceful repulses from the people of Rome, the fragrant smell of his father's memory making him to stink the more in their nostrils. Yea, they forced him to pluck off from his finger a signet-ring, whereon the face of his father was engraven, as counting him unworthy to wear his picture, who would not resemble his virtue.

\* Cattle wandering about without owner, which, if found thus straying, are seized by the bailiff of the lord of the manor, placed in the pinfold, (or green-yard,) and, if unclaimed within a certain time, become his property.—*EDIT.*      + In every edition, except the first, this word is misprinted *dangerous*.—*EDIT.*      ‡ *Loco prius citato.*

## CHAPTER XV.

## THE TRAITOR.

A TRAITOR\* works by fraud, (as a rebel does by force,) and in this respect is more dangerous, because there is less stock required to set him up. Rebellion must be managed with many swords, treason to his prince's person may be with one knife. Generally their success is as bad as their cause, being either detected before—defeated in—or punished after—their part acted.

*Detected before, either by [the] wilfulness or weakness of those who are privy to it.*

## MAXIM I.

*A plotter of treason puts his head into the halter, and the halter into his hand to whom he first imparts it.*—He oftentimes reveals it, and, by making a footstool of his friend's head, climbs up the higher into the prince's favour.

## II.

*Some men's souls are not strong enough, but that a weighty secret will work a hole through them.*—These, rather out of folly than falseness, unawares let fall words, which are taken up by the judicious ears of such who can spell treason by putting together distracted syllables, and by piecing of broken sentences. Others have their hearts swollen so great with hope of what they shall get, that their bodies are too little to hold them, and so betray themselves by threatenings and blustering language. Others have cut their throats with their own hands;—their own writings, the best records, being produced against them. And here we must know, that—

## III.

*Strong presumptions sometimes serve for proofs in point of treason.*—For, it being a deed of darkness, it is madness to

\* He is either against the sovereign person alone, or against the State wherein he lives. We deal only in describing the former; because, to character the other, exact skill in the municipal laws of that State is required, wherein he is charged of treason.

look that the sun should shine at midnight, and to expect evident proof. Should princes delay till they did plainly *see* treason, they might chance to *feel* it first. If this *semi-plena probatio*\* lights on a party suspected before, the party himself is the other part of the proof, and makes it complete. And here the rack, though, Fame-like, it be

*Tam ficti pravique tenax, quam nuncia veri,†*

is often used ; and the wooden horse hath told strange secrets.

But, grant it pass undiscovered in the plotting, it is commonly *prevented in the practising*,—

IV.

*By the majesty, innocency, or valour of the prince or his attendants.*—Some have been dazzled with the divine beams shining in a prince's face, so that, coming to command his life, they could not be masters of their own senses. Innocency hath protected others, and made their enemies relent ; and pity (though a stranger to him for many years before) hath visited a traitor's heart in that very instant. If these fail, a king's valour hath defended him ; it being most true of a king, what Pliny reports of a lion,—in hunting if he be wounded and not killed, he will be sure to eye and kill him that wounded him.‡

V.

*Some, by flourishing beforehand, have never stricken a blow.*—But, by warning, have armed those to whom they threatened. Thus, mad Somervile, coming to kill queen Elizabeth, by the way (belike, to try whether his sword would cut) quarrelled with and wounded one or two, and therefore was apprehended before he came to the court.

VI.

*The palsy of guiltiness hath made the stoutest traitor's hands to shake, sometimes to miss their mark.*—Their conscience, sleeping before, is then awakened with this crying sin. The way seems but short to a traveller, when he views it from the top of a hill, who finds it very long when he comes into the plain : so treason, surveyed in the heat of blood and from the height of

\* “Nearly full proof.”—EDIT.      † This is part of Virgil's description of Fame, who, in her variable reports, “adheres as tenaciously to that which is feigned and erroneous, as she plainly narrates that which is true.”—EDIT.      ‡ *Nat. Hist.*, lib. viii, cap. 16.

passion, seems easy to be effected ; which, reviewed in cold blood on even terms, is full of dangers and difficulties.

If it speed in the acting, generally it is *revenged afterwards* : for,

#### VII.

*A king, though killed, is not killed, so long as he hath son or subject surviving.*—Many who have thought they have discharged the debt, have been broken afterwards with the arrearages. As for journeymen-traitors, who work for others, their wages are ever paid them with a halter ; and where one gaineth a garland of bays, hundreds have had a wreath of hemp.

---

## CHAPTER XVI.

### THE PAZZIANS' CONSPIRACY.

IN the city of Florence,\* being then a popular State, (April 26th, *anno 1478*,) the honourable family De Medices managed all chief affairs ; so beloved of the people for their bounty, that the honour they had was not extorted by their greatness, but seemed due to their goodness. These Mediceans depressed the Pazziens, another family in that State, as big set, though not so high grown, as the Medicei themselves, loading them with injuries, and debarring them not only from offices in the city, but their own right. The Pazziens, though highly wronged, counterfeited much patience ; and, which was a wonder, though malice boiled hot in their hearts, yet no scum ran over in their mouths.

At last, meeting together, they concluded, that, seeing the legal way was stopped with violence, the violent way was become legal, whereby they must right themselves ; and they determined to invite Julian and Laurence Medices, the governors of the State, to dinner, with cardinal Raphael Riarius, and there to murder them. The matter was counted easy, because these two brethren were but one in effect ; their heads in a manner standing on the same shoulders, because they always

\* The sum hereof is taken out of MACHIAVIL's "Florent. Hist." lib. viii. p. 407, *et sequentibus.*

went together, and were never asunder. Fifty were privy to this plot ; each had his office assigned him. Baptista Monteseccius was to kill Laurence ; Francis Pazzius and Bernardus Bandinius were to set on Julian ; whilst the archbishop of Pisa, one of their allies, was, with a band of men, to seize on the senate-house. Cardinal Raphael's company, rather than assistance, was required ; being neither to hunt, nor kill, but only to start the game, and by his presence to bring the two brothers to the dinner. All appointed the next morning to meet at mass, in the chief church of St. Reparata.

Here meeting together, all the design was dashed : for here they remembered that Julian de Medices never used to dine.\* This they knew before, but considered not till now, as if formerly the vapours arising out of their ambitious hearts had clouded their understanding. Some advised to refer it to another time ; which others thought dangerous, conceiving they had sprung so many leaks of suspicion, it was impossible to stop them ; and feared, there being so many privy to the plot, that, if they suffered them to consult with their pillows, their pillows would advise them to make much of their heads ; wherefore, not daring to stay the seasonable ripening of their design, they were forced in heat of passion to patch it up presently ; and they resolved to take the matter at the first bound, and to commit the murder (they intended at dinner) here in the church, taking it for granted, the two Mediceans would come to mass, according to their daily custom.

But, changing their stage, they were fain also to alter their actors. Monteseccius would not be employed in the business, to stain a sacred place with blood ; and the breaking of this string put their plot quite out of tune. And though Anthony Volateran, and Stephen a priest, were substituted in his room, yet these two made not one fit person ; so great is the difference betwixt a choice and a shift. When the Host was elevated, they were to assault them ; and the sacrament was a sign to them, not of Christ's death past, but of a murder they were to commit.

But here again they were at a loss. Treason, like Pope Adrian, may be choked with a fly, and marred with the least unexpected casualty. Though Laurence was at church, Julian was absent. And yet, by beating about, they recovered this again : for, Francis Pazzius and Bernard Bandinius, going home

\* MACHIAVIL, *Disput. de Repub.* lib. iii. cap. vi. p. 397.

to his house, with compliments and courteous discourse brought him to the church. Then Bandinius with a dagger stabbed him to the heart, so that he fell down dead, and Francis Pazzius, insulting over his corpse, (now no object of valour but cruelty,) gave it many wounds, till, blinded with revenge, he struck a deep gash into his own thigh.

But what was over-measure in them, in over-acting their parts, was wanting in Anthony and Stephen, who were to kill Laurence in the choir. "You traitor," said Anthony; \* and, with that, Laurence starting back avoided the strength of the blow, and was wounded only to honour, not danger, and so recovered a strong chapel. Thus malice which vents itself in threatening, warns men to shun it; and like hollow-singing bullets, flies but half-way to the mark. With as bad success did the archbishop of Pisa seize on the senate-house, being conquered by the lords therein assembled, and, with many of his complices, hung out of a window.

The Pazzians now betake themselves to their last refuge which their desperate courses had left them. James, the chief of their family, with one hundred more, repair to the market-place, and there cry, "Liberty! liberty!" A few followed them at first; but the snow-ball, by rolling, did rather melt than gather; and those, who before had seen the foul face of their treason naked, would not be allured to love it now masked with the pretences of the public good; and, at last, the whole strength of the State subdued them.

Every tree about the city bare the fruit of men's heads and limbs. Many were put to death with torment; more, with shame; and only one, Renatus Pazzius, with pity, who loved his conscience better than his kindred, that he would not be active in the conspiracy; and yet his kindred better than his conscience, that he would not reveal it; treason being like some kind of strong poison, which though never taken inwardly by cordial consenting unto it, yet kills by being held in one's hand, and concealing it.

\* MACHIAVIL, *Disput. de Repub.* lib. iii. cap. vi. p. 399.

## CHAPTER XVII.

## THE TYRANT.

A TYRANT is one whose list is his law, making his subjects his slaves. Yet this is but a tottering kingdom which is founded on trembling people, who fear and hate their sovereign. He is twofold :—

1. *In titulo*, [in title,] properly an usurper.
2. *In exercitio*, [in practice,] whom we only describe.

## MAXIM I.

*He gets all places of advantage into his own hands.*—Yea, he would disarm his subjects of all scythes and pruning-hooks, but for fear of a general rebellion of weeds and thistles in the land.

## II.

*He takes the laws at the first, rather by undermining than assault.*—And therefore, to do unjustly with the more justice, he counterfeits a legality in all his proceedings, and will not butcher a man without a statute for it.

## III.

*Afterwards, he rageth freely in innocent blood.*—Is any man virtuous? Then he is a traitor, and let him die for it, who durst presume to be good when his prince is bad. Is he beloved? He is a rebel, hath proclaimed himself king, and reigns already in people's affections; it must cost him his life. Is he of kin to the crown, though so far off that his alliance is scarce to be derived? All the veins of his body must be drained and emptied, to find there, and fetch thence, that dangerous drop of royal blood. And thus, having taken the prime men away, the rest are easily subdued. In all these particulars, Machiavil is his only counsellor; who, in his “Prince,” seems to him to resolve all these cases of conscience to be very lawful.

## IV.

*Worst men are his greatest favourites.*—He keeps a constant kennel of blood-hounds, to accuse whom he pleaseth. These will *depose* more than any can *suppose*, not sticking to swear that they heard fishes speak, and saw through a mill-stone at midnight. These fear not to forswear, but fear they shall not forswear enough—to cleave the pin and do the deed. The less credit they have, the more they are believed, and their very accusation is held a proof.

## V.

*He leaves nothing that his poor subjects can call their own, but their miseries.*—And, as in the West-Indies, thousands of kine are killed for their tallow alone, and their flesh cast away; so, many men are murdered merely for their wealth, that other men may make mummy of the fat of their estates.

## VI.

*He counts men in misery the most melodious instruments.*—Especially if they be well-tuned and played upon by cunning musicians, who are artificial in tormenting them, the more the merrier; and if he hath a set and full consort [concert] of such tortured miserable souls, he danceth most cheerfully at the pleasant ditty of their dying groans. He loves not to be prodigal of men's lives, but thriftily improves the objects of his cruelty,—spending them by degrees, and epicurizing on their pain; so that, as Philoxenus wished a crane's throat, he could desire asses' ears, the longer to entertain their hideous and miserable roaring. Thus nature had not racks enough for men, (the colic, gout, stone, &c.,) but art must add to them, and devils in flesh antedate hell here in inventing torments; which, when inflicted on malefactors, extort pity from merciful beholders, and make them give what is not due; but, when used by tyrants on innocent people, such tender hearts as stand by suffer what they see, and, by the proxy of sympathy, feel what they behold.

## VII.

*He seeks to suppress all memorials and writings of his actions.*—And as wicked Tereus, after he had ravished Philomela, cut out her tongue; so when tyrants have wronged and abused the

times they live in, they endeavour to make them speechless, to tell no tales to posterity. Herein their folly is more to be admired than their malice, for learning can never be drained dry: though it may be dammed up for one age, yet it will break over; and historians' pens, being long kept fasting, will afterwards feed more greedily on the memories of tyrants, and describe them to the full. Yea, I believe, their ink hath made some tyrants blacker than they were in their true complexion.

## VIII.

*At last he is haunted with the terrors of his own conscience.*—If any two do but whisper together, (whatsoever the propositions be,) he conceives their discourse concludes against him. Company and solitariness are equally dreadful unto him, being never safe; and he wants a guard to guard him from his guard, and so proceeds *in infinitum*. The scouts of Charles duke of Burgundy brought him news, that the French army was hard by,—being nothing else but a field full of high thistles, whose tops they mistook for so many spears.\* On lesser ground, this tyrant conceives greater fears. Thus in vain doth he seek to fence himself from without, whose foe is within him.

## IX.

*He is glad to patch up a bad night's sleep, out of pieces of slumber.*—They seldom sleep soundly, who have blood for their bolster. His fancy presents him with strange masks, wherein only fiends and furies are actors. The fright awakes him; and he is no sooner glad that it was a dream, but fears it is prophetical.

## X.

*In vain he courts the friendship of foreign princes.*—They defy his amity, and will not join their clean hands with his bloody ones. Sometimes, to ingratiate himself, he doth some good acts; but virtue becomes him worse than vice, for all know he counterfeits it for his own ends.

\* *Cominæus, Comment., lib. i., juxta finem.*

## XI.

*Having lived in other men's blood, he dies commonly in his own.*  
—He had his will all his life, but seldom makes his testament at his death, being suddenly taken away either by private hand, or public insurrection. It is observed of the camel, that it lies quietly down till it hath its full load, and then riseth up. But this *vulgaris* [“the populace”] is a kind of beast, which riseth up soonest when it is overladen; immoderate cruelty causing it to rebel. *Fero* is a fitter motto than *Ferio*\* for Christians, in their carriage towards lawful authority, though unlawfully used.

We will give a double example of a tyrant: the one, an absolute sovereign; the other, a substitute or viceroy under an absolute prince.

\* *Fero*, “to endure;” and *ferio*, “to strike,” or “to resist.” The meaning is, “*Patience* is a fitter motto than *Resistance* for Christians.”—EDIT.

## CHAPTER XVIII.

## THE LIFE OF ANDRONICUS.

## OR, THE UNFORTUNATE POLITICIAN.

of "the Holy and fane State," published in 1642, the *Andronicus*, written with much care and elegance, was comprised within six pages, filling up only a tenth part of the space which it now occupies. According to the announcement in the notes, the narrative professed to be borrowed chiefly from Nicetas. After Fuller's famous defence of Basing-house, and his clerical attendance on that branch of the royal army which proceeded into Cornwall under the command of lord Hopton, he received from king Charles I. the appointment of chaplain to the infant princess Henrietta Maria, and attended in that capacity during her Majesty's mournful sojourn in Exeter; and when that city surrendered, his services were of great importance in procuring favourable terms for the garrison and the inhabitants. During these four years of active service in the war, he had ample opportunities of becoming acquainted, through friends and foes, with the views of both the belligerent parties; and knew many clever men whose culpable cupidity was then excited, and who did not attempt to dissemble their eagerness to derive personal profit and aggrandizement from our national convulsions. He was induced, therefore, to enlarge this article, and, with all the appendages of a true historical narrative, to form it into a kind of "Menippean Satire" on the ambition, avarice, cruelty, and other destructive vices, which had then sufficiently developed themselves in the leading characters of the republican movement. He accordingly published it in a pocket size, (foolscap 8vo. pp. 176,) in the style in which it is now presented to the reader, divided into six books, (in our edition called "sections,") with a preface, which is here subjoined, and a copious index (eight pages) of the principal subjects narrated in the small volume. As it obtained a great circulation and much approbation, he inserted it entire (with the exception of the preface and index) in every subsequent impression of "the Profane State;" and it has been regarded by moderate men of every party as a salutary and seasonable warning to all those who were engaged in ambitious, unpatriotic projects, during that distressing season of domestic warfare. In reference to many curious events which subsequently occurred, Fuller's broad intimations proved to be eminently prophetic; but in none of his anticipatory delineations was he afterwards accounted to have been more felicitous, than in the speech of Andronicus, on the eve of his being elected to be joint-emperor with the youthful Alexius Comnenus, which the reader will find in page 412, and which might have been purposely indited as a pattern for that of Cromwell, when he reluctantly declined the faintly-proffered sovereignty of these realms, and with much apparent coyness accepted the Protectorate. Other then-uncontemplated co-incidences will be obvious to every one who is acquainted with the historical records of those times of civil discord.—**EDIT.**

## TO THE READER.

We read of king Ahasuerus, that, having his head troubled with much business, and finding himself so indisposed that he could not sleep, he caused the records to be called for, and read unto him ; hoping thereby to deceive the tediousness of the time, (an honest fraud !) and that the pleasant passages in the chronicles would either invite slumber unto him, or enable him to endure waking with less molestation. (Esther vi. 6.)

We live in a troublesome and tumultuous age ; and he needs to have a very soft bed who can sleep soundly now-a-days, amidst so much loud noise, and many impetuous rumours. Wherefore it seemeth to me both a safe and cheap receipt, to procure quiet and repose to the mind which complains for want of rest, to prescribe unto it the reading of history.

Great is the pleasure and profit thereof. Zaccheus, we know, was low and little in stature ; but when he had borrowed some height from the fig-tree, into which he climbed, (Luke xix. 4,) the dwarf was made a giant on a sudden ; last minute beneath the arms, but now grown above the heads, of other men. Thus, our experimental knowledge is, in itself, both short and narrow, as which cannot exceed “the span of our own life.” But when we are mounted on the advantage of history, we can not only reach the year of Christ’s incarnation, but even touch the top of the world’s beginning, and, at one view, over-see all remarkable accidents of former ages.

Wherefore, until such time as I shall, by God’s providence, and the authority of my superiors, be restored to the open exercise of my profession, on terms consisting with my conscience, (which welcome minute I do heartily wish, and humbly wait for ; and will greedily listen to the least whisper sounding thereunto,) it is my intent, God willing, to spend the remnant of my days in reading and writing such stories as my weak judgment shall commend unto me for most beneficial.

Our English writers tell us of David, king of the Scots, that whilst he was prisoner in a cave in Nottingham Castle, he with his nails (shall I say “carved ?” or) scratched out the whole history of our Saviour’s passion, in the wall. And although the figures be rough and rude, yet in one respect they are to be compared unto, yea, preferred before, the choicest pieces, and most exact platforms, of all engravers,—being done at such

disadvantages; cut out of a main rock, without any light to direct him, or instruments to help him, beside his bare hands.

The application of the story serves me for manifold uses. First. Here I learn, if that princes, then meaner persons, are bound to find themselves some honest employment. Secondly. That, in a sad and solitary condition, a calling is a comfortable companion. Thirdly. Where men want necessaries, fit tools and materials, the work that they do, if it be any degree passable, deserves, if not to be praised, to be pardoned. Which encourageth me to expect of the charitable reader favour for the faults in this tract committed, when he considers the author, in effect, banished, and bookless, and wanting several accommodations requisite to the completing a history.

Noah, to make an essay whether "the waters were abated from the face of the earth," before he would adventure to expose the whole freight of his ark to danger, dispatched a dove to make discovery, and report unto him the condition of the world, intending to order himself accordingly. (Gen. viii. 8.) A deep deluge hath lately overflowed the whole kingdom, to the drowning of many, and dangering of all. I send forth this small treatise, to try whether the swelling surges and boiling billows in men's breasts, (flowing from the distance in their judgments, and difference in their affection,) begin now to assuage, and whether there be a dry place for this my innocent dove safely to settle herself. If she find any tolerable entertainment or indifferent approbation abroad, it will give me encouragement to adventure a volume of a more useful subject, and greater concernment in the view of the world.\*

Thine in all Christian offices,

THOMAS FULLER.

## SECTION I.

1. **ALEXIUS COMNENUS**, only son of Manuel Comnenus, succeeded his father in the empire of Constantinople, *anno Domini*, 1179. A child he was in age and judgment: of wit, too short to measure an honourable sport, but lost himself in low delights. He hated a book, more than a monster did a looking-glass; and when his tutor endeavoured to play him into scholarship, by presenting pleasant authors unto him, he

\* This was his "Pisgah-Sight of Palestine."—EDIT.

returned, that learning was beneath the greatness of a prince, who, if wanting it, might borrow it from his subjects, being better stored. "For," saith he, "if they will not lend me their brains, I will take away their heads." Yea, he allowed no other library, than a full-stored cellar, resembling the butts to folios; barrels, to quartos; smaller runlets, to lesser volumes; and studied away his time with base company, in such debauchedness.

2. Leave we Alexius drowning his care (or rather carelessness) in wine, to behold Xene his mother, the regent-empress, surfeiting also in pleasure with her husband, Proto-Sebastus, who had married her, since the decease of Manuel her late husband. This Proto-Sebastus, a better stallion than war-horse, was a perfect epicure, (so that Apitius, in comparison of him, was a churl to starve himself,) better at his palate than at his tongue; yet better at his tongue than his arms, being a notorious coward. He, with the empress, conspired to the dissolute education of young Alexius, keeping him in constant ignorance of himself; their strength consisting in his weakness, who, had he been bred to understand his own power, might probably have curbed their exorbitancies.

3. The body of the Grecian State, at this time, must needs be strangely distempered, under such heads. Preferment was only scattered amongst parasites, for them to scramble for it. The court had as many factions as lords, save that all their divisions united themselves in a general viciousness; and that Theodorus the patriarch was scoffed at by all as an antic, [antique,] for using goodness when it was out of fashion, and was adjudged impudent for presuming to be pious alone by himself.

4. As for the city of Constantinople, the chief seat of the Grecian empire, she had enjoyed happiness so long that now she pleaded prescription for prosperity. Because living in peace "time out of mind," she conceived it rather a wrong, to have constant quiet denied, than a favour from heaven, to have it continued unto her. Indeed, she was grown sick of a surfeit of health; and afterwards was broken, with having too much riches. For, instead of honest industry and painful thrift, which first caused the greatness of this city, now flowing with wealth, there was nothing therein but the swelling of pride, the boiling of lust, the fretting of envy, and the squeezing of oppression. So that should their dead ancestors arise, they would be puzzled to see Constantinople for itself, except they were directed thereunto by the ruins of St. Sophia's temple. True,

it was, some years since, upon a great famine, some hopes were given of a general amendment. During which time, riot began to grow thrifty, pride to go plain, gluttons to fast, and wantons were starved into temperance. But forced reformation will last no longer than the violent cause thereof doth continue. For, soon after, when plenty was again restored, they relapsed to their former badness ; yea, afterwards became fouler for the purge, and more wanton for the rod, when it was removed.

5. Now, there was an anti-faction in the Grecian empire, maintained by some lords of ancient extraction, who were highly offended at the great power which Proto-Sebastus and Xene the empress usurped to themselves ; and meeting privately together, Andronicus Lapardas, as prolocutor for the rest, vented his discontentment, complaining, it was more than high time that they now awake out of the lethargy of security, into which, by fools' lullabies, they had cozened themselves :—that they in the empire who have most at the stake, are made only lookers on ; sometimes admitted to the council out of compliment, and for countenance, barely to concur ; but, for the main, kept in ignorance of most material passages :—that their names are all branded for death, and that no love to their persons, but fear what might follow, had hitherto secured their lives :—in a word, that they must speedily resolve on some projects for their protection, or else they should approve themselves heirs to Epimetheus, who is not found to have left any land unto his sons, but only to have bequeathed an useless sorrow unto them, for their portion.

6. Hereupon they entered into a strict combination with themselves secretly, vowing that they would improve their utmost might to bring in Andronicus Comnenus, a prince of the blood, one of great parts and abilities, (but lately banished out of the empire,) to counterpoise the power of Proto-Sebastus, and to free young Alexius from the wardship of such as abused him. We will present the reader with a list of their titles and offices, who were engaged in this design ; entreating him not to be offended with us because of the hardness and length of their names, but rather with their godfathers, who christened them. We have an English proverb, that “bones bring meat to town ;” and those who are desirous to feast themselves on the pleasant and profitable passages of history, must be content sometimes to stoop their stomachs to feed on hard words, which bring matter along with them.

7. (1.) Maria Prophyrogenita Cæsarissa, daughter to

Manuel the late emperor, by a former wife, half-sister to Alexius the young emperor.

(2.) Caesar, her husband, an Italian lord, who was so overtopped with the high birth and spirit of his wife, that in this History we find him not grown much above the bare mention of his name.

(3.) Conto-Stephanus, the great duke, admiral of the galleys.

(4.) Camaterus Basilius, president of the city.

(5.) Hagio-Christophorites Stephanus, captain of the guard.

(6.) Disypatus Georgius, lecturer in the great church,—a higher office than the modern acceptation of the word doth imply.

(7.) Tripsycus Constantinus, one of the most noble extractions.

(8.) Macroducas Constantinus, no whit inferior to him in pedigree or power.

(9.) Andronicus Lapardas, formerly mentioned, together with the aforesaid,

(10.) Theodorus, the patriarch, last-named, because least interested. For in matters of piety, he was governed by his conscience; but in matters of policy, by good company, being therein himself utterly unskilled: and strangers in unknown ways commonly follow the most beaten track of others before them.

All these joined in a league to bring Andronicus home to Constantinople; who, what he was, and how qualified,—we will not forestall the reader, conceiving it, though something painful, yet more healthful, for him to gain his character by degrees in the sequel of his actions, wherein he will sufficiently discover himself, without our description of him.

8. Now, Maria Cæsarissa was employed unto Andronicus, (having ability in herself, and advantage by her sex, for the cunning carriage of the matter,) to acquaint him with their designs. She, coming to Cænæum, where he lived in banishment, informed him of the general discontent in the Grecian empire; and how those who basely served Xene, did only command in the State; that, beside those great persons whose names she presented in writing, many others (as yet scrupulous neuters) would have their doubts fully satisfied, and declare on his side, when they saw him appear with a powerful army; that it would be a meritorious work to enfranchise his kinsman Alexius from their slavery, whereunder he and the Grecian empire did groan.

9. Welcome was this invitation to Andronicus,—to be requested to do what of himself he desired. How willingly doth the fire fly upwards! especially when employed to fill up a vacuity; because then doing three good offices, with one motion; namely, expressing its dutifulness to the dictates of dame Nature; and contributing, in case of necessity, to the preservation of the universe; and pleasing its own peculiar tendency, which delights in ascending. Such now the condition of Andronicus, who, in this undertaking, would show courteous in granting the request of his friends, appear pious in promoting the general good, and, withal, satisfy the appetite of his own ambition and revenge. Wherefore, with treasure, whereof he had plenty, he provided men and arms, and prepared with all speed for the expedition.

10. But he could not be more busy about his war, than Xene was employed about her wantonness, counting in life all spilled that was not sport; who, to revenge herself on envious death, meant in mirth to make herself reparation for the shortness of her life. That time, which flieth of itself, she sought to drive away with unlawful recreations. And though music did jar, and mirth was profaneness, at this present time, wherein all did feel what was bad and fear what was worse; yet she by wanton songs (panders to lust!) and other provocatives, did awaken the sleeping sparks of her corruption into a flame of open wickedness.

11. But it was a great and sudden abatement to her jollity, to hear that Andronicus, with a puissant army, was approaching the city. Alexius Proto-Sebastus, her minion, did woo all people to make resistance. But he found abundance of neuters, (of that lukewarm temper which heaven and hell doth hate,) “who would not out of their houses, but stay at home and side with neither party.”\* These did maintain, that the public good was nothing but the result of many men’s particular good; and therefore held, that, in saving their own, they advanced the general [good]. Indeed, they hoped, though the great vessel of the State was wrecked, in a private fly-boat of neutrality to waft their own adventure safe to the shore. But who ever saw dancers-on-ropes so equally to poise themselves, but at last they fell down and brake their necks? And we will take the boldness to point at these hereafter, and to show what was their success.

12. The best thing which befriended Proto-Sebastus, next to

\* Ἐν τούτοις μάνοις καθῆσθαι, καὶ μηδενὶ προστίθεσθαι τῶν μερῶν.

his own money, was the obliging disposition of Xene. She had as many nets as gestures to catch affections in ; and, with her smiles, did not only press but pay all carpet-knights\* and amorous persons to be of her party. The city of Constantinople was thrice walled, “with wood, stones, and bones,”—plenty of shipping, artificial fortifications, and multitudes of men. The worst was, their arsenal was a goodly stable of gallant wooden horses, but they wanted riders to manage them, the Grecians at this time being very simple seamen ; though nature may seem both to woo and teach them to be skilful mariners, by affording them plenty of safe harbours. However, the Grecians, conceiving navigation beneath their honour, (which indeed was above their industry,) resigned the benefit of trading in their own seas to the Italians of Pisa, Genoa, Florence, and Venice. Proto-Sebastus hired mercenary mariners of these ; and with them manned his ships, stopping the passages of Propontis, by which Andronicus, coming from Paphlagonia, out of the Lesser Asia, was to pass.

13. But now an admiral was to be provided for his navy. Conto-Stephanus, the great duke, formerly mentioned, challenged the place as proper to himself, scorning to be made a stale to wear the style in peace, and not to execute the office in war, when occasion was offered to show his valour, and serve his country. What should Proto-Sebastus do ? It is equally dangerous to offend or employ him. Yet he resolves on the latter, not willing to teach him to be dishonest by suspecting him, and conceiving it to be an engagement, on a noble nature, to be trusty, because he was trusted. But he no sooner received the charge, but betrayed all the galleys to Andronicus ; whereby, in an instant, he was made master of all those seas. The news whereof being brought to the city, O what riding, what running, what packing, what posting ! Happy he that could trip up his neighbour’s heels, to get first into the favour of Andronicus. Many that staked their wives and children at home in the city, had laid good bets abroad on the opposite party.

\* According to PHILLIPS and KERSEY: “*Knights of the carpet* are another sort of knights, made out of the field [of battle], and so called because, in receiving their order, they commonly kneel upon a carpet.” Hence it became a proverbial expression to designate a man who, in modern days, is sometimes styled “a *parade general*,”—one who has had less inclination, than opportunity, to distinguish himself by his skill and prowess in active service. A carpet knight is therefore properly defined by Dr. Johnson, “a knight that has never known the field, and has recommended himself only at table.”—EDIT.

14. Andronicus, being easily wafted over, comes to the gates of Constantinople. Here, to oppose him, there was rather a skirmish than a fight, or rather a flourish than a skirmish ; the land forces consisting of two sorts :—first, old soldiers, who formerly having been notorious plunderers had their arms so pressed down with the weight of the people's just curses, that they could not lift up their swords to any purpose ; but, having formerly preyed on their friends, were made a prey to their foes :—secondly, citizens, used only to traverse their shops, and unacquainted with military performances. The city, once entered, was instantly conquered, whose strength was much over-famed : such populous places, like unwieldy bodies, sink with their own weight.

15. Proto-Sebastus was taken prisoner, and was kept some days and nights waking, being pinched when once offering to shut his eyes : a torment which we meet not with to be used to so high a person, though, they say, of late in fashion for the discovery of witches.

But, to put him out of his pain, Andronicus is conceived, by some, merciful unto him, in causing his eyes to be bored out, seeing it was less torture not to see, than not to sleep. So much for this great coward ; though this his character cannot be guessed from his demeanour herein, seeing a better soldier might have been worsted in this expedition against forces of open foes, and fraud of seeming friends, it being impossible to make them fight who are resolved to fly.

16. The army thus entering the city, some outrages they must of course commit ; but those neither for number nor nature such as might have been expected. For when a place is taken by assault, the most strict commanders are not able to keep the mouths of their soldiers' swords fasting ; but may be commended for moderate, if they feed not to a surfeit. Besides, such was the infinite wealth of Constantinople, her treasures would tempt the fingers of saints, much more of soldiers ; the Paphlagonians, whereof the army consisted, vowed, that, seeing their swords had done so good service, they would make hilts of gold for their blades of steel.

17. There was then inhabiting in the city of Constantinople multitudes of Franks, (understand French, Germans, and principally Italians,) so that well might this city be called New Rome, from the abundance of Latins that lived therein. These, first by manufactures, and then by merchandize, got great wealth, (their diligence being more, and luxury less, than the

Greeks,) insomuch that they engrossed all trading to themselves. This attracted the envy of the natives, that strangers should suck the marrow of the State; alleging, that, in process of time, the ivy would grow to be an oak, and those prove absolute in their own power who, at first, were dependent for their protection. Andronicus, with something more than a bare connivance, though less than a full command, freely consigned these Franks over to the rapine of his army.

18. Such of them as related by former friendship or alliance to the Grecians, fled to them for shelter; who, instead of preserving, persecuted them, their company being conceived infectious, lest it should bring the plague of the soldiers' fury along with it. And who finds a faithful friend in misery? All their goods were spoiled, and most of their lives spilled, save such as formerly had escaped by flight to their ships. Thus Andronicus found a cheap way, both to pay his soldiers, and please the people, who counted him an excellent physician of the State, and this a great cure done by him, in purging the superfluous, yea, noxious aliens out of the city. Indeed, careful he was to preserve the city itself from spoiling, as having then a squint eye at the empire; and, knowing Constantinople to be the seat thereof, he would not deface that fair chair into which, in due time, he hoped himself to sit down.

---

## SECTION II.

1. ANDRONICUS, being thus peaceably possessed of Constantinople, (*anno Domini* 1180,) first made his humble address to the young emperor Alexius, and ceremoniously kissed his feet. The spectators variously commented on his prodigious *humility* therein; some conceiving, he meant to build high, because he began so low; others thinking, that their toes had need beware the cramp whose feet he kissed.

2. The next stage whereon his hypocrisy acted, was the great church itself; where meeting Theodorus the patriarch at the door, he encountered him with transcendent courtship, protesting, that, in him, he beheld the pattern of St. Chrysostom, his famous predecessor; it being questionable, whether that worthy Father did more truly survive, in the learned books he left to posterity, or in the looks and life of Theodorus. And whilst the patriarch was meditating a modest reply, Andronicus did

pour compliments so full and fast upon him, that, stifled therewith, he could breath no answer in return, but only fell into a swoon of amazement.

3. Hence he advanced into the choir, unto the monument of Manuel his kinsman, and late emperor. At sight whereof, the tears trickled down his reverend checks, as if they had run a race which of them should be the foremost. Some interpreted this, the love which Andronicus bore to the memory of the dead emperor; and others feared, that, as the moist dropping of stones is the forerunner of foul weather, so this relenting of his hard heart presaged some storm, to follow after, in the State. Then, coming to Manuel's tomb, ordering his voice so low as seeming he might not be—and yet so loud as certain he was—heard what he spake, he expressed himself to this effect:—

4. "Dear Manuel, my loyalty styles thee sovereign, but my blood calls thee cousin. I will not say, it was thy fault, but my fate, not to have my love to thee understood, according to the integrity of my intentions. My innocence, by thee, was banished into a far country. The burden did not grieve me, but the hand that laid it on; not so much to be an exile, as an exile made by thee. However, all my revenge unto thee shall be in advancing the honour and safety of thy son Alexius; to free whose innocence from the abuse of his friend-pretended enemies, I have embarked myself in a dangerous and desperate design. Yea, my manifold infirmities (of which I am most conscious) grieve me not so much in my own behalf, as because thereby I am rendered disable from being serviceable to your son in so high a degree as I desire."

5. Then, sinking his voice past possibility of being overheard, he continued:—"Base, bloody hound! which chasest me from place to place! I here arrest thy drowsy ashes, it being now past thy power to break this marble chest. I scorn to ungrave thy dust, wishing that all my enemies were as sumptuously entombed! But thy son, wife, daughter, favourites, friends, name, memory, I will utterly destroy. The poet's fancy begat three Furies in hell, and I will be the fourth on earth."

6. Some will demand how we came to the knowledge of this speech, being so secretly delivered. It is answered, it is possible\* some invisible ear might lie in ambush within the ear-reach of his words. Besides, let me not be challenged for a

\* In all editions, except the first, this word is printed "impossible," much to the injury of the sense.—EDIT.

libel, who can produce the party from whom I received it; and, amongst others, discharge myself on one principal author of excellent credit: \* though I believe that this speech was never taken from the original of Andronicus's mouth, but was translated from the black copy of his wicked actions, which afterward he committed.

7. His devotions ended, he retired to his own house; and there lived very privately, as renouncing all worldly pomp and pleasure, whilst his engineers, underhand, were very active to procure the empire for him; which was thus contrived: A petition was drawn, in the name of all the people, requesting Andronicus, that he would be pleased, for the good of the State, to be chosen joint emperor with Alexius. This was subscribed by the principal men in every place; and then herds of silly souls did the like. They never consulted with the contents of the paper, whether it was bond, bill, libel, or petition; but thought it a sin, not to score their marks where, they were told, their betters had gone before them. At first they wanted names for their parchment, but afterward parchment for their names. Here it would be tedious to recount what sleights and forgeries were used herein. If any delayed to subscribe, they were presently urged with great men's precedents:—that it was superstition, to be more holy than the bishops; rigour, to be more just than the judges; malapertness, to pretend to more wisdom than so many statesmen, who had already signed it. And, thus, many fearful souls were compelled to consent, by the tyranny of others' examples. Indeed, some few there were who durst be honest; whose souls did stand on a basis of their own judgments, without leaning, with implicit faith, on others. These disavowed this State-bigamy, protesting against the co-empireship of Andronicus, and boldly affirming, that crowns take a master if they accept a mate. But, then, all their names were returned unto Andronicus, who registered them in his black calendar, who, for the present, did remember, and for the future would require them.

8. The principal agent, that openly promoted this business, was Basilius, a bishop, one that *professed* heaven, and *practised* earth; much meddling in temporal matters, being both lewd and lazy in his own profession. Only herein he had the character of a good churchman,—that “by his preaching and living he set forth his office accordingly.”

\* NICETAS CHONIATES, in *Vita Alexii*, numero 16.

9. And now, the scene being covertly laid, in a solemn assembly, on a high festival, this bishop, as the mouth of the rest, (whose names he held in a parchment-roll,) represented to Andronicus the sincere intentions and earnest wishes of the State, most humbly requesting him, that he would be pleased so far to ease the tender years of his dear kinsman, young Alexius, as to bear half the burden of the crown, and to accept to be joint emperor with him ; presuming, that such was the goodness and humility of Andronicus, that he would not disdain a part, though he did deserve the whole ; and, after a long oration, concluded :—“ Thus anciently the Roman senate coupled old delaying Fabius with over-hasty Marcellus, blending youth with age, the swift with slow ; wholesome mixture, when the one brought eyes, the other hands ; the one was for advice, the other for action. And thus alone it is possible, that the distempered state of the Grecian empire at this present can be cured with this cordial, and sacred composition, of the gravity of your Highness to temper the green years of Alexius.”

10. Hereat Andronicus discovered a strangeness in his looks, as if he had needed an interpreter to understand the language which was spoken unto him ; and, after some pause, proceeded :—“ Let me not be censured for unmannerly in not returning my thanks, having my soul for the present possessed with a higher employment of admiration, that so many aged statesmen, as rich in wisdom as years, should be so much mistaken in mine abilities as to conceive me in any degree fit for the moiety of a crown. Go, choose some gallant, whose very flesh is steel, can march all day, and watch all night, whose vast achievements may add honour unto your empire. Alas ! my pale face, lean cheeks, dim eyes, faint heart, weak legs, speak me fit for no crown, but a coffin, no royal robes, but a winding-sheet. Nor am I ashamed to confess, that my youth hath been exceeding vicious ; wherein I spared the devil the pains of courting me, by preferring myself to his service ; and now it is my only joy, with grief to recollect my former wickedness. Of late I have found out a small private place, (call it, as you please, *least of cells*, or *greatest of graves*,) wherein I intend wholly to devote the remnant of my life to meditation of mortality. For, seeing naturally our souls\* are too deeply-rooted in earthliness, it is good to loosen them a little before ; that so by death they may be plucked up with the more easiness. Not that wilfully, either

\* “Ourselves” in all editions except the first.—EDIT.

out of laziness or sullenness, I decline to serve my country, which claims a share in me. But though I know I am *not to live for myself*, I am *to die to myself*, and may now, at this age, justly challenge to myself *a writ of ease* from all worldly employment."

11. But Basilius, perceiving that he did but compliment a denial, pressed him with the greater importunity ; confessing it would torment the modesty of his Highness to be told how high the audit of his virtues did amount, knowing that he desired rather to deserve than hear his own commendations. But, withal, instantly entreated him to remember, (what he full well understood !) that the entreaties of a whole state had the power of commands ; and that Heaven itself was not so impregnable, but that it might be battered open by the importunity of poor petitioners ; that, from his acceptance of this their humble proffer, they should hereafter date the beginning of their happiness ; that this day should stand in the front of their almanacs and in scarlet-text, as a leader, command over the rest which followed it, as the new birth-day of the Grecian empire.

12. However, at that present, nothing more was effected ; and, because it was late, the assembly was dismissed : only some principal persons were appointed, with their private persuasions, to mollify the stiffness of Andronicus ; who prevailed so far, that, meeting next morning in the full concourse of all sorts of people, Andronicus first loosened the vizard of his dissimulation for a time, letting it fairly hang by ; at last it fell off of its own accord, and thankfully accepted their shouts and exclamations, with, "God save ALEXIUS and ANDRONICUS, joint emperors of Greece !"

13. Then, mounted on a high tribunal, he made an eloquent oration ; as, indeed, he was not only sweet but luscious in his language, and with the circles of fine phrases could charm any stranger both into love and admiration of his person. Smiling with a pleasant countenance, he told them, that he conceived his own condition was represented in the eagle, displayed in the imperial standard : for as naturalists report that the sovereign of birds renews his age, so he seemed to himself grown young again ; as if the heavens had bestowed upon him new shoulders for new burdens ! And seeing it was their pleasure to elect him to the place, he promised to rescue right out of the paws of oppression, to be the only "Master of Requests ;" so that all complaints should have free access to him, and, if just, redress from him. But especially he would be careful of his own con-

versation, intending (grace assisting him !) “to have a law in his own example.” In a word, his speech was all excellent good in itself, save for this only fault,—that not one syllable thereof was either truly intended or really performed.

14. The solemnities of his coronation were performed in great state, with much pomp and expense : and we may observe, that the coronations of usurpers are generally more gorgeous in their celebrations, than those of lawful princes. For usurpers, out of excessive joy of what they have undeservedly gotten, care not what cost they lavish. Besides, ceremonies are more substantial to them, to tell the world what they are ; who otherwise would take less notice of them, as not entitled by any right to the place they possess. Whereas kings, on whose heads crowns are dropped from heaven by lineal descent, often save superfluous charges at their coronation, as being but a bare ceremony, deriving or adding no right unto them, but only clearing and declaring the same to others.

15. The noise of the people’s shouts did alarm young Alexius, who hitherto was fast sleeping in some obscure corner, and little dreamt that mean while an empire was stolen away from him. But now, coming to Andronicus, he publicly congratulated his happiness, and with a smiling countenance embraced him, as heartily glad that he had gotten so good a companion in so great an employment. We read, that in the country of Lithuania, there is a peculiar custom,—that married men have *adjutores tori*, “ helpers of the marriage-bed,” who, by their consent, lie with their wives ; and these husbands are so far from conceiving either hatred or jealousy against them, that they esteem them their principal friends. Surely, the beds in that country are bigger than in other places ; seeing, amongst all other nations, a wife is a vessel wherein the Cape-merchant will not admit any adventurers to share with him. It seems, Alexius was one of this Lithuanian temper, that could accept a partner in his empire, tickled with joy at the shows and solemnities of his coronation : and well might he laugh till his heart did ache, though some did verily think, that, amongst all the pageants there presented, he himself was the strangest and most ridiculous spectacle. As for Xene the empress, she appeared not at all in public, being pensive at home, having almost wept out her own eyes because Proto-Sebastus had his bored out.

16. Next very day, in all patents and public receipts, their names were transposed,—first Andronicus, and then Alexius ; this reason being rendered, that it was unfitting that a youth

should be preferred before so grave and reverend an old man ; or rather, because, as in Numeration, the figure is to be put before the cipher. Here some of the friends of Alexius propounded to stop the ambition of Andronicus before the gangrene thereof spread further ; seeing what he received did not satisfy but enlarge his proud breast, prompting new thoughts unto him, and widening his heart for higher desires. The motion found many to praise, but not to practise it ; none would do what all desired were done. The younger sort conceived, that this office, because dangerous, was most proper for old men to undertake, who need not to be thrifty of their lives, seeing it was too late to spare at the bottom. Old men were of the opinion, it best beseemed the boldness and activity of youth : and such as were of middle age did partake of the excuses of both. Thus, in a project that is apparently desperate, even those who are proudest on their terms of honour will be so humble as, in modesty, to let meaner men go before them.

17. As for "the Lords of the Combination," (who first procured Andronicus's coming to Constantinople,) they found themselves, that they now had far over-shot the mark they aimed at. For they intended only to use him for the present, to humble and abate the pride and power of Proto-Sebastus : which done, they meant either wholly to remove or warily to confine him. But now what they chose for physic must be given them for daily food : and woful is the condition of that man who, in case of necessity, taking hot water to prevent swooning, must ever after drink it for beverage, even to the burning out of his bowels. For Andronicus, though he came in as a tenant-at-will, would hold his place in fee to himself and his heirs. And whereas the aforesaid lords promised themselves, if not advancement to new, assurance to their old, offices, they found themselves preferred to nothing but neglect and contempt ; neither intrusted in the advice, nor employed in the execution, of any matters of moment.

18. Indeed, Andronicus did loathe the sight of those lords, as debtors do of bailiffs, as if their very looks did arrest him to pay for those grand favours which he had formerly received from them,—brought by their help from banishment, to power and wealth in the city. Nor would he make use of them, as too sturdy to be pliable to his projects, standing on their former deserts and present dignities ; but employed those osiers of his own planting, which might be easily wreathed to all purposes,

being base upstarts, depending on his absolute pleasure. And as he used these alone, so these, only in matter of execution; who, taking himself (and therein not mistaken !) to be sole friend to himself, would not impart his counsels to any one, being wont to say, that "ships sink as deep with one as with one hundred leaks."

19. We will conclude this book with an independent story, hoping the reader will take it as we find it:—There was a noted beggar in Constantinople, well known to the people thereabouts, (as who had almost worn the thresholds of noblemen's doors as bare as his own clothes,) an exceeding tall, raw-boned body, with a meagre and lank belly, so that he might have passed for famine itself. This man was found begging about the lodgings of Andronicus, very late at night, at an unseasonable hour,—except one would say, that men of his profession, as they are never out of their way, so they are never out of their time, but may seasonably beg at any hour when they are hungry. Being apprehended at the guard, and accused for a conjurer, (his ugly face being all the evidence against him,) Andronicus delivered him over to the indiscreet discretion of the people, to do with him as they pleased. These wild justicers, [justiciaries,] without legal proof or further proceeding, for alms, bestowed on him a pile of wood and a great fire, where they burnt him to ashes; whose face might justly have entitled him to a whipping-post, but not to a stake.

20. Say not, that this is beneath our History, to insert the death of a beggar in the life of an emperor: for all innocents are equal in the court of heaven: and this poor man, who, whilst alive, was so loud at great men's doors, for meat to preserve his life,—his blood may be presumed to be as crying and clamorous at the gates of heaven to revenge his death. For herein Andronicus taught the people to be tyrannical,—a needless lesson to such apt scholars, who afterwards proved proficients herein, to the cost of their teacher, as, God willing, shall be showed hereafter.

---

### SECTION III.

1. THE news of Andronicus's being chosen joint-emperor, no sooner arrived at the ears of Maria Cæsarissa, (*anno Domini 1181,*) but she was drowned in a deluge of grief; being

beholden to nature that she could vent herself in tears,—seeing that sorrow which cannot bleed in the eyes, doth commonly fester in the heart. And when her nurse lovingly chid her for excessive sadness, she pleaded her sex, which can scarce do any thing without overdoing ; so that feminine passions must either not be full or overflow.

2. But anger soon after having got the conquest of her own grief, with furious speed she repaired to the place where “the Lords of the Combination” were assembled, and there she abruptly vented herself in these expressions :—

3. “Greece is grown barbarous, and quite bereft of its former worth ; not so much as the ruins of valour left in you, to reach forth unto posterity any signs that you were extracted from brave ancestors ! Time was when the Grecian youth adventured for the golden fleece : you may now adventure for the ass’s skin, the dull emblem of your own conditions ! The *merry* Greek hath now drowned the proverb of the *valiant* Greek. Tame traitors all ! that could behold an usurper mate and check your lawful emperor, and neither wag hand or tongue in opposition ! Did my father Manuel, for this, impair his own to raise your estates ? He made you honourable and great : O that he could have made you grateful ! The best is, your very sin will be your punishment. And though your practice hath been so base, your judgment cannot be so blind as to believe, that your channels of nobility can have a stream, when the fountain of honour is dammaed up by your unworthiness.”

4. The lords, though by their silence they seemed first to swallow her words, yet the expression of “tame traitors” would not go down their throats ; the largest souls being narrowest in point of credit, and soonest choked with a disgrace. Mamalus, therefore, in the behalf of the rest : “Madam,” said he, “sufficeth it now for us barely to deny your speech. Had you been a man, we should have proceeded to defy the speaker. What your passion now condemns in us for base, your judgment will not only acquit for right, and approve for safe, but even commend for honourable, and advantageous for our master Alexius. Our lives and lands are at the sole dispose and the cruel mercy of our enemies. We are instantly undone, if we whisper the least and lowest syllable of loyalty, and utterly disabled from any future service to Alexius. We conceive it therefore better, for a time, to bow to our foes, rather than to be broken by them ; to spare in words, and spend what we please in thoughts. We want not a will, but wait a time, to express our reality to

the emperor, with most safety to ourselves, and effect for him, in a season least subject to suspicion."

5. Pacified with these words, she was contented to attend the performance of the promise, in time convenient; though never living so long as to behold it, being prevented by violent death. For now Andronicus began freely to rage in innocent blood, cutting off such nobles as he thought would oppose him. Something like truth was alleged against them, to stop the clamours of the multitude. And power never wants pretences, and those legal, to compass what it doth desire. They were indicted of conspiracy against Andronicus; and knights of the post (of the devils own dubbing!) did depose it against them. Yea, silence was not enough to preserve men's innocence; some being accused that their noses did wrinkle, or their eyes wink, or their foreheads frown, or their fingers snap, treason against Andronicus!

6. In this his epidemical cruelty, it was much that a famous jester of the court escaped his fury. Of this fellow, his body downwards was a fool, his head a knave, who did carefully note, and cunningly vent, by the privileges of his coat, many State-passages, uttering them in a wary twilight betwixt sport and earnest. But, belike, Andronicus would not break himself by stooping to so low revenge; and made conscience in breaking the ancient charter of jesters, though wronging the liberty of others of greater concernment.

7. Of such as were brought to public execution, it was strange to behold the difference of their demeanour. Some, who were able to be miserable, with an undaunted mind did become their afflictions, and by their patience made their miseries to smile, not bowing their souls beneath themselves, only appealing for justice in another world. Others did foolishly rage and ramp, mustering whole legions of curses, as if therewith to make the axe turn edge; and then, seeing no remedy but death, their souls did not bow by degrees, but fell flat in an instant; of lions, turning calves, half-dead with fear, received the fatal stroke of the executioner. So many were confusedly huddled to death, it is hard to rank them in order; only we will insist on some principal persons.

8. First, Maria Cæsarissa and her husband; (whether it was conscience or manners, not to part man and wife;) and because Andronicus durst not, for fear of the people, bring them to public death, their physician was bribed with gold, which he conceived cordial for himself; and thereupon he did quickly

purge out both their souls by poison,—an unsuspected way, which robs men of their lives, and yet never bids them to stand.

9. Next followed Xene, the mother-empress, being accused of high treason for attempting to betray the city of Belgrade to Bela king of Hungary. A packed council condemned her to death, who, though otherwise vicious, was generally bemoaned, as most innocent in this particular. But Andronicus the emperor cunningly derived the whole hatred hereof on young Alexius, (whose power he never used or owned, but only to make him the cloak-father for odious acts,) urging him to sign the warrant for her execution. In the stout refusal whereof, Alexius showed more constancy than was expected to come from him, clearly answering all arguments, herein showing himself a child in affection, and more than a child in judgment. Whereupon some ground their presumptions, that his soul deserved better breeding, and that he was not to be censured for weakness of capacity; but rather his friends to be condemned for want of care, and himself to be bemoaned for lack of education. He flatly told Andronicus, that Nero was recorded “monster” to all ages for killing his mother; and that he would never consent to *her* death *that* gave him life.

10. But he proceeded to aggravate the crime of Xene; Belgrade being such a piece of strength that it was a whole province in effect; and though but a town in bulk, was a kingdom in benefit, all Greece awfully attending the fortune thereof. He minded Alexius, that “*fathers of countries* should know no mothers;” but that sovereigns’ affections are only of kin to the good and safety of their subjects. “Besides,” saith he, “you need not scruple so much at her death, who is dead whilst living, and hath been many years drowned in luxury: so that what was cruelty in Nero, will be exemplary justice in you.”

11. Alexius rejoined, that if his mother Xene was so drowned in luxury, the more need she had to drown her sins in penitent tears, except it were conceived charity to kill both her soul and body; that princes were not to own private affections, where they were destructive to the common good, but might and must, where they consisted with the public safety; or else to become *a prince*, would be all one as to leave off to be *a man*. Grant Belgrade a strong place, it was still in their own possession, and her intended treason succeeded not. And, therefore, he conceived it a middle and indifferent way, that she should be deprived of liberty for plotting of treason, and yet be permitted to live because the plot took no effect; a cloister should be

provided, whereto she should be close confined, therein to do penance for her former enormities ; and in this sentence he conceived that he impartially divided himself betwixt the affection of a child, and severity of a judge.

12. But Andronicus, who was resolved to have no denial, highly commended him for his filial care of his mother's soul. " Yet," said he, " for the benefit thereof, fifty friars, at my own proper charges, shall be appointed, who, after her death, night and day, shall daily pay their prayers in her behalf, whose suffrages are as well known above, as her prayers are strangers there ; it being to be presumed, that, whilst she is living, the Heavens will be deaf to her, who so long hath been dumb to them. Speak not of her project, that it took no effect ; for, had it succeeded, none would have called it *treason*, but have beheld it under a more favourable notion." He minded Alexius, that he had sufficient power of himself, being joint emperor, to put her to death ; but that he would in no case deprive him of this peerless opportunity of eternizing his memory to posterity, and securing the State by his necessary severity. For all hereafter would be deterred from attempting of treason, as despairing of pardon, when they beheld the exemplary justice on his own mother.

13. Alexius still persisting in his denial, Andronicus at last fell to flat menacing ; yet so cunningly carried it, that his threats did not seem to proceed from any anger, but from love to the person, and grief for the perverseness, of Alexius. He protested, he would no more break his sleep, he would steer the State no longer ; let even the winds and the waves hereafter be the pilots to that crazy vessel. He called the Heavens to witness, (before whom he entered a caveat to preserve his own innocence !) how he had tendered happiness to Alexius, but could not force it upon him, who wilfully refused it. In a word, so passionate he was, and so violent was the stream of his importunity, that the young emperor, either out of weakness, or weariness to swim against it, was at last carried away with the current thereof, and subscribed the warrant.

14. To divert whose mind from musing upon it, a solemn hunting in the country was contrived, that there he might take his pleasure. In a forest not far off, a stately stag was lodged, ambitious (as they told him) to fall by the hand of an emperor, or else to be dubbed a *hart imperial*, if chancing to escape. All things being ready, Alexius is carried thither ; but, withal, those are sent along with him who hunted this hunter, marked

all his motions, learned the language of his looks and hands, with the different dialects of his several fingers, so that he could not speak a word, or make a sign, to any of his faithful servants, but presently it was observed, and, if material, reported to Andronicus. None of his friends durst show any discontent. If any was seen sadly to wag his head, it was a certain sign that that head stood but loose on his shoulders ; and, by the next return, the news would be, that it was fallen off : so miserable was the condition of this prince, and of all his followers !

15. But Andronicus had a hind to hunt at home, and must provide for the execution of Xene. And now, to enter the tender years of his son Manuel for great actions, he thought first to blood him with an empress, in private delivering the warrant unto him. Behold here an unexpected accident ! This good child of a bad father (grace can cut off the oldest and strongest entail of wickedness !) refused the employment, alleging, there was no such dearth of hangmen that a prince need take their office ; and that it was against his conscience, her crime being rather packed than proved, seeing she was never brought to answer for herself. Hereat his father, mad with rage, rated and reviled him :—“Bastard ! thou wert never true eagle’s bird, whose eyes are dazzled at the sun of woman’s beauty. What ! doth thy cowardice take sanctuary at conscience ? He never climbs a throne that stands on such poor pretences. What, if she never appeared to answer ? Where the fact itself doth cry, it is needless for the offender to speak. Narrow-hearted fool ! A cottage is fitter for thee than an empire. Have I pawned mine own soul to found thy greatness, and am I thus requited ?” and so abruptly brake off into weeping.

16. Manuel modestly returned :—“I am sorry, sir, you should *pawn* your soul for my sake ; but, however, I am resolved not to *lose* mine own. Whosoever climbs a throne without conscience, never sits sure upon it. I had rather succeed to your private paternal possession, than to an ill-gotten empire. Nor am I dazzled at the lustre of her beauty, but at the clearness of her innocence ; all men being generally compurgators for her integrity herein. Employ me, and try my valour in any other service. Command, and I will fetch the lion’s only heir out of his den, both in sight and spite of sire and dam. Only herein I desire to be excused, and I hope deserve not to be accounted a coward for fearing to commit a sin !” How much Andronicus was be-madded hereat, may easier be conceived than expressed,—to receive a final repulse

from his own son ! Insomuch as, at the last, he was fain to make use of Hagiο-Christophorites Stephanus, captain of the guard, who alone, of all “the Lords of the Combination,” stuck to him, and was respected of him ; and he very fairly took order to despatch her, stifling her, as some say, betwixt two pillows.

17. The next news which took possession of the tongues and ears of people, was the cruel and barbarous death of young Alexius : whilst the vulgar did wonder that he died so soon ; and the wise did more admire that he lived so long ; and the difference was not great, betwixt him that was now but a ghost, and, whilst living, but a shadow. Basilius went too far to fetch a fit parallel out of the Roman history, to compare Andronicus and Alexius with old Fabius and sprightly Marcellus ;\* who might have met in the same story, far nearer, (because later by a hundred years,) a more lively resemblance in the consulship of Julius Cæsar and Bibulus ; whereof the one did all, the other drank all.

18. The manner of Alexius’s death was, that he had his neck broken with a bow-string ; the punishment in that place (as still amongst the Turks) much used : and, in this tyrant’s reign, the string did cruelly strangle more at home, than the bow did valiantly kill abroad. This bow-string (to make a short digression) was an instrument whereon Andronicus used to play, and sportingly to make much mirth and music thereon to himself, calling it his “medicine for all maladies.” “For whereas,” said he, “purges were base, vomits worse, cupping painful, clysters immodest, blood-letting cruel ; this bow-string had all the opposite good qualities unto them ; and the same did quench the heat of fevers, drain the moisture of dropsies, cure pleurisies without piercing a vein, stay the vertigo, heal the strangury, by opening the urine, and only stopping the breath.” This being one base humour of Andronicus, (unworthy civility and Christianity !) to break jests on men in misery, just as they were to die. As for the corpse of Alexius, (on whom he had practised with his foresaid medicine,) they were most unworthily handled ; and dead bodies, though they cannot be hurt, may be wronged, especially of such eminent persons.

19. Now, to refresh the reader amidst so many murders and massacres, it will not be amiss to insert an unexpected marriage. Alexius left Anna an empress-dowager : and some days after her husband’s death, he [Andronicus] addressed himself a suitor unto

\* *Vide supra*, sect. ii. parag. ix. p. 412.

her, being to encounter with invincible disadvantages. First, he came reeking with the blood of slain Alexius; and what hope could he have, that she would embrace that viper that had stung her other-self to death? Secondly, the disproportion of his age, being past seventy; and what motley-coloured marriage would it make, to join his gray to green? his cold November being enough to kill her flowery May! Notwithstanding all this, he had formerly been so fleshed with fortune, he conceived he could never be lean afterwards; and knew, that, in matters of this nature, confidence in attempting is more than half the way to success.

20. First, he possessed himself of her judgment, and made her believe that all his former undertakings were in service to her, grieving that Alexius did not value the pearl he wore. He protested, there was nothing about him old but his hairs, which were dyed white not by his age, but by his carefulness for her preservation. Then, he assaulted her affection, principally pressing that argument, which was never propounded to a mere woman and returned with a denial, namely, assuring her of power and greatness, promising she should be the conduit through which all his favours should pass, and all his people under his command should be blessed or blasted by her influence. Neither were gifts wanting, and those of the largest size, bestowed on her servants, who promoted his cause; and the dullest bodies work on the most subtle souls, by the mediation of such spirits.

21. Now, whether it was out of childishness, (not being full fourteen,) or out of fear, (being far from her friends, and her person in his power,) or out of pride, (loath to abate of her former state,) she assented to his desire. But, to speak plainly, he sheweth himself to have store of leisure, and want of work, who is employed to find a root in reason for all the fruit that grows from fancy: sufficeth it, she loved him, affirming it was no wonder that he should take a poor lady's affections captive, whose valour in the field had subdued the most manly of his enemies.

22. To make this story pass for probable, we may fellow it with the like in our English chronicles. Richard III., though not so old, more ugly than Andronicus, obtained the love of, and was married to, the countess of Warwick, the relict of prince Edward, (son to king Henry VI.,) whom the same Richard had slain at Tewkesbury,—she knowing so much, and he not denying it. They were name-sakes, both Annes; and

when they had cast up their audit, both, I believe, might equally boast of their bargains!

23. But Andronieus, who was never unseasonably amorous, (but had his lust subordinate to his ambition and cruelty, when they gave him leave and leisure to prosecute his pleasure,) was not softened by the dalliance of marriage, to remit any thing of his former tyranny. He protested that he counted the day lost, wherein he had not killed or tortured some eminent person, or else so planet-struck him with his frowns, that he enjoyed not himself after. He never put two men together to death after the same way, as not consisting with his state to wear one torture threadbare; but ever appeared in exchange and variety of new manner of punishments. And if any wonder, that there was not a general insurrection made against this monster of mankind, to rend him from the earth; know that he had one humour that did much help him, in being stern and cruel to noblemen, but affable and courteous to poor people, and so still kept in with the vulgar. Besides, many stately structures he erected, and sweetened his cruelties with some good acts for the public. Now, that we might not seem to have weeded the life of Andronicus, or to be akin to those flies which, travelling by many fragrant flowers, only make their residence on some sore or dunghill, we will recount some of his good deeds; and pity it was, that they had not proceeded from a better author.

24. He surveyed the walls of Constantinople, and mended them, wheresoever the chinks thereof did call for reparation. He plucked down all the buildings without, (yet so, that the owners sustained no loss thereby,) for fear, in case of an enemy's invasion, those houses might serve them for ladders to scale the city with more ease. Thus all Constantinople was brought within the compass of her walls, as she remains at this day; not like many ill-proportioned cities in Europe which groan under over-great suburbs, (so that the children over-top the mother,) and branch themselves forth into out-streets, to the impairing of the root, both weakening and impoverishing the city itself. He bestowed great cost in adorning the Porphyry throne, which an usurper did provide and beautify, for a lawful prince to sit upon it. He brought fresh water, a treasure in that place, through a magnificent aqueduct, into the heart of the city, which after his death was spoiled out of spite, (as private revenge in a furious fit oft impairs the public good,) people disdaining to drink of his water, who had made the streets run with blood! His benefaction to "the Church of

Forty Martyrs" amounted almost to a new founding thereof, intending his tomb in that place; though it was arrant presumption in him, who had denied the right of sepulture to others, to promise the solemnity thereof unto himself.

25. But that which gained him the greatest reputation far and near, even amongst those that never saw his face, was an edict for the saving of shipwrecked goods. There was amongst the Greeks a constant practice, founded in cruelty, and strengthened by custom, that if a vessel was discovered in danger of drowning, those on the shore, like so many ravenous vultures, flocked about that carcass to pick out the eyes thereof, the wealth therein. These made all their hay in foul weather, which caused them not only duly to wait, but heartily to wish, for a tempest: and as the wicked tenants in the Gospel concluded to "kill the heir that so the inheritance might be their own," these remorseless men, to prevent future cavils and clamours about the goods, dispatched the mariners, always by wilful neglecting their preservation, and too often by downright contriving their destruction; more cruel than the very stocks and stumps of trees, which, growing by rivers' sides, commonly hang over the water, as if out of pity tendering their service to such as are in danger of drowning, and stooping down to reach their hands to help them to the shore! Now, Andronicus, taking this barbarous custom into consideration, forbade it, for the time to come, on most terrible penalties, (and this lion, if enraged, would by his loudness roar hearing into the deaf!) and enjoined all to improve their utmost endeavours for the preservation of their persons. Hence followed such an alteration, that shipwrecked goods, if floating to land, safely kept themselves without any to guard them. Men would rather blow their fingers, than heat their hands with a rotten plank; rather go naked, than cover themselves with a rag of shipwrecked canvass. It was ominous to steal the least inch of a cable, lest it lengthened itself into a halter to him that took it. All things were preserved equally safe, of what value soever; and untold pearl might lie on the shore untouched, like so many oyster-shells. This dispersed the fame of his justice and mercy into foreign parts: and as sounds which are carried along by the river's side, having the advantage of hollow banks and the water to convey them, are heard sooner and quicker, than sounds of the same loudness over the land; so the maritime actions of princes concerning trading, wherein strangers as well as their own native subjects are interested, report them to the world in a higher tone, and

by a quicker passage, than any land-locked action of theirs, which hath no further influence, but only terminates in their own kingdom. Yea, this one ingratiating decree of Andronicus did set him up with so full stock of reputation, that, upon the bare credit thereof, he might now run on score the committing of many murders, and never have his name once called to account for any injustice therein.

26. And as the seamen by water, so the husbandmen by land, (and those, we know, have strong lungs and stout sides !) cried up the fame of Andronicus, because he was a great preserver of tillage, and corn was never at more reasonable rates than in his reign. He cast a strict eye on all customers\* and tax-gatherers ; and as evil spirits are observed to walk much about silver mines, so Andronicus did incessantly haunt all public receivers of money ; and, if finding them faulty, O excellent sport for the people, to see how those sponges were squeezed ! He allowed large and liberal maintenance to all in places of judicature, that want might not tempt them to corruption. Thus, even the worst of tyrants light sometimes on good actions, either stumbling on them by chance, or out of love, not of virtue, but of their own security. They are wicked by the general rule of their lives, and pious by some exceptions ; just by fits, that they may be more safely unjust when they please. And hereby Andronicus advanced himself to be tolerable amongst mankind.

27. We could willingly afford to dwell longer under the temperate climate of his virtues ; but travellers must *on* their journey, coming now to the torrid zone of his fury, which indeed was not habitable. His foes he executed, because they were his foes ; and his friends, because they were his friends. For they that let out a courtesy at interest to a tyrant, commonly lose the principal : witness Conto-Stephanus, the great duke, admiral of the galleys, who, by betraying his trust, brought Andronicus to Constantinople, and now fairly had his eyes put out. As for Georgius Disypatus, Andronicus intended to roast him, being a corpulent man, upon a spit, affirming that such fat venison wanted no larding, but would baste itself ; and meant to serve him up as a dainty dish, in a charger or tray, to his widow, had not some intervening accident diverted it. He made a bloody decree, which had a train of indefinite and unlimited extent, and would reach as far as the desire of the measurer ; namely, that all such of the nobility which were

\* Custom-house officers, or collectors of dues.—**EDIT.**

now, or should hereafter be, cast into prison, should be executed without any legal trial, with their children and kindred. Prince Manuel, whose worst fault was that Andronicus begat him, in vain opposed this decree, alleging this to be the ready way for his father to un-emperor himself, by destroying that relative title, and leaving himself no subjects.

28. But Andronicus had found Scripture, whereby to justify his act, and brought St. Paul for his patron, whose practice and confession he cited: "For the good that I would, I do not; but the evil which I would not, that I do. Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me." (Rom. vii. 19, 20.) God keep us from Apocrypha-comments on canonical Scripture; send us his pure text, without the gloss of Andronicus! who, belike, conceived he could not be a perfect tyrant, by only torturing of men, except also he did rack God's word, rending text from context, and both from their true intent.

29. This decree startles such "Lords of the Combination" as were left alive, together with Mamalus, principal secretary to the late emperor, and Alexius Ducas, the most active, but not nearest, prince of the blood. These, meeting together, much bemoaned themselves, till Mamalus, counting such puling passion beneath masculine spirits, thus uttered himself:—

30. "You late adorers of Andronicus, who did conceive it would pose the power of heaven to cure the State, save only by his hand! be your own judges, whether it be not just that they should die of the physic who made a god of the physician. Diseases do but their kind, if they kill, and an evil expected is the less evil: but no such torment as to die of the remedy. Only one help is left us, if secretly and speedily pursued. We know, Isaaci Angelus, by birth and merit, is entitled to the crown. True, he lives privately in a convent; but worth cannot be hid, it shines in the dark; and greatness doth best become them to wear it, by whom it is found before it is sought for, as more deserved than desired by them. Say not, that he is of too mild a disposition; for, his soft temper will make the better poultice for our sore necks, long galled with the yoke of tyranny. And seeing we have thus long been unhappy under the extremities,—the childhood of Alexius, and old years of Andronicus,—let us try our fortunes under the middle age of Isaaci; and no doubt we shall light on the blessed mean and happy temper of moderation."

31. The motion found entertainment beyond belief. And

yet Alexius Ducas offered it to their consideration, that so meek a dove would never make good eagle ; giving a character, how a prince should be accomplished with valour and experience,—by insinuation designing himself. It is pleasant to hear a proud man speaking modestly in his own praise, whilst the auditors affect a wilful deafness, and will not hear his whispering and slanting expressions, till at last he is fain to hollow downright self-flattery into their ears ! Here it fared thus with Ducas, who thereby only exposed himself to contempt ; and, perceiving no success, zealously concurred with the rest for advancing of Isaacius. All necessary particulars were politicly contrived, each one had his task appointed him ;—some to seize on the ships, others to secure the palace, and make good the great church ; and the whole model was exactly methodized, considering the vast volume thereof, which consisted of many persons of quality therein engaged.

#### SECTION IV.

1. BUT great designs, like wounds, if they take air, corrupt. This project against Andronicus could not be covertly carried, because consisting of a medley of persons of different tempers and unsuiting souls, having private intents to themselves, not cordial, uniting their affections (but only friends “for the time being”) against the common foe : so that through the rifts and chinks of their several aims and ends, which could not be jointed close together, the vigilancy of Andronicus did steal a glimpse of their design, apprehensive enough to light a candle for himself from the spark of the smallest discovery.

2. And now, (*anno Domini 1182.*) let him alone to prevent their proceedings, by cutting both them and theirs off, (that no mindful heir might succeed to their spite !) and that with all possible speed ; for he steered his actions by the compass of that character which one made of him, as followeth :—

“ I love, at leisure, favours to bestow,  
And tickle men by dropping kindness slow :  
But my revenge I in one instant spend ;  
That moment which begins it, doth it end.

“ Half-doing undoes many ; 't is a sin  
Not to be soundly sinful,—to begin  
And tire ! I 'll do the work. They strike in vain  
Who strike so that the stricken might complain.”

3. Mamalus was the first who was brought to execution, on this manner: A mighty fire was made; and, to provoke the tyranny thereof, (as if that pure element of itself had been too fine and slender effectually to torment him!) they made the flame more stiff and stuffy, by the mixture of pitch and brimstone. Then Mamalus was brought forth stark naked, insomuch that all ingenuous beholders, out of a modest sympathy, conceived that they saw themselves naked in seeing him; and, therefore, as much as lay in their power, they covered him, by shutting their eyes. When the soldiers with pikes were provided to thrust Mamalus into the fire, whilst many spectators durst not express their pity to him, out of pity to themselves, lest commiserating of him should be understood complying with him; but were cautious to confine their compassion within the compass of their breast, that it should not sally forth into their eyes and outward gestures.

4. Betwixt this dilemma of deaths,—the sharp pikes of the soldiers on the one side, and fury of the fire on the other,—he preferred the former, not as most honourable, and best complying with a military soul, (not being at leisure, alas! in time of torment, to stand on terms of credit,) but as least painful. But the soldiers denied him this choice, and forced him into the fire; and then, hearing his shrieks, even those who refused, out of favour, to give any pity to his person, could not, out of justice, deny the payment of some compassion (bound thereunto by the specialty of humanity) unto his miserable condition.

5. Meantime Andronicus was a spectator, tickling himself with delight, only offended that the sport was so short, and Mamalus dead too soon; the stench of whose burning flesh (offensive to others!) was a perfume to him, who had the Roman nose of Caligula, Nero, Domitian, and such monsters of cruelty. And, as he pleased his own smell with the odour of revenge, his sight with beholding the execution, his ear with the music of his enemy's dying groans; so there wanted not those that wished, that his other senses were also employed according to his deserts,—his touch and taste, that they might *feelingly* partake of the torture of the fire. Thus died Mamalus, scarce twenty-four years of age, before the bud of his youth had opened into a flower; having in his parts not only promises, but some assurance, that the hopes of his future worth should be plentifully performed, had not this untimely accident prevented it.

sculked unseen ; hoping, if matters held, to be rewarded Andronicus for his secret service ; if they miscarried, to provide for his own safety ; seeing none could challenge him of appearing open ill\* actions wherein he was engaged.

7. But quickly he fell off of his speed in serving Andronicus, whether because he conceived his deserts found not a proportionable reward, or because he bare a love to the person Alexius ; or because he was not perfectly bad, and, fainting the way of wickedness, could not keep pace therein with fast and wide strides of Andronicus ; or, which is most probable, he slowly perceived his error, that tyrants pluck down the stairs whereby they ascend to their greatness : and then late, [he] began to unravel what he weaved before. True was, he had assisted Andronicus so long, that he had offended all the side of Isaacius ; and had deserted him so soon, that he disengaged all the party of Andronicus ; and so was unwilling not to have the cordial affections of either.

8. On the scaffold he spake little, expecting that the world would kill him, confessing he owed a death to nature, a violent death to justice ; and forgave all the world, save his self. Beholding the sun, " Farewell," said he, " life of my my night must be at my noon ! " and then laying his hand on his eyes : " Must I lose you thus ? Was it because I shot wanton glances, or beheld rivals with envious looks, or adored the shine of gold, that I must thus lose you ? Or was it because I acted in a dark way, to advance the cruelty of a tyrant.

yet we may be assured, that tyrant did never so do his works by the half, but that he struck out *their* teeth *whose* eyes he bored out,—so securing *their* persons that he put them past power of doing him mischief.

9. During this raging cruelty of Andronicus, we may commend in Theodorus the patriarch, rather his success than policy, (his simple goodness being incapable of the latter,) who seasonably withdrew himself from Constantinople, to a private place he had provided in the isle of Terebinthus. Here he had built him a handsome house, equally distant from envy and contempt, bravery and baseness; so that if security and sweetness had had a mind to dwell together, they could not have found a fitter place for that purpose. Several reasons moved him to his speedy removal, beside the avoiding the fury of Andronicus: First, because Basilius undermined him at the court in his patriarchship, Theodorus being absent thence, when present there; bearing only the name and blame, when the other had the power and profit thereof.

10. Secondly. To avoid the sight of people; conceiving every eye which did behold, did accuse him as a principal cause of their miseries, for helping Andronicus to the empire. In whom Theodorus had been strangely mistaken, as the best men are soonest deceived with the painted piety and pensive looks of hypocrites, counting all gold that shines, all sooth \* that is said; betrayed by their own charity into a good opinion of others. Lastly. It grieved him to see ignorance and impiety so rampant, base hands committing daily rapes on the virgin Muses; so that they might now even ring out the bell for dying learning, and sadly toll the knell for gasping religion. Wherefore, as divines solemnly observe to go off of the bench just before the sentence of condemnation is pronounced upon the malefactor; so this patriarch, perceiving the city of Constantinople cast, by her own guiltiness, and by the confession of her crying sins against herself, thought it not fit for him to stay there, till Divine Justice should pass a final, fatal doom upon that place, (which he every minute expected,) but embraced the private opportunity of departure.

11. Soon after his retiring, he ended his life. We need not inquire into his disease, if we consider his age, accounting now fourscore-and-four Winters. And well might his years be reckoned by Winters, as wanting both Springs and Summers of

\* Truth.—EDIT.

prosperity, living in constant affliction. And yet the last four years made more wounds in his heart, than all the former ploughed wrinkles in his face. He died, not guilty of any wealth, who long before had made the poor his heirs, and his own hands his executors. After hearty prayers that religion might shine when he was set, falling into a pious meditation, he went out as a lamp, for lack of oil. No warning groan was sighed forth to take his last farewell, but even he smiled himself into a corpse; enough to confute those that they belie death, who call her grim and grisly, which in him seemed lovely and of a good complexion! The few servants he left, proportioned the funeral rather to their master's estate than deserts, supplying, in their sorrow, the want of spices and balm; which, surely, must be so much the more precious, as the tears of men are to be preferred before gums, which are but the weeping of trees.

12. The patriarch's place was quickly supplied by Basilius the bishop, so often mentioned,—preferred to the place by the emperor: a patron and chaplain excellently met! for, what one made law by his list,\* the other endeavoured to make Gospel by his learning. In stating of any controversy, Basilius first studied to find out what Andronicus intended or desired to do therein; and then let him alone to draw that Scripture, which would not come of itself, to prove the lawfulness of what the other would practise! Thus, in favour of him, he pronounced the legality of two most incestuous matches; and this Grecian Pope gave him a dispensation to free him from all oaths of allegiance, which he had formerly sworn to Manuel or Alexius. For, this was the humour of Andronicus,—to have religion along with him, so far as it lay in his way; courting the company of pious pretences, if possibly they might be procured, to countenance his designs. But, in case they were so foul that no gloss of justice could be put upon them, he disdained that piety which would not befriend him, and impudently acted his pleasure in open opposition of all religion.

13. But whilst this Basilius was thus hot about his secular affairs, there wanted not an aged hermit, who took him to task, and soundly told him his own, though it made but small impression in him. Meeting him at advantage, “Hermits, you know,” saith he, “hate both luxury and compliment. In plain truth, I must chide you, that, seeing earth is but your inn, and

\* By his own *will or pleasure*.—EDIT.

heaven your home, you mistake the first for the latter. Man's soul is so intent on its present object, that it is impossible it should attend two callings at the same time, but must needs make default in the pursuance of one of them. Your temporal intermeddling draws the envy of the laity, for whose love you should rather labour. Nor are you stored with foreign observations, really to enable you for such undertakings. Say not, that you may meddle with temporal state-affairs, and yet not entangle yourself with them, seeing the world is such a witch, it is impossible to do the one without the other! Observe those clergy sticklers on the civil stage, and you shall seldom find them crowned with a quiet death. Remember your predecessor Chrysostom, who did only pray and preach, and read and write; thereby made happy in the despite of his enemies: for, though twice expelled his patriarchship, he was twice restored with greater honour; so that it was not want of policy which lost, but store of piety which caused him to recover, his place again. I speak not this out of any repining at the lustre of your preferment, who envy outward honour no more than the shining of a glow-worm, but merely out of love to your person, and desire of your happiness."

14. But Basilius, in some passion, returned: "I perceive you are lately broken loose out of your cell, which makes you more fierce and keen, like hawks when they are first unhooded, and newly restored to the light. Know, Sir, one may well attend two callings, if they be subordinate, as the means and the end. All my secular business is in order to the good of the church. The love of the laity unto us, without some awe mingled with it, can neither be long-lasting nor much serviceable. My education hath admitted me into general learning, and made me capable of any employment. I deny not the world to be a witch; but I know how to arm my soul with holy spells against all her enchantments. Whereas you say, 'One cannot meddle with worldly matters, but must entangle himself therewith'; it is all one as if you should affirm, that a temperate man cannot eat meat but he must surfeit. Proofs from the event argue not the justice or injustice of the act; and nothing can be inferred from the ill success of our meddling in secular affairs. To your instance of Chrysostom, I oppose the example of Augustine, bishop of Hippo, who set in full brightness, and yet kept a court in his own house, where he umpired and decided all temporal controversies. You trample on that which you call *pride* in me, with that which is so in yourself. And all this

proceeds out of spite, because you cannot turn your cowl into a mitre."

15. But Basilus was deaf to all these persuasions, and, joining with Hagio-Christophorites Stephanus, (chief engineer for Andronicus,) advanced all cruel designs. And now, Mamalus and Lapardas being executed, all others were possessed with a panic fear: and no wonder when the string is broken, if the beads be scattered! It being feared that the plot [had] miscarried, they strove to make themselves innocent, by first making others guilty. And yet it was vain to take the pains who should start quickest, when they all met even at the post; for Andronicus took order that they were all alike executed.

16. There were two of his creatures, Trypsicus, and Hagio-Christophorites Stephanus, who only fell out who should be most officious to him. Each had the other in jealousy; fearing his rival would engross the emperor unto him. Especially Stephanus was fearful of Trypsicus; understanding that Andronicus wrote private letters unto him, styling him, his *beloved friend*, with other expressions which spake more intimacy than Stephanus was willing to hear. This Trypsicus had been a dangerous promoter\* in all company, representing to Andronicus every syllable spoken against him, to the disadvantage of the speaker; and, as one saith, (I conceive rather in the language of the times, than his own,) "Every man then was to give an account of every idle word." It happened therefore, that one was procured, who accused Trypsicus for jeering of John, the emperor's eldest son, for [being] deformed, and that he scattered some loose expressions bewailing the misery of the times. Now, though the great service which Trypsicus had done might deserve to overweigh so light an offence; it cost him his life, confiscation of his goods, and ruin of his posterity.

17. Now hath Stephanus room to domineer alone in the favour of Andronicus, sending him to seize on Isaacius, who for the present was got out of his convent. It was past the skill of the spaniel to catch him, who dived for the instant; but we shall find him in due time above water, and that to purpose.

\* According to PHILLIPS and KERSEY: "In a law-sense, *promoters* or *pro-mooters* are a set of informers, who, for prosecuting such as offend in penal actions, have part of the fines for their reward. They chiefly belong to Spiritual Courts, the Exchequer, and the Queen's Bench."—EDIT.

## SECTION V.

1. SECURITY is the mother of danger, and the grandmother of destruction. Let Andronicus be a proof hereof; who now, (*anno Domini 1183*), nearest to his ruin, grew most confident, as conceiving he had stopped every cranny where danger might creep in, and therefore, in a bravery, he sent a defiance to Fortune herself, which, notwithstanding, was returned with his own speedy overthrow.

2. Yet could he not justly complain, that he was suddenly surprised, seeing Nature might seem to have gone out of her way to give him warning; and Nemesis did not hunt him so fast, but that she allowed him fair law to provide for himself, by several prodigies which happened at that time. But Andronicus, not only against the full intent, but almost visible meaning, of the same accidents, did make a jesting construction of them, and was deaf to the loud language of all ominous passages, as not relating unto him.

3. Being told of the apparition of a comet, (no legier-star of heaven, but an extraordinary ambassador!) portending his death, as some expounded it; he scoffingly replied, that he was glad to see the heavens so merry, to make bonfires for his triumphs: and what was a comet, but the kitchen-stuff of the air? which, blazing for a while, would go out in a snuff: adding, that that star might presage the fall of some prince that wore long hair; whereas, his was short enough. When another told him of an earthquake which had lately happened, “I am glad,” saith he, “that the mother-earth, sick of the colic, had so good a vent for her wind.”\* Being informed that the statue of St. Paul, his tutelary saint, was seen to weep; he evaded the sad presage thereof, by distinguishing on tears, there being a homonymy † in their language, as bearing not only different, but contrary, senses, proceeding either from mirth or mourning; and, therefore, that weeping might probably fore-show good success. In a word, all serious and solemn omens he tuned to a jesting meaning, keeping himself constant to

\* All editions, except the first, have “her mind,” instead of *her wind*.—EDIT.

† An equivocation. The first edition has in this place the word *harmony*, which is evidently erroneous. It was corrected in the second and subsequent editions.—EDIT.

his first principle,—“That Fortune, when feared, is a tyrant; when scorned, is a coward.” But though he unjustly perverted the sense of these prodigies, the event did truly interpret them in his destruction.

4. For, Isaacius Angelus, persecuted by the executioner, fled into the great church, (in those days *the sanctuary at large* for innocents,) where making an oration to the people, he exceeded expectation and himself, as if hitherto he had thrifly reserved his worth (a serious, others say, *simple*, man !) to spend it more freely when occasion required it. He spake not like those mercenary people who make their tongue their *ware*, and eloquence their *trade*; but he uttered himself so pathetically, that he did not court attention, but command it. He made both his innocence and the cruelty of Andronicus to appear so plain, that the people not only afforded him protection for the present, but also bestowed on him sovereignty for the future, and instantly elected and proclaimed him emperor of Greece.

5. Stand we here still, and wonder what should be the reason, that Andronicus should suffer this Isaacius, next prince of the blood, so long safely to survive, who had cut off other persons of less danger and lower degree. We cannot ascribe it to his incogitancy, as inconsistent with his vast memory to forget a matter of such importance. Less can we impute it to his pity, as if sparing him out of compassion; seeing that a thread might sooner hope to be prolonged under the knife of Atropos, than any to find favour under his impartial cruelty. Was it not, then, because he had him in his power, and, counting himself sure to seize on him at pleasure, reserved him, as sweet-meat, to close his stomach, when first he had fed on several dishes of coarser diet? or because he slighted him, as a narrow-hearted man, religiously bred in a convent, unfit for a camp, the object rather of his contempt, than fear? for that his hands might seem tied with his beads, from being dangerously active in the State. But let us remove our wondering at this neglect of Andronicus, to make room for our admiration of Divine Providence, who confounded this politician in his own cunning. Thus the most expert gamesters may sometimes *over-see*; \* and traitors, though they be careful to cut down all trees which hinder

\* This word, like many others employed by Fuller, is made to convey a double meaning: In endeavouring to obtain, by dishonest means, *a sight* of “the deal” in the hands of his partner at cards, the gamester often overshoots the mark, and, conceiving that his eye had caught more than was really perceptible, in his subsequent movement he commits *a great oversight*.—EDIT.

their ambitious prospect, will unawares leave one still standing, whereof their own gallows may be made.

6. Immediately all the prisons in the city were set open ; and those petty sinks of dissolute people emptied themselves into a common-sewer, and became into a tumultuous torrent. Headlong they haste to the palace of Andronicus ; where, not finding him at home, they wreaked their spite upon that beautiful building, and the sumptuous furniture therein. Should I insist upon particulars, all sorts of readers would be saddled therewith. Ladies would lament the loss of so many pearls and precious stones, whose very cases were jewels.. Soldiers [would] bemoan the spoiling of so magnificent an armory. But scholars would be most passionate, to bewail the want of that library, so full fraught with rarities that nothing abated the preciousness but the plenty of them. Many records, the stairs whereby antiquaries climb up into the knowledge of former times, were torn in pieces ; though we need not believe them so old, as that some of them had escaped Noah's flood, and were now drowned in a popular deluge.

7. Nothing was preserved whole and entire : whether, because they pretended some religion in revenge, as not aiming, out of covetousness, to enrich themselves, but, out of justice, to punish the tyrant : or, because they thought the very *goods* of Andronicus were become *evil*, guilty of their owner's faults, and therefore were all to be abolished as execrable : yea, as if the very chapel itself, which he had built, had been un-hallowed by the profaneness of the founder, with all the utensils thereof, it was defaced. A stately structure it was ; Andronicus not being of their opinion, who, conceiving a holy horror to live in dark and humble cells, fancy not triumphant churches for fear that their hearts be there lost in their eyes. But he professed his devotion to rise with the roof of the church ; so that his soul seemed to anticipate heaven, by beholding the earnest thereof in a beautiful temple. However, now his chapel was laid flat to the ground ; and, amongst other things therein of inestimable value, the letter, which, by tradition, was reported to be written by Christ's own hands to Abgarus king of Edessa, then was embezzled. So irresistible is the tyranny of a tumult ; and, therefore, it may be all good men's prayers, that the people may either never understand their own power, or always use it aright.

8. Andronicus, as we said before, had secretly conveyed himself away. Who would not have thought, but that this great

fencer should have been provided of variety of guards, against all the cross-blows of fortune; at least, to have had some impregnable place near hand to retire unto? Whereas he had no other policy to escape, than that poor shift which the silly, simple hare useth against the hounds,—by flying before them. Indeed, had the conspiracy against Andronicus been but local or partial, so that he had had any sound part to begin on, he would probably have made resistance; (as physicians must have some strength of nature in their patient, to practise on;) but the defection from him was so general and universal, he found not any effectual friend left him. Only he had scraped together a mass of coin, more trusting in money than men, hoping in foreign parts to buy some friends therewith; knowing that gold, if weight, is current in all countries. Then taking Anna his empress and Maraptica his whore, with some few servants [whom] he durst confide in, and the treasure [which] he had formerly provided, he made speed in a pinnace through the Black Sea, to the Tauro-Scythians, out of the bounds of his empire, hoping there to live in quiet. And because we have mentioned Anna the empress, we cannot pass her by in silence. For if one would draw a map of misery, to pair like years with like mishap, it is hard to find a fitter pattern.

9. Daughter she was to the king of France, being married a child (having little list to love, and less to aspire!) to the young emperor Alexius, whilst both their years put together could not spell thirty. After this, she had time too much to bemoan, but none at all to amend, her condition; being slighted and neglected by her husband. Oft-times being alone, (as sorrow loves no witness,) having room and leisure to bewail herself, she would relate the chronicle of her unhappiness to the walls, as hoping to find pity from stones, when men proved unkind unto her. Much did she envy the felicity of those milkmaids, who each morning pass over the virgin-dew and pearly grass, sweetly singing by day, and soundly sleeping at night, who had the privilege freely to bestow their affections, and wed them who were high in love, though low in condition: whereas royal birth had denied her that happiness, having neither liberty to choose, nor leave to refuse; being compelled to love, and sacrificed to the politic ends of her potent parents.

10. But Anna, unhappy at her first voyage, hoped to better her condition by a second adventure; yet made more haste than good speed, marrying Andronicus some weeks after the death of Alexius. Surely, there is an *annus luctus*, “a year of

mourning," which the modesty of widows may do well to observe, lest, neglecting it in their widowhood, it be required of them afterwards with interest, in the ill success of their second marriage. For Maraptica, a proud harlot, but excellent musician, justled with Anna in the emperor's affection, (and half an old husband was too much for a young lady to spare !) and, in process of time, prevailed to obtain violent possession. The empress, knowing herself honest and amiable, stood on her deserts ; not descending to beg that love which she conceived due unto her, but daring him to detain it at his own peril, seeing he wronged himself in wronging of her, forfeiting his troth, which he had publicly pledged unto her. But the courtezan, knowing that that love needs buttresses in cunning which hath no foundation in conscience, applied herself in all particulars to be complaisant to the desires of Andronicus. This Maraptica, though she had fair, fine fingers to play on the lute, had otherwise foul, great clutches, to snatch, grasp, and hold whatsoever she could come by ; and, knowing that she had but "a short term in the tenement" of her greatness, (subject both to the mortality and mutability of Andronicus,) and, withal, that she was not "bound to reparations," therefore cared not "what waste she made ;" but, by wrong and rapine, scraped together a mass of money. Meantime, Anna was kept poor enough ; who, whilst maid, widow, and wife, (twice a bride, before once a woman !) scarce saw a joyful day, though born of a king, and wedded to two emperors.

11. But, to return to Andronicus, who, pursued-after by his guilty conscience, found no rest in himself ; so that, for many nights, sleep was a stranger unto him. He that had put out other men's eyes, could not close his own ; and, when nature in him starved for want of rest, did at last hungrily snatch at short slumbers. Dreams did more terrify, than sleep refresh, him. His active fancy in the night did descant on what he had done before. Sometimes, the pale ghost of Alexius seemed with glowing pincers to torment him ; otherwhile, Maria Cæsarissa stitched hot burning needles through his side ; and, not long after, two streams of reeking blood seemed to flow out of the eyes of Lapardas, wherein Andronicus for a while seemed to swim, till, beginning to sink, to save himself he caught hold on his pillow, and so did awake.

12. When awaked, his mind was musing upon a prophecy, which, some days since, was delivered unto him. For he had employed an agent unto one Seth, an old conjurer, to know of

him what should be the name of his next successor in the empire. Now, first, a great S was presented in a basin of water; and, next that, an I; but both so doubtfully delineated, that they were hardly legible: done on purpose for several reasons:—Because it stood not with the state of “the prince of darkness” to be over-clear in his acts; and those that vend bad wares love to keep blind shops: besides, obscurity added veneration to his oracles; and active superstitious fancies, whet with the difficulty of them, would be sharp-sighted to read more than was written. But the main was, to save his own credit, taking covert of mystical expressions, that, in case Satan should fail in his answers, he might lay the blame on men’s understanding him.

13. Put then these two letters together, S I, and read them backwards, I S, by an hysterosis, and take a part of the whole by a synecdoche; (all favourable figures must be used, to piece out the devil’s short skill in future contingents!) and then Andronicus was told by the conjurer, he had the name of his successor. Ask me not why hell’s alphabet must be read backward; let Satan give an account of his own cozenage: whether out of an apish imitation of the Hebrew, which is read retrograde; or because that ugly, filthy serpent crawls cancer-like; or to make his answers the more enigmatical, for the reasons aforesaid. Andronicus, by this I S, understood Isaurus Comnenus, who lately, by usurpation, had set up a kingdom in the isle of Cyprus, and therefore always observed him with a jealous eye, and now too late perceives his error, and finds the prophecy performed in Isaacius Angelus.

14. Thus, those that are correspondents with the devil for such intelligence, have need, when they have received the text of his answers, to borrow his comment too, lest otherwise they mistake his meaning. And men may justly take heed of curiosity to know things to come; which is one of the kernels of “the forbidden fruit,” and even in our age sticks still in the throats of too many, even to the danger of choking them, if it be not warily prevented.\*

\* Those who have perused the auto-biography of William Lilly, the notorious astrologer, will not require to be told, that a strong *passion for becoming acquainted with the secrets of futurity*, both as they regarded individuals and entire masses, had, in Fuller’s days, pervaded the minds of men of all ranks and parties. Though this mania has been made the subject of deserved ridicule by Butler, in his “Hudibras,” as one of the prevailing sins of the Parliamentarians; yet it was as strongly felt by their opponents, who in shoals repaired to the devil’s oracle in Lilly’s house, or sat down in privacy to unravel the mysterious predictions of Nostradamus.—EDIT.

15. Hitherto, what disasters had happened to Andronicus might partly be imputed to men and second causes: whereas now Divine Justice, to have its power praised in its punishments, seemed visibly to put out a hand from heaven; and he wants eyes that cannot—or shuts them that will not—behold it. See now the galley, wherein he sailed, having all the canvass thereof employed with a prosperous wind, when suddenly it was checked in the full speed, and beaten back with foul weather into a small harbour, called Chele. Soon after, the winds serving again, he set forth the second time, and had not made many leagues, when Neptune with his trident thrust him back again; such was the violence of the seas against him! A third time he set forth with a fair gale, when instantly the wind changing forced him to return. Here what tugging, what towing, what rowing! nothing was omitted which art or industry, skill or will, could perform; Andronicus dropping a shower of gold to the sailors, to reward the sweat that fell from them. All in vain: for as indeed he had offended the Fire, with the innocents he burnt therein; angered the Air, with hundreds of carcasses which therein he had caused to be hanged; provoked the Earth, by burying men alive in her bosom; so, most of all, he had enraged the Water against him, (now mindful of his injuries,) by him made a charnel-house and general grave, into which the body of the young emperor Alexius was cast, with thousands of his subjects. God, herein to prevent all misconstructions of casualty, (which otherwise men might fasten upon it,) and knowing that men are slow in their apprehensions, and dull in their memory, to learn the lessons of his justice, re-iterated and repeated it three several times, that the most blockish scholar might learn it perfectly by heart: “This is the work of the Lord; and it may justly seem marvellous in our eyes.” Thus Andronicus was the third time sent back “to the place from whence he came, and so to the place of execution.” For he was no sooner come to the shore, but servants employed by Isaaciush, who had way-laid all the ports on the Black Sea, stood ready to arrest him.

## SECTION VI.

1. ANDRONICUS, (*anno Domini 1184*,) having now left him neither army to fight, nor legs to fly, (being in the possession of his enemies,) betook himself to his tongue, bemoaning his case, and with tears begging their favour. But those eyes which weeping in jest had mocked others so often, could not now be trusted that they were in earnest. The storm at land was more implacable than the tempest at sea. Two heavy iron chains were put about his neck, (in metal and weight different from them he wore before !) and, loaden with fetters and insolences from the soldiers, (who in such ware seldom give scant measure,) he was brought into the presence of Isaacius. Here the most merciful and moderate contented themselves with tongue-revenge, calling him “dog of uncleanness, goat of lust, tiger of cruelty, religion’s ape, and envy’s basilisk.” But others pulled him by the beard, twitched the hair left by age on his head ; and, proceeding from depriving him of ornamental excrements, dashed out his teeth, put out one of his eyes, cut off his right hand ; and, thus maimed, without surgeon to dress him, man to serve him, or meat to feed him, he was sent to the public prison, amongst thieves and robbers.

2. All these were but the beginning of evil unto him. Some days after, with a shaved head crowned with garlick, he was set on a scabbed camel with his face backwards, holding the tail thereof for a bridle, and was led clean through the city. All the cruelties which he in two years and upwards had committed upon several persons, were now abbreviated and epitomised on him, in as large a character as the shortness of the time would give leave, and the subject itself was capable of. They burnt him with torches and firebrands, tortured him with pincers, threw abundance of dirt upon him, and, withal, such filthiness, that the reader would stop his nose if I should tell him the composition thereof ; it is enough to say, that the worst thing that comes from man, was the best in the mixture thereof.

3. Such as consult with their credit will be cautious how they report *improbable truths*, fearing they will not be received for truths, but rejected for improbable ; especially in this age, wherein men resume their liberty,—conceiving it against the *privilege* of their judgments to have their belief (which should be a voluntary !) pressed by the authority of others to give

credit to what bears not proportion with likelihood. Could an old man, (such as Andronicus was,) past the age of man, (three-score and ten,) who now only lived by the courtesy of death to spare him, endure such pain, three miles, through so populous a city? The poets only feigned Atlas to be weary of carrying of heaven; but must not our Andronicus be either stifled for want of breath, or back-broken with store of weight, under so much earth thrown upon him? And was it possible that he who, before these times, had one foot in the grave, should have the other not follow after, when driven with such cruelty?

4. To render this likely, we may consider, first, that it was the intent of the people, not to kill, but to torment him. Secondly. When one dish is to go clean through a table of guests, men are mannerly,—all take some, though none enough. Besides, he was one of a strong constitution, whose brawny flesh nature had knit together with horny nerves. And yet, had he been a weak man, a candle with glimmering light will burn long in a socket, being thrifty of itself. Life was sweet to Andronicus under all those noisome smells; and he would not part with it, whilst he could keep it. But, what was the main, it was possible God might support his life, either out of justice or mercy; and we read in Scripture of men, “that they shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them.” (Rev. ix. 6.) I say “out of justice,”—visibly to acquit Himself in the eyes of the world, by making such a monster the open mark for man’s revenge; or, “out of mercy,”—giving him a long and large time of repentance, if he had the happiness to make use thereof.

5. Behold here a strange conflict, betwixt the cruelty of the people on the one side, and the patience of Andronicus on the other! and yet an indifferent umpire would adjudge the victory to the latter: no raging, no raving, no muttering, no repining; but all swallowed in silence! Only he cried out, “Lord, have mercy upon me!” and, “Why break ye a bruised reed?” and, sensible of his own guiltiness, he seemed contented to pass his *purgatory* here, that so he might escape *hell* hereafter.

6. After multitudes of other cruelties, tedious to us to rehearse, (and how painful then to him to endure!) he was hanged by the heels betwixt two pillars. In this posture, he put the stump of his right arm, whose wound bled afresh, to his mouth, so to quench (as some suppose) the extremity of his thirst with his own blood, having no other moisture allowed him; when one ran a sword through his back and belly, so that

his very entrails were seen, and seemed to call (though in vain) on the bowels of the spectators, to have some compassion upon him. At last, with much ado, his soul, which had so many doors opened for it, found a passage out of his body into another world.

7. Hear how one of great learning is charitably opinioned of his final estate, making this apostrophe to his ghost: "O Andronicus! O thou emperor of the East! how much wast thou bound unto God, whose will it was that for a few days thou shouldst suffer such things, that thou mightest not perish for ever! Thou wast miserable for a short time, that thou mightest not be miserable for all eternity. I make no doubt but thou hadst the years of eternity in mind, seeing that thou didst suffer such things so constantly and courageously!"\*

8. But doth not so strong charity argue a weak judgment? Despair itself may presume of salvation, if such an one was saved. How improperly did he usurp that expression, comparing himself to "a bruised reed," (Matt. xii. 20,) when another scripture-resemblance was more applicable unto him, of "a bulrush bowing down his head;" (Isaiah lviii. 5;) only top-heavy for the present with sense of suffering, not inwardly contrited in heart for the sins he had committed! Must not true repentance have a longer season to ripen it, and, by works ensuing, to avouch to the world the sincerity thereof? Insomuch that of late some affirm, that the good thief on the cross did not then first begin—but first renew—his repentance, lately interrupted by a felonious act. Allow Andronicus for a saint, and we shall people heaven with a new plantation of whores and thieves; and how voluminous will "the Book of Martyrs" be, if pain alone does make them!

9. On the other side, we must be wary how, in our censures, we shut heaven-door against any penitents. Far be it from us to distrust the power of God's mercy, or to deny the efficacy of true (though late) repentance. The last groan which divorces the soul from the body, may unite it to God: though the arm of his body was cut off, the hand of his faith might hold. All that I will add is this: If Andronicus's soul went to heaven, it is pity that any should know of it, lest they be encouraged to imitate the wicked premisses of his life, hoping by his example to obtain the same happy conclusion after death.

10. After his execution, the tide of the people's fury did turn,

\* DREXELIUS, "Upon Eternity," Consideration v. p. 147.

who began to love his memory and lament his loss. Such as before were blinded with prejudice against him, could now clearly see many good deeds he had done for the public; and began to recount with themselves many sovereign laws which he had enacted. Some bemoaned the misery which he had endured, as if his punishment was over-proportioned to his deserts. Whether this pity proceeded out of that general humour of men, never to value things till they are lost; or, because their revenge had formerly surfeited upon him, and now began to disgorge itself again; or, which is most probable, this compassion arose from the mutability and inconstancy of human nature, which hates always to be imprisoned in one and the same mind, but, being in constant motion through the zodiac of all passions, will not stay long in the same sign, and sometimes goes from one extremity to another.

11. By this time Isaacius was brought by Basilius the patriarch unto the throne, and placed thereon with all solemnity: then the crown was put upon his head, on the top whereof was a diamond-cross, (greatness and care are twins!) which Isaacius kissed. "I welcome thee," said he, "though not as a stranger, who have been acquainted with crosses from my cradle. Thou art both my sword and my shield; for hitherto I have conquered with suffering." Then weighing the crown in his hand, "It is," saith he, "a beautiful burden, which loads more than it adorns."

12. Here Basilius the patriarch made a sermon-like oration unto him, which, as it was uttered with much gravity, so it was heard with no less attention, and embraced by the emperor with great thankfulness:—"Not presuming, Sir, to teach you what you do not know, I am incited by my calling, and encouraged by your clemency, to put you in mind of what otherwise you may forget. This crown and sceptre were sent you from heaven; only we have done our duty in delivering them unto you. And now methinks, that Divine Majesty perfectly shines in you his image. These our eyes upheld, and folded hands, and bared heads, and bended knees, are due from us to God; and we pay them to Him, by paying them to you his receiver. And we doubt not, but you will improve the power and honour bestowed on you, for the protection of the people committed unto you.

13. "In a man's body, whilst natural heat and radical moisture observe their limits, all is preserved in health: if either exceeds their bounds, the body either drowns or burns. It

fareth thus in the constitution of the State, betwixt your power and our prosperity: whilst both agree, they support one another; but if they fall out about mastery, even that which overcomes will be destroyed in a general confusion. And if you should betray your trust, though we bow, and bear, and sigh, and sob, armed with prayers and tears; yet know that our sad mournings will mount into that court, where lie the appeals of subjects, and the censures of sovereigns, which will heavily be inflicted by Him whom you represent. I speak not this out of any distrust of your justice, but out of earnest desire of your happiness, wishing that the greatness of Constantine, founder of this place, the goodness of Jovian, the success of Honorius, the long life of Valens, the quiet death of Manuel, the immortal fame of Justinian, and whatsoever good was singled on them, may jointly be heaped upon you and your posterity.”

14. Hereupon followed such a shout of the people, as the oldest man present had not heard the like; and all interpreted it as a token presaging the future felicity of the new emperor. And thus we have presented the reader with the remarkable intricacy and perplexity of success, (as if Fortune were like to lose herself in a labyrinth of her own making,) winding backward and forward, within the compass of five years, with more strange varieties than can easily be paralleled in so short a continuance of time:—

- (1.) First, Alexius, no Andronicus.
- (2.) Then, Alexius, and Andronicus.
- (3.) Then, Andronicus, and Alexius.
- (4.) Then, Andronicus, no Alexius.
- (5.) Then, Isaacius, no Andronicus.

Thus few strings, curiously played upon by the cunning fingers of a skilful artist, may make much music: and Divine Providence made here a miraculous harmony by these odd-expected transpositions, tuning all to his own glory.

15. Here I intended to end our History, save that I cannot discharge my trust, and be faithful to the truth, without taking some special observation of Basilius. We cannot forget how active an instrument he had been to serve the cruelty of Andronicus: and when first I looked wishly [wistfully] upon his hands, (so busied in wicked employments,) I presently read his fortune, that he should come to a violent death. The old hermit\* seemed to me a prophet, to confirm me in my opinion,

\* Sect. 4, par. 13, page 433.

when reproving him for stickling in temporal matters ; and my conjectures grew confident, that this patriarch in process of time would either shake off his mitre from his head, or his head from his shoulders. And, perchance, if the ingenuous reader would be pleased freely to confess his thoughts therein, he was possessed with the same expectation.

16. How wide were we from the mark ! How blind is man in future contingents ! How wise is God in crossing our conceits, leaving the world amused with his ways, that men, finding themselves at a loss, may learn more to adore what they cannot understand ! See Basilius as brave and as bright as ever ; and whilst all his fellow-servants had their wages paid them by Andronicus,—some made longer in their necks, others shorter by their heads,—he alone survives in health and honour : which made most to admire what peculiar antidote of sovereign virtue he had gotten, to preserve himself from the infectious fury of that tyrant.

17. But that which advanceth this wonder into the marks of a miracle, is, that this cunning pilot should so quickly “tack about” when the wind changed, and ingratiate himself with Isaacius. When times suddenly turn from extremes, those persons who formerly were first in favour, are cast farthest behind ; and they must be very active and industrious to recover themselves. But Basilius, by a strange dexterity, was instantly in the front of favourites, and, without any abatement, carried it in as high a strain as ever before ; and, although (being weary already !) I am loath to travel further into the reign of this new emperor, to see, in the sequel thereof, what became of Basilius at last ; yet, so far as I can from the best-chosen advantage discern and discover his success, no signal punishment, above the ordinary standard of casualties, did befall him ; and, for aught [which] appears to the contrary, he died in his bed.

18. Of such as seriously consider this accident, some, perchance, may be so well stocked with charity as to conceive, that he repented of his former impiety, and thereupon was pardoned by Heaven, and came to a peaceable end. Others may conceive, that as, when a whole forest of trees is felled, some aged, eminent oak by the highway’s side may be suffered to survive, as useless for timber, because decayed, yet useful for a landmark, for the direction of travellers ; so Basilius, being now aged, and past dangerous activity, was preserved for the information of posterity ; and, when all others were cut down by cruel deaths, he [was] left alone to instruct the ensuing age of the tra-

gical passage which had happened in his remembrance. But the most solid and judicious will express themselves in the language of the apostle: "Some men's sins are open beforehand, going before to judgment; and some men's follow after." (1 Tim. v. 24.) All notorious offenders are not publicly branded in the world with an infamous character of shame or pain; but some carry their sins concealed, and receive the reward for them in another world.

19. It only remaineth, that we now give the personal description of Andronicus, so far forth as it may be collected from the few extant authors who have written thereof.

#### I. HIS STATURE.

He was higher than the ordinary sort of men. He was seven full feet in length, if there be no mistake in the difference of the measure. And whereas often the cock-loft is empty, in those whom nature hath built many stories high; his head was sufficiently stored with all abilities.

#### II. HIS TEMPER.

Of a most healthful constitution, of a lively colour, and vigorous limbs; so that he was used to say, that he could endure the violence of any disease for a twelvemonth together, by his sole natural strength, without being beholding to art, or any assistance of physic.

#### III. HIS LEARNING.

He had a quick apprehension and solid judgment; and was able, on any emergent occasion, to speak rationally on any controversy in divinity. He would not abide to hear any fundamental point of religion brought into question; insomuch that, when once two bishops began to contend about the meaning of that noted place, "My Father is greater than I am," Andronicus, suspecting that they would fall foul upon the Arian heresy, vowed to throw them both into the river, except they would be quiet: a way to quench the hottest disputation, by an in-artificial answer drawn from such authority.

#### IV. HIS WIVES.

First, Theodora Comnenia, daughter of Isaacius Sebastro-Crator, his nearest kinswoman; so that the marriage was most incestuous.

The second, Anna, daughter to the king of France ; of whom largely before.

V. HIS LAWFUL ISSUE, BOTH BY HIS FIRST WIFE.

John Comnenius, his eldest son. It seems, he was much deformed, and his soul as cruel as his body ugly. He assisted Hagio-Christophorites Stephanus in the stifling of Xene.

Manuel, his second son, of a most virtuous disposition. Let those that undertake the ensuing history, show how both had their eyes bored out by Isaacius.

VI. HIS NATURAL ISSUE.

I meet with none of their names : and though he lived wantonly with many harlots and concubines, yet, (what a Father observeth,) Πολυγαμία ποιεῖ ἀτεκνίαν. "Many wives make few children." And it may be imputed to the providence of nature, that monsters (such as Andronicus) in this particular are happy,—that they are barren.

VII. HIS BURIAL.

By public edict it was prohibited, that any should bury his body. However, some were found, who bestowed, though not a solemn grave, yet an obscure hole, upon him, not out of pity to him, but out of love to themselves ; except any will say, that his corpse, by extraordinary stench, provided its own burial, to avoid a general annoyance.

FERDINAND ALVAREZ DE TOLEDO, DUKE OF ALVA, one abroad in the world in several wars, (whom Charles V. employed than affected, using his churlish nature to his service,) was by Philip II., king of Spain, appointed governor of the Netherlands.

At his first arrival there, the loyalty of the Netherland the king of Spain was rather out of joint, than broken not being weary of his government, but their own grievous. The wound was rather painful than deadly: only the sickness their lungs were tainted, sending out discontented populous breath; much regretting that their privileges, civil and ecclesiastical, were infringed, and they grinded with execrations against their laws and liberties.

But now duke D'Alva coming amongst them, he intended to cancel all their charters with his sword, and to reduce them to absolute obedience. And whereas every city was fenced in only with several walls, but different local liberties and corporal immunities, he meant to lay all their privileges level casting them into a flat, to stretch a line of absolute command over them. He accounted them a nation rather stubborn than valiant, and that not from stoutness of nature, but weakly. In correction, through the long indulgence of their late government. He secretly accused Margaret duchess of Parma, the governess, for too much gentleness towards them, as if she meant to cure a gangrened arm with a lenitive plaster. He affirmed that a lady's hands were too soft to pluck up

happened in sundry places ; as if nature on set purpose mistook her mark, and made her hand to swerve, that she might shoot a warning-piece to these countries, and give them a watchword of the future calamities they were to expect. The duke, nothing moved hereat, proceeds to effect his project, and first sets up "the Council of Troubles," consisting of twelve, the duke being the President. And this Council was to order all things in an arbitrary way, without any appeal from them. Of these twelve, some were strangers, such as should not sympathize with the miseries of the country ; others were upstarts, men of no blood, and therefore most bloody ; who, being themselves grown up in a day, cared not how many they cut down in an hour. And now, rather to give some colour, than any virtue, to this new composition of counsellors, four Dutch lords were mingled with them, that the native nobility might not seem wholly neglected. Castles were built in every city to bridle the inhabitants, and garrisons put into them. New bishops' sees [were] erected in several cities, and the Inquisition brought into the country. This Inquisition, first invented against the Moors, as a trap to catch vermin, was afterwards used as a snare to catch sheep ; yea, they made it heresy to be rich. And though all these proceedings were contrary to the solemn oath king Philip had taken, yet the Pope (who only keeps an oath-office, and takes power to dispense with men's consciences) granted him a faculty to set him free from his promise.

Sure, as some adventurous physicians, when they are posed with a mongrel disease, drive it, on set purpose, into a fever, that so, knowing the kind of the malady, they may the better apply the cure : so duke D'Alva was minded, by his cruel usage, to force their discontents into open rebellion, hoping the better to come to quench the fire when it blazed out, than when it smoked and smothered.

And now, to frighten the rest, with a subtile train he seizeth on the earls of Egmont and Horn. These counted themselves armed with innocency and desert, having performed most excellent service for the king of Spain. But when subjects' deserts are above their princes' requital, oftentimes they study not so much to pay their debts, as to make away their creditors. All these victories could not excuse them, nor the laurel wreaths on their heads keep their necks from the axe ; and the rather, because their eyes must be first closed up, which would never have patiently beheld the enslaving of their country. The French ambassador was at their execution, and wrote to his

master Charles IX., king of France, concerning the earl of Egmont, "that he saw that head struck off in the market-place of Brussels, whose valour had twice made France to shake."\*

This Council of Troubles, having once tasted noble blood, drank their belly-fulls afterwards. Then descending to inferior persons, by apprehensions, executions, confiscations, and banishments, they raged on men's lives and states. Such as, upon the vain hope of pardon, returned to their houses, were apprehended, and executed by fire, water, gibbets, and the sword, and other kinds of deaths and torments: yea, the bodies of the dead (on whom the earth, as their common mother, bestowed a grave for a child's portion) were cast out of their tombs by the duke's command, whose cruelty outstunk the noisomeness of their carcasses.†

And, lest the maintaining of garrisons might be burdensome to the king his master, he laid heavy impositions on the people; the duke affirming that these countries were fat enough to be stewed in their own liquor, and that the soldiers here might be maintained by the profits arising hence; yea, he boasted that he had found the mines of Peru in the Low-Countries, though the digging of them out never quitted the cost. He demanded the hundredth penny of all their movable and immovable goods, and, beside that, the tenth penny of their movable goods that should be bought and sold, with the twentieth penny of their immovable goods; without any mention of any time, how long those taxes and exactions should continue.

The States protested against the injustice hereof, alleging that all trading would be pressed to death under the weight of this taxation; weaving of stuffs (their staple trade) would soon decay, and their shuttles would be very slow, having so heavy a clog hanging on them; yea, hereby the same commodity must pay a new toll, at every passage into a new trade. This would dishearten all industry, and make laziness and painfulness both of a rate, when beggary was the reward of both, by reason of this heavy imposition, which made men pay dear for the sweat of their own brows. And yet the weight did not grieve them so much, as the hand which laid it on,—being imposed by a foreign power against their ancient privilege. Hereupon, many Netherlanders, finding their own country too hot, because of intolerable

\* FAMIANUS STRADA, *De Bello Belgico*, p. 449.  
"History of the Netherlands," p. 413.

† GRIMSTONE'S

taxes, sought out a more temperate climate, and fled over into England.

As for such as stayed behind, their hearts, being brim-full before with discontents, now ran over. It is plain, these wars had their original, not out of the church, but the State-house. Liberty was true doctrine to Papist and Protestant, Jew and Christian. It is probable, that in Noah's ark the wolf agreed with the lamb, and that all creatures drowned their antipathy, whilst all were in danger of drowning. Thus all several religions made up one commonwealth to oppose the Spaniard ; and they thought it high time for the cow to find her horns, when others, not content to milk her, went about to cut off her bag.\*

It was a rare happiness that so many should meet [agree] in one chief, William of Nassau, prince of Orange, whom they chose their governor. Yea, he met their affections more than half way in his loving behaviour ; so that Alva's cruelty did not drive more from him, than Nassau's courtesy invited to him. His popular nature was of such receipt, that he had room to lodge all comers. In people's eyes his light shined bright, yet dazzled none, all having free access unto him : every one was as well pleased as if he had been prince himself, because he

\* This character of the cruel general is corroborated by Brandt, and all the historians of that period, many of whom were the contemporaries of the Duke D'Alva. The subjoined instances of his varied and refined cruelty are extracted from GRIMSTONE's "History :"—

" The state of marriage—the only foundation of all society, and the bond of love and peace, the true ground of all good life and conversation amongst men, which most consisteth in a true and loving consent—was, by the Duke of Alva, broken and disannulled ; for that the parties who were married in the Reformed assemblies, were held as heretics unless they married again, which many did ; by that means to bestow the rich women upon his soldiers for a price. To conclude : He did openly break and disannul all honest amity and love, that one man is bound to show unto the other ; murdering and executing women that helped their husbands, and children that comforted their parents, in their greatest extremities, and such as did but comfort them with a letter ; as was to be seen in the town of Maestricht, where the father was cruelly put to death, because he lodged his son (that he had not seen in long time before) one night ; and another, because he gave a poor widow (whose husband had been put to death for religion) certain corn for alms ; another, for that he sent certain money unto his friend who was then in England : and he confiscated the goods of many honest and rich women, because they had lodged their husbands in their houses ; whereby they were compelled to beg their bread. He likewise profaned the holy sacrament of baptism, causing the children that had been openly and publicly baptized, in the name of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost, to be rebaptized again, because they had been baptized (as he said) by heretics ; which was against the decrees of councils, and all the laws both of God and man." (Pages 413, 414.)—EDIT.

might be so familiar with the prince. He was wont to content those who reproved his too much humanity, with this saying: "That man is cheap bought, who costs but a salutation."\*

I report the reader to the Belgian Histories: where he may see the changes of war betwixt these two sides. We will only observe, that duke D'Alva's covetousness was above his policy, in fencing the rich inland, and neglecting the barren maritime, places. He only looked on the broad gates of the country, whereby it openeth to the continent of Germany and France, whilst in the mean time almost half the Netherlands ran out at the postern door towards the sea. Nassau's side then wounded Achilles in the heel, indeed,—touched the Spaniard to the quick, when, no Palm-Sunday, (as if the day promised victory!) at Brill they took the first livery and seisin † of the land, and got soon after most cities towards the sea. Had Alva herein prevented him, probably he had made those provinces as low in subjection as situation.

Now at last he began to be sensible of his error, and grew weary of his command; desiring to hold that staff no longer which, he perceived, he had taken by the wrong end. He saw that going about to bridle the Netherlanders with building of castles in many places, they had gotten the bit into their own teeth. He saw that war was not quickly to be hunted out of that country, where it had taken covert in a wood of cities. He saw the cost of some one city's siege would pave the streets thereof with silver,—each city, fort, and sconce being a Gordian knot, which would make Alexander's sword turn edge before he could cut through it; so that this war and the world were likely to end together,—these Netherlands being like the head-block in the chimney, where the fire of war is always kept-in, (though out every where else,) never quite quenched, though raked up sometimes in the ashes of a truce. Besides, he saw that the subdued part of the Netherlands obeyed more for fear than love; and their loyalty did rather lie in the Spanish garrisons, than their own hearts; and that in their sighs they breathed many a prosperous gale to Nassau's party. Lastly: he saw that foreign princes, having the Spaniard's greatness in suspicion, desired he might long be digesting this breakfast, lest he should make his dinner on them; both France and England counting

\* BARCLAI *Icones Anim.*, cap. 5.  
country.—EDIT.

† Delivery and possession of the

the Low-Countries their outworks to defend their wall. Wherefore he petitioned the king of Spain, his master, to call him home from this unprofitable service.

Then was he called home, and lived some years after in Spain, being well respected of the king, and employed by him in conquering Portugal ; contrary to the expectation of most, who looked that the king's displeasure would fall heavy on him, for causing by his cruelty the defection of so many countries. Yet the king favourably reflected on him ; perchance, to frustrate on purpose the hopes of many, and to show that kings' affections will not tread in the beaten path of vulgar expectation. Or, seeing that the duke's life and state could amount to poor satisfaction for his own losses, he thought it more princely to remit the whole, than to be revenged but in part. Or, lastly, because he would not measure his servant's loyalty by the success, and lay the unexpected rubs in the alley to the bowler's fault, who took good aim, though missing the mark. This led many to believe, that Alva only acted the king's will, and not willed his acts, following the instructions he received, and rather going beyond than against his commission.

However, most barbarous was his cruelty. He bragged as he sate at dinner, (and was it not a good grace after meat ?) that he had caused eighteen thousand to be executed by the ordinary minister of justice within the space of six years, beside an infinite more murdered by other tyrannous means. Yea, some men he killed many times, giving order to the executioners to pronounce each syllable of torment long upon them, that the thread of their life might not be cut off but unravelled, as counting it no pain for men to die, except they died with pain : witness Anthony Utenthow, whom he caused to be tied to a stake with a chain in Brussels, compassing him about with a great fire, but not touching him, turning him round about like a poor beast, who was forced to live in that great torment and extremity, roasting before the fire so long, until the halberdiers themselves, having compassion on him, thrust him through, contrary to the will both of the duke and the Spanish priests.\*

When the city of Haarlem surrendered themselves unto him, on condition to have their lives, he suffered some of the soldiers and burghers thereof to be starved to death, saying, that though he promised to give them their lives, he did not promise to find

\* GRIMSTONE'S "History of the Netherlands," p. 411.

them meat. The Netherlanders used to fright their children with telling them, duke D'Alva was coming ; and no wonder if children were scared with him, of whom their fathers were afraid !

He was one of a lean body and visage, as if his eager soul, biting for anger at the clog of his body, desired to fret a passage through it. He had this humour,—that he neglected the good counsel of others, especially if given him before he asked it, and had rather stumble than beware of a block of another man's telling.

But as his life was a mirror of cruelty, so was his death of God's patience. It was admirable, that his tragical acts should have a comical end ; that he that sent so many to the grave, should go to his own, and die in peace. But God's justice on offenders goes not always in the same path, nor the same pace : and he is not pardoned for the fault, who is for a while reprieved from the punishment ; yea, sometimes the guest in the inn goes quietly to bed, before the reckoning for his supper is brought to him to discharge.

END OF THE PROFANE STATE.

AN INDEX  
OF  
THE SEVERAL CHAPTERS CONTAINED IN THIS BOOK:

THE FIRST FIGURE SHOWING THE BOOK ; THE SECOND, THE CHAPTER ;  
THE THIRD, THE PAGE.

	Book.	Chap.	Page.
Abraham, his Life.....	i.	4	9
Advocate, the good .....	ii.	1	49
Alva, Duke D', his Life .....	v.	19	449
Ambassador, the .....	iv.	16	299
Andronicus, his Life.....	v.	18	400
Anger .....	iii.	8	160
Antiquary, the true Church .....	ii.	6	64
Antiquity and Necessity of Churches .....	iii.	24	209
Apparel .....	iii.	6	155
Artist, the general.....	ii.	7	67
Atheist, the .....	v.	6	354
Augustine, St., his Life .....	iv.	10	269
Barretor, the common .....	v.	13	381
Bishop, the good .....	iv.	9	262
Books .....	iii.	18	189
Borgia, Cæsar, his Life.....	v.	7	359
Brandon, Charles, Duke of Suffolk, his Life .....	iv.	4	241
Brother, the elder.....	i.	14	39
Brother, the younger .....	i.	15	42
Building .....	iii.	7	157
Burleigh, Lord, his Life .....	iv.	6	251
Cæsar Borgia, Life of .....	v.	7	359
Camden, Mr. William, his Life .....	ii.	24	134
Cecil, William, (Lord Burleigh,) Life of.....	iv.	6	251
Child, the good.....	i.	6	14
Church Antiquary, the true .....	ii.	6	64
Churches, Antiquity and Necessity of, .....	iii.	24	209

INDEX.

	Book.	Chap.	Page.
Common Barr tor, the .....	v.	13	381
Company .....	iii.	5	152
Conspiracy of the Pazzians.....	v.	16	393
Constant Virgin, the .....	i.	12	31
Contentment.....	iii.	17	186
Controversial Divine, the .....	ii.	4	57
Court-Lady, the .....	iv.	13	283
Conformity .....	iii.	15	181
Controversial Gentleman, the .....	v.	14	384
, the controversial .....	ii.	4	57
-sts, the rigid .....	v.	11	370
Cook, Sir Francis, his Life .....	ii.	22	124
Duke D'Alva, his Life.....	v.	19	449
Duke of Suffolk, Life of the .....	iv.	4	241
Edward the Black Prince, his Life .....	iv.	20	319
Elder Brother, the .....	i.	14	39
Eliezer, his Life .....	i.	9	21
Elizabeth, Queen, her Life.....	iv.	15	293
Endor, Witch of, her Life .....	v.	4	346
Expecting Preferment.....	iii.	9	162
ful Minister, the .....	ii.	9	73
.....	iii.	23	205
y .....	iii.	11	168
Favourite, the .....	iv.	1	227
Fools, natural .....	iii.	12	171
General Artist, the .....	ii.	7	67
General, the good.....	iv.	17	306
Gentleman, the degenerous .....	v.	14	384
Gentleman, the true.....	ii.	25	137
Good Advocate, the .....	ii.	1	49
Bishop, the.....	iv.	9	262
Child, the .....	i.	6	14
General, the .....	iv.	17	306
Herald, the.....	ii.	23	131
Husband, the .....	i.	3	7
Judge, the .....	iv.	7	255
Landlord, the .....	ii.	13	90
Master of a College, the .....	ii.	14	93
Master, the.....	i.	7	16
Merchant, the.....	ii.	17	103
Parent, the .....	i.	5	11
Parishioner, the .....	ii.	11	84
Patron, the.....	ii.	12	87
Physician, the .....	ii.	2	51
Schoolmaster, the .....	ii.	16	99

	Book.	Chap.	Page.
Good Sea-Captain, the.....	ii.	21	120
Servant, the .....	i.	8	19
Soldier, the.....	ii.	20	113
Widow, the .....	i.	10	23
Wife, the.....	i.	1	1
Yeoman, the .....	ii.	18	106
Gravity .....	iii.	21	199
Grey, Lady Jane, Life of .....	iv.	14	289
Gustavus Adolphus, King of Sweden, Life of.....	iv.	18	309
Haman, his Life .....	iv.	2	234
Handicraftsman, the .....	ii.	19	109
Harlot, the .....	v.	1	335
Heir-apparent to the Crown .....	iv.	19	314
Herald, the good .....	ii.	23	131
Heretic, the .....	v.	10	367
Hildegardis, her Life .....	i.	13	35
Hospitality .....	iii.	1	143
Husband, the good .....	i.	3	7
Hypocrite, the .....	v.	8	363
Jane Grey, Lady, her Life .....	iv.	14	289
Jehu, his Life .....	v.	9	365
Jesting .....	iii.	2	145
Joan of Arc, her Life .....	v.	5	349
Joan, Queen of Naples, her Life .....	v.	2	339
Judge, the good .....	iv.	7	255
King, the .....	iv.	21	325
Lady, the Court- .....	iv.	13	283
Landlord, the good .....	ii.	13	90
Liar, the .....	v.	12	379
Life of Abraham .....	i.	4	9
Andronicus Comnenus .....	v.	18	400
St. Augustine .....	iv.	10	269
Cæsar Borgia .....	v.	7	359
Charles Brandon, Duke of Suffolk .....	iv.	4	241
William Camden .....	ii.	24	134
William Cecil, Lord Burleigh .....	iv.	6	251
Duke D'Alva .....	v.	19	449
Sir Francis Drake .....	ii.	22	124
Edward, the Black Prince .....	iv.	20	319
Eliezer .....	i.	9	21
Queen Elizabeth.....	iv.	15	293
Lady Jane Grey.....	iv.	14	289
Gustavus Adolphus, King of Sweden .....	iv.	18	309
Haman.....	iv.	2	234
Hildegardis .....	i.	13	35

	Book.	Chap.	Page.
Life of Jehu .....	v.	9	365
Joan of Arc .....	v.	5	349
Joan, Queen of Naples .....	v.	2	339
Sir John Markham .....	iv.	8	259
Nicholas Metcalf .....	ii.	15	96
Monica, the Mother of St. Augustine .....	i.	2	4
Paracelsus .....	ii.	3	54
Lady Paula .....	i.	11	25
William Perkins .....	ii.	10	80
Nicholas Ridley, Bishop of London .....	iv.	11	273
Julius Cæsar Scaliger .....	ii.	8	70
William Whitaker .....	ii.	5	61
Witch of Endor .....	v.	4	346
Cardinal Wolsey .....	iv.	3	237
Maintenance of Ministers .....	iii.	25	218
Markham, Sir John, his Life .....	iv.	8	259
Marriage .....	iii.	22	203
Master, the good .....	i.	7	16
Master of a College, the good .....	ii.	14	93
Memory .....	iii.	10	165
Merchant, the good .....	ii.	17	103
Metcalf, Dr., his Life .....	ii.	15	96
Minister, the faithful .....	ii.	9	73
Ministers' Maintenance .....	iii.	25	218
Moderation .....	iii.	20	196
Monica, her Life .....	i.	2	4
Natural Fools .....	iii.	12	171
Necessity and Antiquity of Churches .....	iii.	24	209
Nobleman, the true .....	iv.	12	279
Paracelsus, his Life .....	ii.	3	54
Parent, the good .....	i.	5	11
Parishioner, the good .....	ii.	11	84
Patron, the good .....	ii.	12	87
Paula, Lady, her Life .....	i.	11	25
Pazzians' Conspiracy, the .....	v.	16	393
Perkins, Mr., his Life .....	ii.	10	80
Physician, the good .....	ii.	2	51
Plantations .....	iii.	16	184
Politician, the unfortunate, Life of .....	v.	18	400
Preferment, expecting .....	iii.	9	162
Prince, the .....	iv.	19	314
Prince, the Black, his Life .....	iv.	20	319
Queen Elizabeth, Life of .....	iv.	15	293
Queen Joan of Naples, Life of .....	v.	2	339
Recreations .....	iii.	13	174

	Book.	Chap.	Page.
Ridley, Bishop, his Life .....	iv.	11	273
Rigid Donatists, the .....	v.	11	370
Scaliger, Julius Cæsar, his Life .....	ii.	8	70
Schoolmaster, the good .....	ii.	16	99
Sea-Captain, the good .....	ii.	21	120
Self-praising .....	iii.	3	147
Servant, the good .....	i.	8	19
Soldier, the good .....	ii.	20	113
Statesman, the wise .....	iv.	5	244
Suffolk, Duke of, (Charles Brandon,) Life of .....	iv.	4	241
Sweden's King, his Life .....	iv.	18	309
Time-serving .....	iii.	19	192
Tombs .....	iii.	14	178
Traitor, the .....	v.	15	391
Travelling .....	iii.	4	149
True Church Antiquary, the .....	ii.	6	64
Gentleman, the .....	ii.	25	137
Nobleman, the .....	iv.	12	279
Tyrant, the .....	v.	17	396
Unfortunate Politician, (Andronicus Comnenus,) Life of .....	v.	18	400
Virgin, the constant .....	i.	12	31
Whitaker, Dr., his Life .....	ii.	5	61
Widow, the good .....	i.	10	23
Wife, the good .....	i.	1	1
Wise Statesman, the .....	iv.	5	244
Witch, the .....	v.	3	342
Witch of Endor, the .....	v.	4	346
Wolsey, Cardinal, his Life .....	iv.	3	237
Yeoman, the good .....	ii.	18	106
Younger Brother, the .....	i.	15	42

## DESCRIPTION OF THE PLATES.

---

PORTRAITS OF CELEBRATED PERSONS, FROM THE BEST ORIGINALS, WITH  
FULLER'S OWN DESCRIPTION OF THEM, COPIED FROM THE  
TOP OF EACH PLATE.

### PLATE I.—PAGE 4.

1. MONICA, Wife of Patricius, and Mother of St. Augustine. She died at Ostia, in Italy, A.D. 389, aged 56 Years .....
2. PAULA, Widow of Toxotius, and Mother to Eustochium. She died at Bethlehem, A.D. 404, aged 56 Years, 8 Months, and 21 Days .....
3. PHILIP THEOPHRASTUS PARACELSUS, Physic-Professor at Basil. He died at Saltzburgh, A.D. 1540, aged 47 Years .....
4. HILDEGARDIS, a Virgin-Prophetess, Abbess of St. Rupert's Nunnery. She died at Bingen, A.D. 1180, aged 82 Years .....
5. WILLIAM WHITAKER, Doctor of Divinity, King's Professor, and Master of St. John's College, in Cambridge, where he died, A.D. 1595, aged 47 Years .....
6. JULIUS CESAR SCALIGER, a great Restorer of Learning. He died at Agen in France, A.D. 1558, aged 75 Years .....

---

### PLATE II.—PAGE 80.

PORTRAITS OF CELEBRATED PERSONS, FROM THE BEST ORIGINALS.

1. WILLIAM PERKINS, the learned, pious, and painful Preacher of God's Word, at St. Andrew's in Cambridge, where he died, A.D. 1602, aged 44 Years .....
2. SIR FRANCIS DRAKE, one of the first of those who, in his Sea-Voyages, put a Girdle about the World. He died upon the Seas, A.D. 1595 .....
3. WILLIAM CAMDEN, Clarencieux King of Arms. He died at Westminster, A.D. 1623, aged 74 Years .....
4. THOMAS WOLSEY, Archbishop of York, Chancellor of England, Cardinal, and Legate de Latere. He died at Leicester-Abbey, A.D. 1529, November 29th.....
5. WILLIAM CECIL, Baron of Burleigh, and Lord-Treasurer of England. He died A.D. 1598, aged 77 Years .....
6. ST. AUGUSTINE, the learned and painful Bishop of Hippo in Africa, for the Space of forty Years; where he died, in the 70th Year of his Age, about the Year of our Lord 430 .....



LADY PAULA.



MONICA.



PARACELSIUS.



HILDEGARDIS.



DR. WHITAKER.



SCALIGER.



WILL. PERKINS.



SIR F. DRAKE.



WILL. CAMBDEN.



THOMAS WOLSEY.



BURLEIGH.



ST AUGUSTINE.

